



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

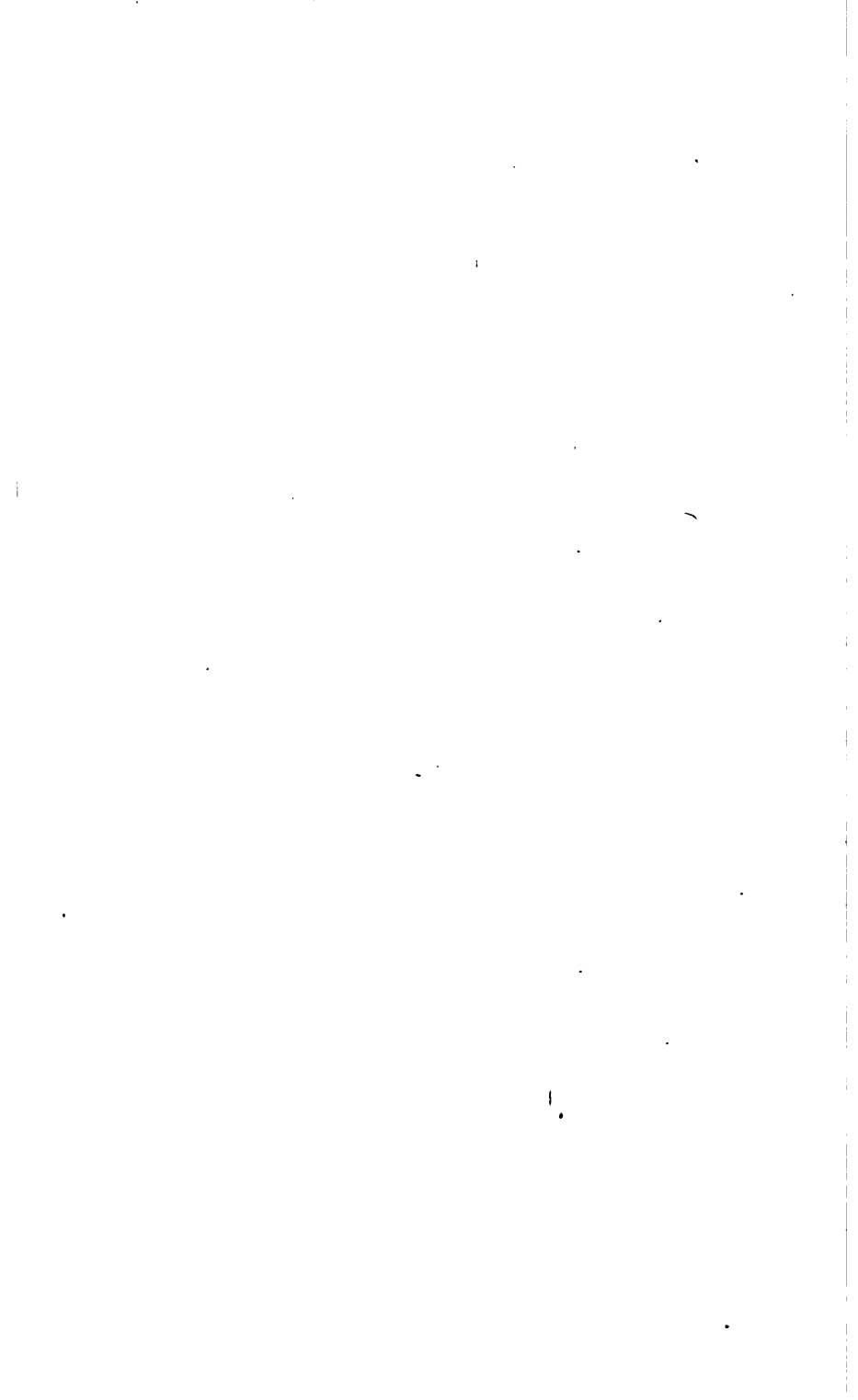
Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

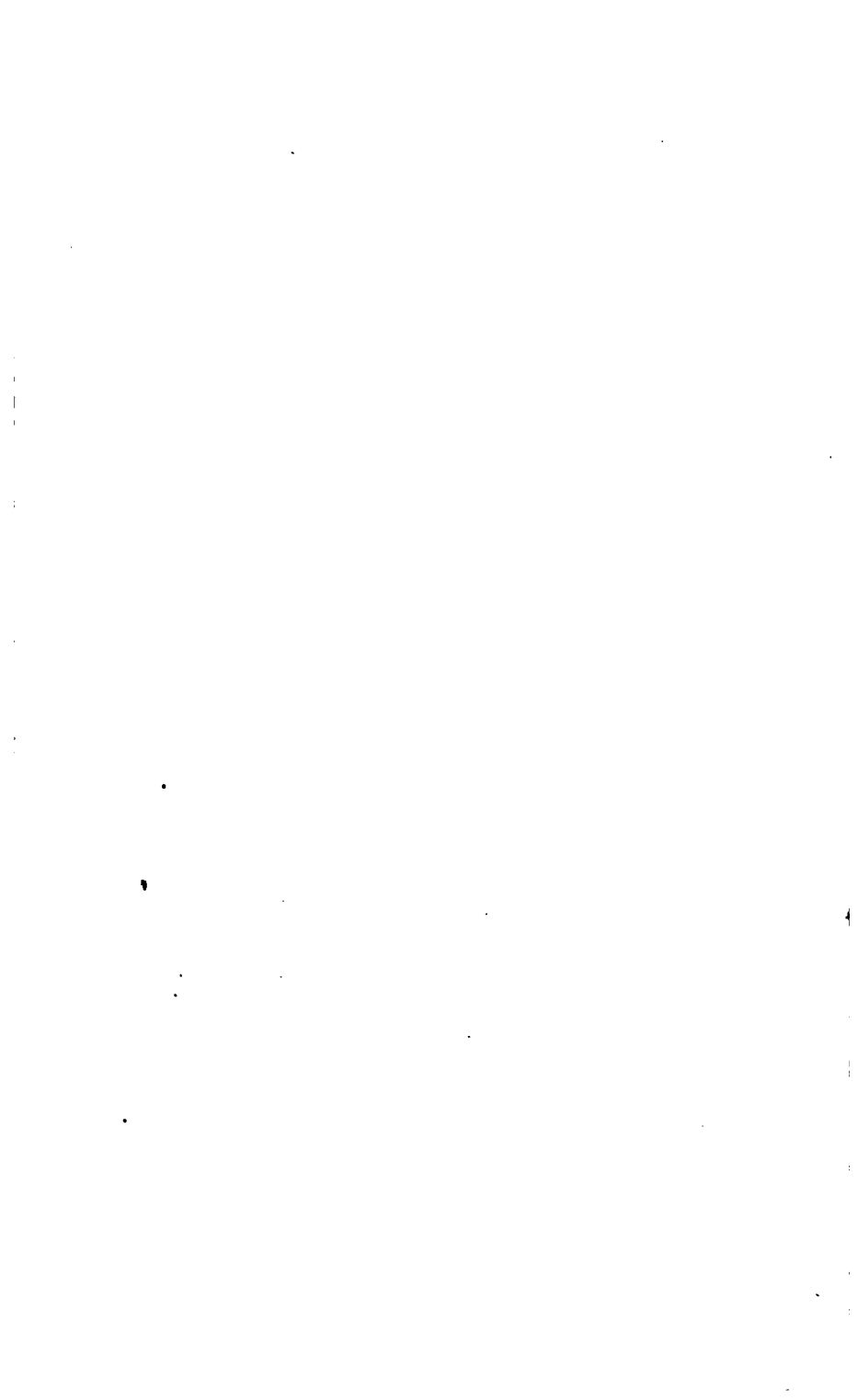
3 3433 06736644 7



Spence

NA







THE
POETICAL WORKS
OF
EDMUND SPENSER.

IN FIVE VOLUMES.

FIRST AMERICAN EDITION;
WITH
INTRODUCTORY OBSERVATIONS ON THE FAERIE QURENE,
AND
NOTES,
BY THE EDITOR.

VOL. II.



BOSTON:
CHARLES C. LITTLE AND JAMES BROWN.

M.DCCC.XXXIX.

Entered according to Act of Congress, in the year 1839, by
CHARLES C. LITTLE AND JAMES BROWN,
In the Clerk's Office of the District Court of the District of Massachusetts.

STEREOTYPED AT THE
BOSTON TYPE AND STEREOTYPE FOUNDRY.

CONTENTS

OF

VOL. II.

THE FAERIE QUEENE.

BOOK II.

	Page
THE LEGEND OF SIR GUYON, OR OF TEMPERAUNCE.....	7
Canto VII.....	7
Canto VIII.....	32
Canto IX.....	53
Canto X.....	77
Canto XI.....	107
Canto XII.....	126

BOOK III.

THE LEGEND OF BRITOMARTIS, OR OF CHASTITY.....	161
Canto I.....	164
Canto II.....	191
Canto III.....	212
Canto IV.....	236
Canto V.....	259
Canto VI.....	280
Canto VII.....	300
Canto VIII.....	323
Canto IX.....	343

	Page
Canto X.....	364
Canto XI.....	387
Canto XII.....	408

BOOK IV.

THE LEGEND OF CAMBEL AND TRIAMOND, OR OF FRIEND- SHIP.....	427
Canto I	430

THE
FAERIE QUEENE.

DISPOSED INTO TWELVE BOOKES,

FASHIONING

XII. MORALL VERTUES.

1*

NEW YORK
PUBLIC
LIBRARY

DUTTON AND WENTWORTH'S
Steam Press.

NEW YORK
DUTTON
PUBLISHERS

THE SECOND BOOK
OF
THE FAERIE QUEENE

CONTAINING

THE LEGEND OF SIR GUYON, OR OF TEMPERAUNCE.

CANTO VII.

Guyon findes Mammon in a delve,¹
Sunning his threasure hore ;
Is by him tempted, and led downe
To see his secrete store.

I.

AS pilot well expert in perilous wave,
That to a stedfast starre his course hath bent,
When foggy mistes or cloudy tempests have
The faithfull light of that faire lampe yblent,²
And cover'd heaven with hideous dremment³ ;
Upon his card and compas firmes⁴ his eye,

¹ *Delve*, cave.

² *Yblent*, obscured.

³ *Dremment*, darkness.

⁴ *Firmes*, firmly fixed.

The maysters of his long experiment,
 And to them does the stedy helme apply,
 Bidding his winged vessell fairely forward fly :

II.

So Guyon having lost his trustie Guyde,
 Late left beyond that Ydle Lake, proceedes
 Yet on his way, of none accompanyde ;
 And evermore himselfe with comfort feedes
 Of his own vertues and praise-worthie deedes.
 So, long he yode,¹ yet no adventure found,
 Which Fame of her shrill trompet worthy reedes² :
 For still he traveld through wide wastfull³ ground,
 That nought but desert wildernesse shewd all around.

III.

At last he came unto a gloomy glade,
 Cover'd with boughes and shrubs from heavens light,
 Whereas he sitting found in secret shade
 An uncouth, salvage, and uncivile Wight,
 Of griesly hew and fowle ill-favour'd sight ;
 His face with smoke was tand, and eies were belard,
 His head and beard with sout⁴ were ill bedight,⁵
 His cole-blacke hands did seeme to have ben seard
 In smythes fire-spitting forge, and nayles like clawes appeard.

IV.

His yron cote, all overgrowne with rust,
 Was underneath enveloped with gold ;
 Whose glistring glosse, darkned with filthy dust,
 Well yet appeared to have beene of old

¹ Yode, went.

⁴ Sout, soot.

² Reedes, deems.

⁵ Ill bedight, disfigured.

³ Wastfull, uninhabited.

I. 7.—*The maysters of his long experiment.*] His guides in the long voyage he is trying.. . .

A worke of rich entayle¹ and curious mould,
 Woven with anticke² and wyld ymagery :
 And in his lap a masse of coyne he told,
 And turned upside downe, to feede his eye
 And covetous desire with his huge treasury.

V.

And round about him lay on every side
 Great heapes of gold that never could be spent ;
 Of which some were rude owre,³ not purifide
 Of⁴ Mulcibers devouring element ;
 Some others were new driven, and distent⁵
 Into great ingowes⁶ and to wedges square ;
 Some in round plates withouten moniment⁷ :
 But most were stampd, and in their metal bare
 The antique shapes of kings and Kesars straung and rare.

VI.

Soone as he Guyon saw, in great affright
 And haste he rose for to remove aside
 Those pretious hils from straungers envious sight,
 And downe them poured through an hole full wide
 Into the hollow earth, them there to hide :
 But Guyon, lightly to him leaping, stayd
 His hand that trembled as one terrifyde ;
 And though himselfe were at the sight dismayd,
 Yet him perforce restraynd, and to him doubtfull⁸ sayd ;

VII.

“ What art thou, Man, (if man at all thou art.)
 That here in desert hast thine habitaunce,⁹
 And these rich hils of welth doest hide apart

¹ *Entayle*, inlay ; *intaglio*.² *Anticke*s, fantastic figures.³ *Owre*, ore.⁴ *Of*, by.⁵ *Distent*, beaten out.⁶ *Ingowes*, ingots.⁷ *Moniment*, stamp.⁸ *Doubtfull*, fearful.⁹ *Habitaunce*, dwelling.

From the worldes eye, and from her right usaunce?"
 Thereat, with staring eyes fixed askaunce,
 In great disdain he answerd; "Hardy Elfe,
 That darest view my direful countenance!
 I read¹ thee rash and heedlesse of thyselfe,
 To trouble my still seate and heapes of pretious pelfe.

VIII.

"God of the world and worldlings I me call,
 Great Mammon, greatest god below the skye,
 That of my plenty poure out unto all,
 And unto none my graces do envye:
 Riches, renownme, and principality,
 Honour, estate, and all this worldes good,
 For which men swinck² and sweat incessantly,
 Fro me do flow into an ample flood,
 And in the hollow earth have their eternall brood.

IX.

"Wherefore if me thou deigne to serve and sew,³
 At thy commaund lo! all these mountaines bee;
 Or if to thy great mind, or greedy vew,
 All these may not suffise, there shall to thee
 Ten times so much be nombred⁴ francke and free."
 "Mammon," said he, "thy godheads vaunt is vaine,
 And idle offers of thy golden fee;
 To them that covet such eye-glutting gaine
 Proffer thy giftes, and fitter servaunts entertaine.

X.

"Me ill besits,⁵ that in derdoing⁶ armes

¹ *Read*, deem.

⁴ *Nombred*, counted out.

² *Swinck*, toil.

⁵ *Besits*, becomes.

³ *Sew*, follow.

⁶ *Derdoing*, doing bold deeds.

IX. 6. — *Thy godheads vaunt.*] The boast you make of your divinity.

And honours suit my vowed dayes do spend,
 Unto thy bounteous baytes and pleasing charmes,
 With which weake men thou witchest, to attend ;
 Regard of worldly mucke¹ doth fowly blend²
 And low abase the high heroicke spright,
 That ioyes for crownes and kingdomes to contend ;
 Faire shields, gay steedes, bright armes, be my delight ;
 Those be the riches fit for an advent'rous Knight."

XI.

"Vaine glorious Elfe," saide he, "doest not thou weet,³
 That money can thy wantes at will supply ?
 Shields, steeds, and armes, and all things for thee meet,
 It can purvay in twinckling of an eye ;
 And crownes and kingdomes to thee multiply.
 Do not I kings create, and throw the crowne
 Sometimes to him that low in dust doth ly,
 And him that raignd into his rowme thrust downe ;
 And, whom I lust,⁴ do heape with glory and renowne ?"

XII.

"All otherwise," saide he, "I riches read,⁵
 And deeme them roote of all disquietnesse ;
 First got with guile, and then preserv'd with dread,
 And after spent with pride and lavishnesse,
 Leaving behind them griefe and heavinesse :
 Infinite mischiefes of them doe arize ;
 Strife and debate, bloodshed and bitternesse,
 Outrageous wrong and hellish covetize ;
 That noble heart, as great dishonour, doth despize.

XIII.

"Ne thine be kingdomes, ne the scepters thine ;

¹ *Mucke*, wealth ; literally, dirt.

² *Weet*, know.

⁴ *Lust*, please.

³ *Blend*, blemish.

⁵ *Read*, regard.

But realmes and rulers thou doest both confound,
 And loyall truth to treason doest incline :
 Witnessse the guiltlesse blood poured oft on ground ;
 The crowned often slaine ; the slayer cround ;
 The sacred diademe in peeces rent ;
 And purple robe gored with many a wound ;
 Castles surprizd ; great cities sackt and brent¹ :
 So mak'st thou kings, and gaynest wrongfull government !

XIV.

“ Long were to tell the troublous stormes that tosse
 The private state, and make the life unsweet :
 Whõ swelling sayles in Caspian sea doth crosse,
 And in frayle wood on Adrian gulf doth fleet,
 Doth not, I weene, so many evils meet.”
 Then Mammon waxing wroth ; “ And why then,” sayd,
 “ Are mortall men so fond and indiscreet
 So evill thing to seeke unto their ayd ;
 And, having not, complaine : and, having it, upbrayd ? ”

XV.

“ Indeed,” quoth he, “ through fowle intemperaunce,
 Frayle men are oft captiv'd to covetise :
 But would they thinke with how small allowaunce
 Untroubled nature doth herselfe suffise,
 Such superfluities they would despise,
 Which with sad cares empeach² our native ioyes.
 At the well-head the purest streames arise ;
 But mucky³ filth his braunching armes annoyes,
 And with uncomely weedes the gentle wave accloyes.⁴”

¹ *Brent*, burned.² *Mucky*, polluting.³ *Empeach*, hinder.⁴ *Accloyes*, chokes.XIV. 4. — *On Adrian gulf.*] The Adriatic sea.

XVI.

“ The antique world, in his first flowring youth,
 Fownd no defect in his Creators grace ;
 But with glad thanks, and unreproued¹ truth,
 The guifts of souveraine bounty did embrace :
 Like angels life was then mens happy cace :
 But later ages pride, like corn-fed steed,
 Abusd her plenty and fat-swolne encrease
 To all licentious lust, and gan exceed
 The measure of her meane² and naturall first need.

XVII.

“ Then gan a cursed hand the quiet wombe
 Of his great grandmother with steele to wound,
 And the hid treasures in her sacred tombe
 With sacriledge to dig : Therein he fownd
 Fountaines of gold and silver to abownd,
 Of which the matter of his huge desire
 And pompous pride eftsoones³ he did compownd ;
 Then Avarice gan through his veines inspire
 His greedy flames, and kindled life-devouring fire.”

XVIII.

“ Sonne,” said he then, “ lett be⁴ thy bitter scorne,
 And leave the rudenesse of that antique age
 To them, that liv’d therin in state forlorne.
 Thou, that doest live in later times, must wage⁵
 Thy workes for wealth, and life for gold engage.
 If then thee list my offred grace to use,
 Take what thou please of all this surplusage⁶ ;
 If thee list not, leave have thou to refuse :
 But thing refused doe not afterward accuse.”

¹ *Unreproued*, blameless.⁴ *Let be*, leave off.² *Meane*, moderate portion.⁵ *Wage*, pledge.³ *Eftsoones*, immediately.⁶ *Surplusage*, excess.

XIX.

“ Me list not,” said the Elfin Knight, “ receive
 Thing offred, till I know it well be gott ;
 Ne wote¹ I but thou didst these goods bereave
 From rightfull owner by unrighteous lott,
 Or that blood-guiltinesse or guile them blott.”
 “ Perdy,²” quoth he, “ yet never eie did vew,
 Ne tong did tell,³ ne hand these handled not ;
 But safe I have them kept in secret mew.⁴
 From hevens sight and powre of al which them poursew.”

XX.

“ What secret place,” quoth he, “ can safely hold
 So huge a masse, and hide from hevens eie ?
 Or where hast thou thy wonne,⁵ that so much gold
 Thou canst preserve from wrong and robbery ?”
 “ Come thou,” quoth he, “ and see.” So by and by
 Through that thick covert he him led, and fownd
 A darksome way, which no man could descry,
 That deep descended through the hollow grownd,
 And was with dread and horror compassed arownd.

XXI.

At length they came into a larger space,
 That stretcht itselfe into an ample playne ;
 Through which a beaten broad high way did trace,
 That streight did lead to Plutoes griesly rayne⁶ :
 By that wayes side there sate infernall Payne,
 And fast beside him sat tumultuous Strife ;
 The one in hand an yron whip did strayne,
 The other brandished a bloody knife ;
 And both did gnash their teeth, and both did threaten Life.

¹ *Wote*, know.² *Perdy*, in truth.³ *Tell*, count.⁴ *Mew*, hiding-place.⁵ *Wonne*, dwelling.⁶ *Rayne*, reign, or realm.

XXII.

On th' other side in' one consort there sate
 Cruell Revenge, and rancorous Despight,
 Disloyall Treason, and hart-burning Hate ;
 But gnawing Gealosity, out of their sight
 Sitting alone, his bitter lips did bight ;
 And trembling Feare still to and fro did fly,
 And found no place wher safe he shroud him might :
 Lamenting Sorrow did in darknes lye ;
 And Shame his ugly face did hide from living eye.

XXIII.

And over them sad Horror with grim hew
 Did alwaies sore, beating his yron wings ;
 And after him owles and night-ravens flew,
 The hatefull messengers of heavy things,
 Of death and dolor¹ telling sad tidings ;
 Whiles sad Celeno, sitting on a clifte,
 A song of bale² and bitter sorrow sings,
 That hart of flint asonder could have rift³ ;
 Which having ended after him she flyeth swift.

XXIV.

All these before the gates of Pluto lay ;
 By whom they passing spake unto them nought.
 But th' Elfin Knight with wonder all the way
 Did feed his eyes, and fild his inner thought.
 At last him to a little dore he brought,
 That to the gate of hell, which gaped wide,
 Was next adioyning, ne them parted ought :

¹ *Dolor*, grief.² *Bale*, woe.³ *Rifte*, riven.XXII. 1. — *In one consort.*] Together.XXIII. 6. — *Sad Celeno.*] *Celeno* was the name of one of the harpies.XXIV. 7. — *Ne them parted ought.*] Nor did any thing (aught) part

Betwixt them both was but a litle stride,
That did the House of Richesse from hell-mouth divide.

XXV.

Before the dore sat selfe-consuming Care,
Day and night keeping wary watch and ward,
For feare least Force or Fraud should unaware
Breake in, and spoile the treasure there in gard :
Ne would he suffer Sleepe once thether-ward
Approch, albe¹ his drowsy den were next ;
For next to Death is Sleepe to be compar'd ;
Therefore his house is unto his annex : [twext
Here Sleep, there Richesse, and hel-gate them both be-

XXVI.

So soon as Mammon there arrivd, the dore
To him did open and afforded way :
Him followed eke Sir Guyon evermore,
Ne darknesse him ne daunger might dismay.
Soone as he entred was, the dore streightway
Did shutt, and from behind it forth there lept
An Ugly Feend, more fowle then² dismall day ;
The which with monstrous stalke behind him stept,
And ever as he went dew watch upon him kept.

XXVII.

Well hoped hee, ere long that hardy Guest,
If ever covetous hand, or lustfull eye,
Or lips he layd on thing that likt him best,
Or ever sleepe his eie-strings did untye,
Should be his pray : And therefore still on hye
He over him did hold his cruell clawes,

¹ *Albe*, although.² *Then*, than.

them. The door of the house of Riches was so near the gates of Hell that there might be said to be no space between them.

Threatning with greedy gripe to doe him dye,
 And rend in peeces with his ravenous pawes,
 If ever he transgrest the fatall Stygian lawes.

XXVIII.

That Houses forme within was rude and strong,
 Lyke an huge cave hewne out of rocky clifte,
 From whose rough vault¹ the ragged breaches² hong
 Embost with massy gold of glorious guifte,³
 And with rich metall loaded every rife,
 That heavy ruine they did seeme to threat ;
 And over them Arachne high did lifte
 Her cunning web, and spread her subtile nett,
 Enwrapped in fowle smoke and clouds more black than iett.

XXIX.

Both rooffe, and floore, and walls, were all of gold,
 But overgrowne with dust and old decay,
 And hid in darknes, that none could behold
 The hew thereof: for vew of cherefull day
 Did never in that House itselke display,
 But a feint shadow of uncertein light ;
 Such as a lamp, whose life does fade away ;
 Or as the moone, cloathed with cloudy night,
 Does shew to him that walkes in feare and sad affright.

XXX.

In all that rowme was nothing to be seene
 But huge great yron chests, and coffers strong,
 All bard with double bends,⁴ that none could weene
 Them to enforce by violence or wrong ;
 On every side they placed were along.
 But all the grownd with sculs was scattered

¹ *Vault*, vault.² *Breaches*, projecting points of rock.³ *Glorious guifte*, rich quality.⁴ *Bends*, bands.

And dead mens bones, which round about were flong ;
Whose lives, it seemed, whilome¹ there were shed,
And their vile carcases now left unburied.

XXXI.

They forward passe ; Ne Guyon yet spoke word,
Till that they came unto an yron dore,
Which to them opened of his owne accord,
And shewd of richesse such exceeding store,
As eie of man did never see before,
Ne ever could within one place be fownd,
Though all the wealth, which is or was of yore,
Could gatherd be through all the world arownd,
And that above were added to that under grownd.

XXXII.

The charge thereof unto a covetous Spright
Commaunded was, who thereby did attend,
And warily awaited day and night,
From other covetous Feends it to defend,
Who it to rob and ransacke did intend.
Then Mammon, turning to that Warriour, said ;
“ Loe, here the worldës blis ! loe, here the end,
To which al men do ayme, rich to be made !
Such grace now to be happy is before thee laid.”

XXXIII.

“ Certes,²” sayd he, “ I n’ill³ thine offred grace,
Ne to be made so happy doe intend !
Another blis before mine eyes I place,
Another happines, another end.
To them, that list, these base regardes I lend :

¹ *Whilome*, formerly. ² *Certes*, certainly. ³ *N’ill*, will not have.

XXXIII. 5. — *These base regardes I lend.*] ‘I leave these low objects.’
Regardes here means something requiring or soliciting attention.

But I in armes, and in atchievements brave,
 Do rather choose my flitting houres to spend,
 And to be lord of those that riches have,
 Then ¹ them to have my selfe, and be their servile slave.”

XXXIV.

Thereat the Feend his gnashing teeth did grate,
 And griev'd, so long to lacke his greedie pray ;
 For well he weened that so glorious bayte
 Would tempt his Guest to take thereof assay ² :
 Had he so doen, he had him snatcht away
 More light than culver ³ in the faulcons fist :
 Eternall God thee save from such decay !
 But, whenas Mammon saw his purpose mist,
 Him to entrap unwares another way he wist. ⁴

XXXV.

Thence, forward he him ledd and shortly brought
 Unto another rowme, whose dore forthright
 To him did open as it had beene taught :
 Therein an hundred raunges weren pight, ⁵
 An hundred founaces all burning bright ;
 By every founace many Feends did byde,
 Deformed creatures, horrible in sight ;
 And every Feend his busie paines applyde
 To melt the golden metall, ready to be tryde.

XXXVI.

One with great bellowes gathered filling ayre,
 And with forst wind the fewell did inflame ;
 Another did the dying bronds repayre
 With yron tongs, and sprinckled ofte the same
 With liquid waves, fiers Vulcans rage to tame,

¹ Then, than.⁴ Wist, knew, contrived.² Assay, trial.⁵ Pight, placed.³ Culver, pigeon.

Who, maystring¹ them, renewd his former heat :
 Some scumd the drosse that from the metall came ;
 Some stird the molten owre with ladles great :
 And every one did swincke,² and every one did sweat.

XXXVII.

But, when an earthly wight they present saw
 Glistring in armes and battailous aray,
 From their whot³ work they did themselves withdraw
 To wonder at the sight ; for, till that day,
 They never creature saw that cam that way :
 Their staring eyes sparckling with fervent fyre
 And ugly shapes did nigh the Man dismay,
 That, were it not for shame, he would retyre ;
 Till that him thus bespake their souveraine lord and syre :

XXXVIII.

“ Behold, thou Faeries sonne, with mortall eye,
 That living eye before did never see !
 The thing that thou didst crave so earnestly,
 To weet⁴ whence all the wealth late shewd by mee
 Proceeded, lo ! now is reveald to thee.
 Here is the fountaine of the worldes good !
 Now therefore, if thou wilt enriched bee,
 Advise thee⁵ well, and change thy wilfull mood ;
 Least thou perhaps hereafter wish, and be withstood.”

XXXIX.

“ Suffise it then, thou Money-god,” quoth hee,
 “ That all thine ydle offers I refuse.
 All that I need I have ; what needeth mee
 To covet more then I have cause to use ?
 With such vaine shewes thy worldlinges vyle abuse ;

¹ *Maystring*, mastering, or subduing. ² *Swincke*, toil.

³ *Whot*, hot. ⁴ *Weet*, know. ⁵ *Advise thee*, consider.

But give me leave to follow mine emprise.¹"
 Mammon was much displeas'd, yet no'te² he chuse
 But beare the rigour of his bold mesprise³ ;
 And thence him forward ledd, him further to entise.

XL.

He brought him, through a darksom narrow strayt,
 To a broad gate all built of beaten gold :
 The gate was open ; but therein did wayt
 A sturdie Villein, stryding stiffe and bold,
 As if the Highest God defy he would :
 In his right hand an yron club he held,
 But he himselfe was all of golden mould,
 Yet had both life and sence, and well could weld
 That cursed weapon, when his cruell foes he queld.

XLI.

Disdayne he called was, and did disdayne
 To be so cald, and who so did him call :
 Sterne was his looke, and full of stomacke⁴ vayne ;
 His portance⁵ terrible, and stature tall,
 Far passing th' hight of men terrestriall ;
 Like an huge gyant of the Titans race ;
 That made him scorne all creatures great and small,
 And with his pride all others powre deface :
 More fitt emongst black fiendes then⁶ men to have his place.

XLII.

Soone as those glitterand arnes he did espye,
 That with their brightnesse made that darknes light,
 His harmefull club he gan to hurtle⁷ hye,
 And threaten batteill to the Faery Knight ;
 Who likewise gan himselfe to batteill dight,⁸

¹ *Emprise*, enterprise.⁵ *Portance*, deportment.² *No'te*, could not.⁶ *Then*, than.³ *Mesprise*, contempt.⁷ *Hurtle*, raise.⁴ *Stomacke*, haughtiness.⁸ *Dight*, prepare.

Till Mammon did his hasty hand withhold,
 And counseld him abstaine from perilous fight;
 For nothing might abash the Villein bold,
 Ne mortall steele emperce his miscreated mould.

XLIII.

So having him with reason pacifyde,
 And that fiers Carle commaunding to forbear,
 He brought him in. The rowme was large and wyde.
 As it some gyeld¹ or solemne temple weare;
 Many great golden pillours did upbeare
 The massy roofe, and riches huge sustayne;
 And every pillour decked was full deare²
 With crownes, and diademes, and titles vaine,
 Which mortall princes wore whiles they on earth did rayne.

XLIV.

A route of people there assembled were,
 Of every sort and nation under skye,
 Which with great uprore preaced³ to draw nere
 To th' upper part, where was advaunced hye
 A stately siege⁴ of soveraine maiestye;
 And thereon satt a Woman gorgeous gay,
 And richly cladd in robes of royaltye,
 That never earthly prince in such aray
 His glory did enhance, and pompous pryde display.

XLV.

Her face right wondrous faire did seeme to bee,
 That her broad beauties bearn great brightnes threw
 Through the dim shade, that all men might it see;
 Yet was not that same her owne native hew.
 But wrought by art and counterfetted shew,
 Thereby more lovers unto her to call;

¹ *Gyeld*, guild, hall.³ *Preaced*, pressed.² *Deare*, richly.⁴ *Siege*, seat.

Nath'lesse most hevenly faire in deed and vew
 She by creation was, till she did fall ;
 Thenceforth she sought for helps to cloke her crime withall.

XLVI.

There, as in glistring glory she did sitt,
 She held a great gold chaine ylincked well,
 Whose upper end to highest heven was knitt,
 And lower part did reach to lowest hell ;
 And all that preace¹ did rownd about her swell
 To catchen hold of that long chaine, thereby
 To climbe aloft, and others to excell :
 That was Ambition, rash desire to sty,²
 And every linck thereof a step of dignity.

XLVII.

Some thought to raise themselves to high degree
 By riches and unrighteous reward ;
 Some by close shouldring³ ; some by flatteree ;
 Others through friendes ; others for base regard ;
 And all, by wrong waies, for themselves prepar'd :
 Those, that were up themselves, kept others low ;
 Those, that were low themselves, held others hard,
 Ne suffred them to ryse or greater grow ;
 But every one did strive his fellow downe to throw.

XLVIII.

Which whenas Guyon saw, he gan inquire,
 What meant that preace¹ about that Ladies throne,
 And what she was that did so high aspyre ?
 Him Mammon answered ; " That goodly one,
 Whom all that folke with such contention
 Doe flock about, my deare, my daughter is :
 Honour and dignitie from her alone

¹ *Preace*, press. ² *Sty*, soar. ³ *Close shouldring*, hard pushing

Derived are, and all this worldës blis,
For which ye men doe strive; few gett, but many mis;

XLIX.

“ And fayre Philotimé she rightly hight,¹
The fairest wight that wonneth² under skie,
But that this darksom neather world her light
Doth dim with horror and deformity,
Worthie of heven and hye felicitie,
From whence the gods have her for envy thrust :
But, sith³ thou hast found favour in mine eye,
Thy spouse I will her make, if that thou lust⁴ ;
That she may thee advance for works and merits iust.”

L.

“ Gramercy,⁵ Mammon,” said the gentle Knight,
“ For so great grace and offred high estate ;
But I, that am fraile flesh and earthly wight,
Unworthy match for such immortall mate
Myselſe well wote,⁶ and mine unequall fate :
And were I not, yet is my trowth yplight,⁷
And love avowd to other Lady late,
That to remove the same I have no might :
To change love causelesse⁸ is reproch to warlike Knight.”

LI.

Mammon emmoved was with inward wrath ;
Yet, forcing it to fayne, him forth thence ledd,
Through griesly shadowes by a beaten path,
Into a Gardin goodly garnished

¹ *Hight*, is called.⁵ *Gramercy*, many thanks.² *Wonneth*, dwelleth.⁶ *Wote*, know.³ *Sith*, since.⁷ *Yplight*, plighted.⁴ *Lust*, list, desire.⁸ *Causelesse*, without reason.

XLIX. 1. — *Philotimé*.] This word is derived from two Greek words, and signifies the love of distinction.

With hearbs and fruits, whose kinds mote not be redd¹ :
 Not such as earth out of her fruitfull womb
 Throwes forth to men, sweet and well savored,
 But direfull deadly black, both leafe and bloom,
 Fitt to adorne the dead and deck the dreery toombe.

LII.

There mournfull cypresse grew in greatest store ;
 And trees of bitter gall ; and heben² sad ;
 Dead sleeping poppy ; and black hellebore ;
 Cold coloquintida ; and tetra mad ;
 Mortall samnitis ; and cicuta bad,
 With which th' uniust Atheniens made to dy
 Wise Socrates, who, thereof quaffing glad,
 Pourd out his life and last philosophy
 To the fayre Critias, his dearest belamy³ !

LIII.

The Gardin of Prosérpina this hight⁴ :
 And in the midst thereof a silver seat,
 With a thick arber goodly over-dight,⁵
 In which she often usd from open heat
 Herselfe to shroud, and pleasures to cntreat⁶ :

¹ *Redd*, explained.⁴ *Hight*, is called.² *Heben*, ebony.⁵ *Over-dight*, overspread.³ *Belamy*, (*bel ami*, Fr.) fair friend.⁶ *Entreat*, receive, or enjoy.

LII. 4. — *Cold coloquintida*, &c.] *Coloquintida* is the fruit of the bitter apple. *Tetra* is supposed to be the deadly night-shade.

LII. 5. — *Mortall samnitis*.] Upton conjectures that Spenser here means the savin-tree, or *arbor Sabina*, which was supposed to produce abortion.

LII. 7. — *Wise Socrates*, &c.] It was Theramenes, and not Socrates, of whom this incident is related. Spenser was probably led into the mistake from the resemblance of the name of *Critias* to that of *Crito*, who was an intimate friend of Socrates, and with him at the time of his death.

Next thereunto did grow a goodly tree,
 With branches broad dispredd and body great,
 Clothed with leaves, that none the wood mote see,
 And loaden all with fruit as thick as it might bee.

LIV.

Their fruit were golden apples glistening bright,
 That goodly was their glory to behold ;
 On earth like never grew, ne living wight
 Like ever saw, but they from hence were sold¹ ;
 For those, which Hercules with conquest bold
 Got from great Atlas daughters, hence began,
 And planted there did bring forth fruit of gold ;
 And those, with which th' Eubcean young man wan
 Swift Atalanta, when through craft he her out ran.

LV.

Here also sprong that goodly golden fruit,
 With which Acontius got his lover trew,
 Whom he had long time sought with fruitlesse suit ;
 Here eke that famous golden apple grew,

¹ *Sold*, procured.

LIV. 6. — *Got from great Atlas daughters.*] It was one of the labors of Hercules to procure the golden apples of the Hesperides, who were the daughters of Hesperus, according to some accounts, and according to others, of Atlas.

LIV. 9. — *Swift Atalanta.*] Hippomenes vanquished Atalanta in a foot-race, by dropping an apple of gold before her, whenever she was likely to get the start of him, and which she stopped to gather.

LV. 2. — *Acontius.*] Acontius was a youth of humble origin, who fell in love with Cydippe, of Delos, and being unsuccessful in his suit, wrote on an apple, which he gave to her, the words, "I swear by Diana Acontius shall be my husband." She read the words, and felt constrained to marry her lover, by the involuntary oath she had uttered.

LV. 3. — *Fruitlesse suit.*] Spenser, perhaps without knowing it, is here betrayed into a pun.

The which emongst the gods false Ate threw ;
 For which th' Idæan Ladies disagreed,
 Till partiall Paris dempt¹ it Venus dew,
 And had of her fayre Helen for his meed,
 That many noble Greekes and Troians made to bleed.

LVI.

The warlike Elfe much wondred at this tree,
 So fayre and great, that shadowed all the ground ;
 And his broad braunches, laden with rich fee,²
 Did stretch themselves without the utmost bound
 Of this great Gardin, compast with a mound :
 Which over-hanging, they themselves did steepe
 In a blacke flood, which flow'd about it round ;
 That is the river of Cocytus deepe,
 In which full many soules do endlesse wayle and weepe.

LVII.

Which to behold he clomb up to the bancke,
 And, looking downe, saw many damned wightes
 In those sad waves, which direfull deadly stancke,
 Plonged continually of³ cruell sprightes,
 That with their piteous cryes, and yelling shrighites,⁴
 They made the further shore resounden wide :
 Emongst the rest of those same ruefull sightes,
 One cursed creature he by chaunce espide,
 That drenched lay full deepe under the Garden side.

LVIII.

Deepe was he drenched to the utmost chin,

¹ *Dempt*, deemed.

² *Of*, by.

³ *Fee*, property.

⁴ *Shrighites*, shrieks.

LV. 5. — *The which, &c.*] The story of the golden apple thrown in among the guests at the marriage of Peleus and Thetis, and its consequences, is well known.

Yet gaped still as coveting to drinke
 Of the cold liquor which he waded in ;
 And, stretching forth his hand, did often thinke
 To reach the fruit which grew upon the brincke ;
 But both the fruit from hand, and flood from mouth,
 Did fly abacke, and made him vainely swincke ¹ ;
 The whiles he sterv'd with hunger, and with drouth
 He daily dyde, yet never throughly ² dyen couth. ³

LIX.

The Knight, him seeing labour so in vaine,
 Askt who he was, and what he meant thereby ?
 Who, groning deepe, thus answerd him againe ;
 " Most cursed of all creatures under skye,
 Lo Tantalus, I here tormented lye !
 Of whom high Love wont whylome ⁴ feasted bee ;
 Lo, here I now for want of food doe dye !
 But, if that thou be such as I thee see,
 Of grace I pray thee give to eat and drinke to mee ! "

LX.

" Nay, nay, thou greedy Tantalus, " quoth he,
 " Abide the fortune of thy present fate ;
 And, unto all that live in high degree,
 Ensamble be of mind intemperate,
 To teach them how to use their present state. "

¹ *Swincke*, labor.

² *Couth*, could.

³ *Throughly*, thoroughly.

⁴ *Whylome*, formerly.

LIX. 6. — *Of whom, &c.*] It has been conjectured by Upton that Spenser wrote " Who of, " instead of " Of whom. " Tantalus was admitted by Jupiter to the table of the gods, and was punished for betraying their confidential disclosures — a fate which modern travellers, who offend so largely in the same way, should bear in mind. Other accounts, however, say that it was because he invited the gods to a banquet, and served the flesh of his son Pelops as part of the entertainment.

Then gan the cursed Wretch alowd to cry,
 Accusing highest Love and gods ingrate ;
 And eke blaspheming heaven bitterly,
 As author of uniustice, there to let him dye.

LXI.

He lookt a litle further, and espyde
 Another Wretch, whose carcas deepe was drent ¹
 Within the river which the same did hyde :
 But both his handes, most filthy feculent,²
 Above the water were on high extent,³
 And faynd ⁴ to wash themselves incessantly,
 Yet nothing cleaner were for such intent,
 But rather fowler seemed to the eye ;
 So lost his labour vaine and ydle industry.

LXII.

The Knight, him calling, asked who he was ?
 Who, lifting up his head, him answerd thus ;
 " I Pilate am, the falsest iudge, alas !
 And most uniust ; that, by unrighteous
 And wicked doome, to Iewes despiteous ⁵
 Delivered up the Lord of Life to dye,
 And did acquite a murdrer felonous ;
 The whiles my handes I washt in purity,
 The whiles my soule was soyld with fowle iniquity."

LXIII.

Infinite moe ⁶ tormented in like paine
 He there beheld, too long here to be told :
 Ne Mammon would there let him long remayne,

¹ *Drent*, drenched.⁴ *Faynd*, pretended, seemed.² *Feculent*, foul.⁵ *Despiteous*, malicious.³ *Extent*, raised.⁶ *Moe*, more.LXII. 8. — *In purity.*] In token of purity.

For terror of the tortures manifold,
 In which the damned soules he did behold,
 But roughly him bespake: "Thou fearefull foole,
 Why takest not of that same fruite of gold?
 Ne sittest downe on that same silver stoole,
 To rest thy weary person in the shadow coole?"

LXIV.

All which he did to do him deadly fall
 In frayle intemperaunce through sinfull bayt;
 To which if he inclyned had at all,
 That Dreadfull Feend, which did behinde him wayt,
 Would him have rent in thousand peeces strait:
 But he was wary wise in all his way,
 And well perceived his deceitfull sleight,
 Ne suffred lust¹ his safety to betray:
 So goodly did beguile the guyler of his pray.

LXV.

And now he has so long remained there,
 That vitall powres gan wexe both weake and wan
 For want of food and sleepe, which two upheare,
 Like mightie pillours, this frayle life of man,
 That none without the same enduren can:
 For now three dayes of men were full outwrought,
 Since he this hardy enterprise began:
 Forthy² great Mammon fayrely he besought
 Into the world to guyde him backe, as he him brought.

LXVI.

The God, though loth, yet was constraaynd t' obay;
 For lenger time, then³ that, no living wight
 Below the earth might suffred be to stay:
 So backe againe him brought to living light.

¹ *Lust, avarice.*² *Forthy, therefore.*³ *Then, than.*

But all so soone as his enfeebled spright
Gan sucke this vitall ayre into his brest,
As overcome with too exceeding might,
The life did flit away out of her nest,
And all his sences were with deadly fit opprest.*

* In the swoon of Sir Guyon, it has been conjectured that Spenser means to express that state of torpid inaction into which the best faculties of the mind and heart fall, from the too eager and exclusive pursuit of wealth. The images and incidents in this canto are derived partly from classical mythology, and partly from the capacious stores of romantic fiction.

CANTO VIII.

Sir Guyon, layd in swowne, is by
 Acrates sonnes despoyld ;
 Whom Arthure soone hath reskewed,
 And Paynim brethren foyle.

AND is there care in heaven ? And is there love
 In heavenly spirits to these creatures bace,
 That may compassion of their evils move ?
 There is : — else much more wretched were the cace
 Of men then¹ beasts : But O ! th' exceeding grace
 Of Highest God that loves his creatures so,
 And all his workes with mercy doth embrace,
 That blessed Angels he sends to and fro,
 To serve to wicked man, to serve his wicked foe !

II.

How oft do they their silver bowers leave
 To come to succour us that succour want !
 How oft do they with golden pineons cleave
 The fitting² skyes, like flying pursuivant,
 Against fowle feendes to ayd us militant !
 They for us fight, they watch and dewly ward,
 And their bright squadrons round about us plant ;

¹ *Then, than.*

² *Flitting, yielding.*

I. 1. — *And is there care in heaven? &c.*] These two introductory stanzas are very beautiful—equally remarkable for dignity of sentiment and beauty of versification.

And all for love and nothing for reward :
O, why should Hevenly God to men have such regard !

III.

During the while that Guyon did abide
In Mammons House, the Palmer, whom *whyleare*¹
That wanton Mayd of passage had denide,
By further search had passage found elsewhere ;
And, being on his way, approached neare
Where Guyon lay in traunce ; when suddainly
He heard a voyce that called lowd and cleare,
“ Come hether, come hether, O ! come hastily ! ”
That all the fields resounded with the ruefull cry.

IV.

The Palmer lent his ear unto the noyce,
To weet² who called so impörtunely :
Againe he heard a more efforced³ voyce,
That bad him come in haste : He by and by
His feeble feet directed to the cry ;
Which to that shady delve⁴ him brought at last,
Where Mammon earst⁵ did sunne his threasury :
There the good Guyon he found slumbring fast
In senceles dreame ; which sight at first him sore aghast.⁶

V.

Beside his head there satt a faire young man,
Of wondrous beauty and of freshest yeares,
Whose tender bud to blossome new began,
And florish faire above his equall peares :
His snowy front, curled with golden heares,

¹ *Whyleare*, a little while ago.⁴ *Delve*, cave.² *Weet*, learn.⁵ *Earst*, before.³ *More efforced*, louder.⁶ *Aghast*, terrified.

III. 3. — *That wanton Mayd, &c.*] Phœdria. See canto VI. stanza XIX.

Like Phœbus face adorn'd with sunny rayes,
 Divinely shone ; and two sharpe winged sheares,
 Decked with diverse plumes, like painted jayes,
 Were fixed at his backe to cut his ayery wayes.

VI.

Like as Cupido on Idæan hill,
 When having laid his cruell bow away
 And mortall arrowes, wherewith he doth fill
 The world with murtherous spoiles and bloody pray,
 With his faire mother he him dights¹ to play,
 And with his goodly sisters, Graces three ;
 The goddesse, pleased with his wanton play,
 Suffers herselfe through sleepe beguild to bee,
 The whiles the other ladies mind theyr mery glee.

VII.

Whom when the Palmer saw, abasht he was
 Through fear and wonder, that he nought could say,
 Till him the Childe bespoke ; “ Long lackt, alas,
 Hath bene thy faithfull aide in hard assay² !
 Whiles deadly fitt thy Pupill doth dismay,
 Behold this heavy sight, thou reverend Sire !
 But dread of death and dolor³ doe away ;
 For life ere long shall to her home retire,
 And he, that breathlesse seems, shal corage bold respire.

VIII.

“ The charge, which God doth unto me arrett,⁴
 Of his deare safety, I to thee commend ;
 Yet will I not forgoe, ne yet forgett
 The care thereof myselfe unto the end,
 But evermore him succour, and defend

¹ *Him dights*, prepares.² *Dolor*, grief.³ *Assay*, enterprise.⁴ *Arrett*, allot.

Against his foe and mine : Watch thou, I pray ;
For evill is at hand him to offend."

So having said, eftsoones ¹ he gan display
His painted nimble wings, and vanisht quite away.

IX.

The Palmer seeing his lefte empty place,
And his slow eies beguiled of their sight,
Woxe sore affraid, and standing still a space
Gaz'd after him, as fowle escapt by flight :
At last, him, turning to his charge behight,²
With trembling hand his troubled pulse gan try ;
Where finding life not yet dislodged quight,
He much reioyst, and courd ³ it tenderly,
As chicken newly hatcht, from dreaded destiny.

X.

At last he spide where towards him did pace
Two Paynim Knights al armd as bright as skie,
And them beside an aged Sire did trace,
And far before a light-foote Page did flie
That breathed strife and troublous enmitie.
Those were the two sonnes of Acrates old,
Who, meeting earst ⁴ with Archimago slie
Foreby that Idle Strond, of him were told
That he, which earst ⁴ them combatted, was Guyon bold.

XI.

Which to avenge on him they dearly vowd,
Wherever that on ground they mote him find :

¹ *Eftsoones*, immediately.

² *Courd*, protected.

² *Behight*, intrusted.

⁴ *Earst*, before.

X. 3.—*An aged Sire.*] Archimago.

X. 4.—*A light-foote Page.*] Atin.

X. 7.—*Who, meeting earst.*] See canto VI. stanza XLVII.

False Archimage provokt their corage prouwd,
 And stryful Atin in their stubborne mind
 Coles of contention and whot¹ vengeaunce tind.²
 Now bene they come whereas the Palmer sate,
 Keeping that slombred corse to him assind:
 Well knew they both his person, sith³ of late
 With him in bloody arnes they rashly did debate.

XII.

Whom when Pyrochles saw, inflam'd with rage
 That Sire he fowl bespake; "Thou dotard vile,
 That with thy brutenesse shendst⁴ thy comely age,
 Abandon soone, I read,⁵ the caytive spoile
 Of that same outcast carcas, that erewhile
 Made itselke famous through false trechery,
 And crownd his coward crest with knightly stile;
 Loe! where he now inglorious doth lye,
 To prove he lived il, that did thus fowly dye."

XIII.

To whom the Palmer fearelesse answered;
 "Certes,⁶ Sir Knight, ye bene too much to blame,
 Thus for to blott the honor of the dead,
 And with fowle cowardize his carcas shame
 Whose living handes immortalizd his name.
 Vile is the vengeaunce on the ashes cold;
 And envy base to barke at sleeping fame:
 Was never wight that treason of him told:
 Yourselfe his prowesse prov'd, and found him fiers and bold."

XIV.

Then sayd Cymochles; "Palmer, thou doest dote,
 Ne canst of prowesse ne of knighthood deeme,

¹ *Whot*, hot.² *Tind*, kindled.³ *Sith*, since.⁴ *Shendst*, disgracest.⁵ *Read*, advise.⁶ *Certes*, surely.

Save as thou seest or hearest : But well I wote,
 That of his puissance tryall made extreeme :
 Yet gold all is not that doth golden seeme ;
 Ne al good Knights that shake well speare and shield :
 The worth of all men by their end esteeme ;
 And then dew praise or dew reproch them yield :
 Bad therefore I him deeme that thus lies dead on field."

XV.

"Good or bad," gan his brother fiers reply,
 "What do I recke, sith¹ that he dide entire ?
 Or what doth his bad death now satisfy
 The greedy hunger of revenging yre,
 Sith¹ wrathfull hand wrought not her owne desire ?
 Yet, since no way is lefte to wreake my spight,
 I will him reave² of armes, the victors hire,
 And of that shield, more worthy of good Knight ;
 For why should a dead dog be deckt in armour bright ?"

XVI.

"Fayr Sir," said then the Palmer suppliant,
 "For knighthoods love doe not so fowle a deed,
 Ne blame your honor with so shamefull vaunt
 Of vile revenge : To spoile the dead of weed³
 Is sacrilege, and doth all sinnes exceed :
 But leave these relicks of his living might
 To decke his herce, and trap⁴ his tomb-blacke steed."

¹ *Sith*, since.³ *Weed*, habiliments.² *Reave*, strip.⁴ *Trap*, adorn.

XV. 2. — *Sith that he dide entire.*] Since he died a natural death, without being wounded.

XV. 7. — *Victors hire.*] The arms of the vanquished knight belonged to the victor.

XVI. 3. — *Ne blame your honor.*] Nor cast reproach upon your honor.

XVI. 7. — *To decke his herce.*] The *herce* was a sort of cenotaph or

“ What herce or steed,” said he, “ should he have dight,
But be entombd in the raven or the kight ? ”

XVII.

With that, rude hand upon his shield he laid,
And th' other brother gan his helme unlace ;
Both fiercely bent to have him disaraid ;
Till that they spide where towards them did pace
An armed Knight, of bold and bounteous grace,
Whose Squire bore after him an heben ¹ launce
And coverd shield : Well kend ² him so far space
Th' Enchaunter by his armes and amenaunce,³
When under him he saw his Lybian steed to prounce ;

XVIII.

And to those brethren sayd ; “ Rise, rise bylive,⁴
And unto batteil doe yourselves addresse ;
For yonder comes the prowest Knight alive,
Prince Arthur, flowre of grace and noblesse,
That hath to Paynim Knights wrought great distresse,
And thousand Sar'zins fowly donne to dye.”
That word so deepe did in their harts impresse,
That both eftsoones ⁵ upstartd furiously,
And gan themselves prepare to batteill greedily.

XIX.

But fiers Pyrochles, lacking his owne sword,
The want thereof now greatly gan to plaine,

¹ *Heben*, ebony.

⁴ *Bylive*, immediately.

² *Kend*, knew.

⁵ *Eftsoones*, immediately.

³ *Amenaunce*, carriage.

temporary tomb, where the arms of the knight were suspended. Pyrochles replies that he deserves not a hearse or a steed, but that he should be left to be devoured by the raven and the kite.

XVII. 5. — *An armed Knight.*] This is the first appearance of Prince Arthur in this book.

XVII. 7. — *And coverd shield.*] See book I. canto VII. stanza XXXIII.

And Archimage besought, him that afford
 Which he had brought for Braggadochio vaine.
 "So would I," said th' enchanter, "glad and faine
 Beteeme¹ to you this sword, you to defend,
 Or ought that els your honour might maintaine;
 But that this weapons powre I well have kend²
 To be contráry to the worke which ye intend :

XX.

"For that same Knights owne sword this is, of yore
 Which Merlin made by his almightie art
 For that his Noursling, when he knighthood swore,
 Therewith to doen his foes eternall smart.
 The metall first he mixt with medæwart,
 That no enchauntment from his dint might save;
 Then it in flames of Aetna wrought apart,
 And seven times dipped in the bitter wave
 Of hellish Styx, which hidden vertue to it gave.

XXI.

"The vertue is, that nether steele nor stone
 The stroke thereof from entraunce may defend;
 Ne ever may be used by his fone³;
 Ne forst his rightful owner to offend;
 Ne ever will it breake, ne ever bend;
 Wherefore *Morddure* it rightfully is hight.⁴

¹ *Beteems*, deliver.³ *Fone*, foes.² *Kend*, learned.⁴ *Hight*, called.

XIX. 4.—*Had brought for Braggadochio vaine.*] See canto III stanza XVIII.

XX. 2.—*Merlin.*] Merlin was a famous enchanter, who plays a conspicuous part in the fabulous history of Britain.

XX. 5.—*Medæwart.*] This I conjecture to be a general name for a medicinal herb, compounded of *medica* and *wart*, an herb. Upton thinks that a particular herb, called *medica*, mentioned by Virgil in *Georg.* i. 215, is meant.

XXI. 6.—*Morddure.*] *Morddure* is derived from two French words

In vaine therefore, Pyrochles, should I lend
 The same to thee, against his Lord to fight ;
 For sure yt would deceive thy labor and thy might."

XXII.

" Foolish old man," said then the Pagan wroth,
 " That weenest words or charms may force withstond :
 Soone shalt thou see, and then beleeve for troth,¹
 That I can carve with this inchaunted brond
 His Lords owne flesh." Therewith out of his hond
 That vertuous steele he rudely snatcht away ;
 And Guyons shield about his wrest he bond :
 So ready dight, fierce battaile to assay,
 And match his brother proud in battailous aray.

XXIII.

By this, that straunger Knight in presence came,
 And goodly salved² them ; who nought againe
 Him answered, as courtesie became ;
 But with sterne lookes, and stomachous³ disdain,
 Gave signes of grudge and discontentment vaine :
 Then, turning to the Palmer, he gan spy
 Where at his feet, with sorrowfull demayne⁴
 And deadly hew, an armed corse did lye,
 In whose dead face he redd great magnanimity.

XXIV.

Said he then to the Palmer ; " Reverend Syre,
 " What great misfortune hath betidd⁵ this Knight ?
 Or did his life her fatall date expyre,
 Or did he fall by treason, or by fight ?

¹ *Troth*, truth.⁴ *Demayne*, demeanor.² *Salved*, saluted.⁵ *Betidd*, befallen.³ *Stomachous*, haughty.

signifying to bite sharp. The magic virtues of King Arthur's sword
 Excalabar are well known to the readers of romantic fiction.

However, sure I rew his pitteous plight."
 "Not one, nor other," sayd the Palmer grave,
 "Hath him befalne; but cloudes of deadly night
 Awhile his heavy eylids cover'd have,
 And all his sences drowned in deep sencelesse wave-

XXV.

"Which those his cruell foes, that stand hereby,
 Making advantage, to revenge their spight,
 Would him disarm and treaten shamefully;
 Unworthie usage of redoubted Knight!
 But you, faire Sir, whose honourable sight
 Doth promise hope of helpe and timely grace,
 Mote I beseech to succour his sad plight,
 And by your powre protect his feeble cace?
 First prayse of knighthood is, fowle outrage to deface.¹"

XXVI.

"Palmer," said he, "no Knight so rude, I weene,
 As to doen outrage to a sleeping ghost²:
 Ne was there ever noble corage³ seene,
 That in advantage would his puissaunce bost:
 Honour is least, where oddes appeareth most.
 May bee, that better reason will aswage
 The rash revengers heat. Words, well dispost,
 Have secrete powre t' appease inflamed rage:
 If not, leave unto me thy Knights last patronage."

XXVII.

Tho,⁴ turning to those brethren, thus bespoke;
 "Ye warlike payre, whose valorous great might,
 It seemes, iust wronges to vengeaunce doe provoke,
 To wreake your wrath on this dead-seeming Knight,
 Mote ought allay the storme of your despight,

¹ *Deface*, defeat, prevent.² *Corage*, heart, mind.³ *Ghost*, soul.⁴ *Tho*, then.

And settle patience in so furious heat?
 Not to debate the chalenge of your right,
 But for his carkas pardon I entreat,
 Whom fortune hath already laid in lowest seat."

XXVIII.

To whom Cymochles said; "For what art thou,
 That mak'st thyselfe his dayes-man,¹ to prolong
 The vengeaunce prest?² Or who shall let³ me now
 On this vile body from to wreak my wrong,
 And make his carkas as the outcast dong?
 Why should not that dead carrion satisfye
 The guilt, which, if he lived had thus long,
 His life for dew revenge should deare aby⁴?
 The trespass still doth live, albee⁵ the person dye."

XXIX.

"Indeed," then said the Prince, "the evill donne
 Dyes not, when breath the body first doth leave;
 But from the grandsyre to the nephewes⁶ sonne
 And all his seede the curse doth often cleave,
 Till vengeaunce utterly the guilt bereave:
 So streightly⁷ God doth iudge. But gentle Knight,
 That doth against the dead his hand upreare,
 His honour staines with rancour and despight,
 And great disparagment makes to his former might."

XXX.

Pyrochles gan reply the second tyme,

¹ *Dayes-man*, arbitrator.

⁵ *Albee*, although.

² *Prest*, ready at hand.

⁶ *Nephewes*, grandson, or descendant generally.

³ *Let*, hinder.

⁷ *Streightly*, strictly.

⁴ *Abye*, pay.

XXVII. 7.—*Not to debate the chalenge of, &c.*] To waive all question concerning.

And to him sayd ; “ Now, felon, sure I read,¹
 How that thou art partaker of his cryme :
 Therefore by Termagaunt thou shalt be dead.”
 With that, his hand, more sad² than lomp of lead,
 Uplifting high, he weened with Morddure,
 His owne good sword Morddure, to cleave his head.
 The faithfull steele such treason no’uld³ endure,
 But, swarving from the marke, his Lordes life did assure.

XXXI.

Yet was the force so furious and so fell,
 That horse and man it made to reele asyde :
 Nath’lesse the Prince would not forsake his sell,⁴
 (For well of yore he learned had to ryde,)
 But full of anger fiersly to him cryde ;
 “ False traitour, miscreaunt, thou broken hast
 The law of armes, to strike foe undefide :
 But thou thy treasons fruit I hope, shalt taste
 Right sowre, and feele the law, the which thou hast defast.⁵”

XXXII.

With that his balefull speare he fiercely bent
 Against the Pagans brest, and therewith thought
 His cursed life out of her lodg have rent :
 But, ere the point arrived where it ought,
 That seven-fold shield, which he from Guyon brought,
 He cast between to ward the bitter stownd⁶ :
 Through all those foldes the steelehead passage wrought,
 And through his shoulder perst ; wherwith to ground
 He groveling fell, all gored in his gushing wound.

¹ *Read*, perceive.⁴ *Sell*, saddle.² *Sad*, heavy.⁵ *Defast*, broken.³ *No’uld*, would not.⁶ *Stownd*, assault.

XXX. 4. — *By Termagaunt, &c.*] *Termagaunt* is the name given in old romances to the god of the Saracens.

XXXIII.

Which when his brother saw, fraught with great griefe
 And wrath, he to him leaped furiously,
 And fowly saide; By Mahoune, cursed thiefe,
 That direfull stroke thou dearely shalt aby.¹”
 Then, hurling up his harmefull blade on hy,
 Smote him so hugely on his haughtie crest,
 That from his saddle forced him to fly:
 Els mote it needes downe to his manly brest
 Have cleft his head in twaine, and life thence dispossesst.

XXXIV.

Now was the Prince in daungerous distresse,
 Wanting his sword when he on foot should fight:
 His single speare could doe him small redresse
 Against two foes of so exceeding might,
 The least of which was match for any Knight.
 And now the other, whom he earst² did daunt,
 Had reard himselfe againe to cruel fight
 Three times more furious and more puissaunt,
 Unmindfull of his wound, of his fate ignoraunt.

XXXV.

So both attonce him charge on either syde
 With hideous strokes and importable³ powre,
 That forced him his ground to traverse wyde,
 And wisely watch to ward that deadly stowre⁴:
 For on his shield, as thicke as stormie showre,
 Their strokes did raine; yet did he never quaile,
 Ne backward shrink; but as a stedfast towre,

¹ *Aby*, pay.³ *Importable*, not to be borne.² *Earst*, before.⁴ *Stowre*, danger.XXXIII. 3. — *By Mahoune.*] Mohammed.XXXIV. 3. — *His single speare.*] His spear alone and single.

Whom foe with double battry doth assaile, [availe.
Them on her bulwarke beares, and bids them nought

XXXVI.

So stoutly he withstood their strong assay ;
Till that at last, when he advantage spyde,
His poynant ¹ speare he thrust with puissant sway
At proud Cymochles, whiles his shield was wyde,²
That through his thigh the mortall steele did gryde³ :
He, swarving with the force, within his flesh
Did breake the lance, and let the head abyde :
Out of the wound the red blood flowed fresh,
That underneath his feet soone made a purple plesh.⁴

XXXVII.

Horribly then he gan to rage and rayle,
Cursing his gods, and himselfe damning deepe :
Als⁵ when his brother saw the red blood rayle⁶
Adowne so fast, and all his armour steepe,
For very felnesse⁷ lowd he gan to weepe,
And said ; “ Caytive, curse on thy cruell hond,
That twice hath spedd⁸ ; yet shall it not thee keepe
From the third brunt of this my fatall brond : [stond !”
Lo, where the dreadfull Death behynd thy backe doth

XXXVIII.

With that he strooke, and th’ other strooke withall,
That nothing seemd mote beare so monstrous might :
The one upon his covered shield did fall,
And glauncing downe would not his owner byte :
But th’ other did upon his troncheon smyte ;

¹ *Poynant*, piercing.² *Wyde*, turned away.³ *Gryde*, pierce.⁴ *Plesh*, pool.⁵ *Als*, also.⁶ *Rayle*, flow.⁷ *Felnesse*, fury.⁸ *Spedd*, succeeded.XXXVIII. 5. — *Troncheon*.] The wooden part of his spear.

Which hewing quite asunder, further way
 It made, and on his hacqueton did lyte,
 The which dividing with impórtune¹ sway,
 It seized in his right side, and there the dint did stay.

XXXIX.

Wyde was the wound, and a large lukewarme flood,
 Red as the rose, thence gushed grievously ;
 That when the Paynym spyde the streaming blood,
 Gave him great hart and hope of victory.
 On th' other side, in huge perplexity
 The Prince now stood, having his weapon broke ;
 Nought could he hurt, but still at warde did ly :
 Yet with his troncheon he so rudely stroke
 Cymochles twice, that twice him forst his foot revoke.

XL.

Whom when the Palmer saw in such distresse,
 Sir Guyons sword he lightly to him raught,² [blesse,
 And said ; “Fayre sonne, great God thy right hand
 To use that sword so well as he it ought !”
 Glad was the Knight, and with fresh courage fraught,
 When as againe he armed felt his hond :
 Then like a lyon, which had long time saught
 His robbed whelpes, and at the last them fond [yond³ :
 Emongst the shepheard swaynes, then wexeth wood and

XLI.

So fierce he laid about him, and dealt blowes
 On either side, that neither mayle could hold,

¹ *Importune*, cruel.² *Raught*, reached.³ *Wood and yond*, fierce and furious.

XXXVIII. 7.—*His hacqueton.*] The *hacqueton* was a jacket worn under the armor, made of quilted cotton or leather.

XL. 4.—*So well as he it ought.*] As well as the owner could have used it.

Ne shield defend the thunder of his throwes :
 Now to Pyrochles many strokes he told ;
 Eft¹ to Cymochles twice so many fold ;
 Then, backe againe turning his busie hond,
 Them both attonce compeld with courage bold
 To yield wide way to his hart-thrilling² brond ; [stond.
 And though they both stood stiffe, yet could not both with-

XLII.

As salvage bull, whom two fierce mastives bayt,
 When rancour doth with rage him once engore,³
 Forgets with wary warde them to awayt,
 But with his dreadfull hornes them drives afore,
 Or flings aloft, or treads downe in the flore,
 Breathing out wrath, and bellowing disdaine,
 That all the forest quakes to hear him rore :
 So rag'd Prince Arthur twixt his foemen twaine,
 That neither could his mightie puissance sustaine.

XLIII.

But ever at Pyrochles when he smitt,
 (Who Guyons shield cast ever him before,
 Whereon the Faery Queenes pourtract was writt.)
 His hand relented and the stroke forbore,
 And his deare hart the picture gan adore ;
 Which oft the Paynim sav'd from deadly stowre⁴ :
 But him henceforth the same can save no more ;
 For now arrived is his fatall howre,
 That no'te⁵ avoyded be by earthly skill or powre.

XLIV.

For when Cymochles saw the fowle reproch,
 Which them appeached⁶ ; prickt with guiltie shame

¹ *Eft*, then.² *Hart-thrilling*, heart-piercing.³ *Engore*, irritate.⁴ *Stowre*, peril.⁵ *No'te*, could not.⁶ *Appeached*, impeached.

And inward grieffe, he fiercely gan approach,
 Resolv'd to put away that loathly blame,
 Or dye with honour and desert of fame;
 And on the haubergh stroke the Prince so sore,
 That quite disparted all the linked frame,
 And pierced to the skin, but bit no more;
 Yet made him twise to reele, that never moov'd afore.

XLV.

Whereat renfierst¹ with wrath and sharp regret,
 He stroke so hugely with his borrowd blade,
 That it empierst the Pagans burganet²;
 And, cleaving the hard steele, did deepe invade
 Into his head, and cruell passage made
 Quite through his brayne: He, tomling downe on ground,
 Breath'd out his ghost, which, to th' infernall shade
 Fast flying, there eternall torment found
 For all the sinnes wherewith his lewd life did abound.

XLVI.

Which when his german³ saw, the stony feare
 Ran to his hart, and all his sence dismayd;
 Ne thenceforth life ne corage did appeare:
 But, as a man whom hellish seendes have frayd,⁴
 Long trembling still he stooode; at last thus sayd;
 "Traytour, what hast thou doen! How ever may
 Thy cursed hand so cruelly have swayd
 Against that Knight! Harrow and well away!
 After so wicked deede why liv'st thou lenger⁵ day!"

¹ *Renfierst*, reinforced.⁴ *Frayd*, terrified.² *Burganet*, steel headpiece.⁵ *Lenger*, longer.³ *German*, brother.XLIV. 6. — *Haubergh*.] Hawberk, a coat of chain armor.XLVI. 8. — *Harrow and well away*.] See canto VI. stanza XLIII.

XLVII.

With that all desperate, as loathing light,
 And with revenge desyring soone to dye,
 Assembling all his force and utmost might,
 With his owne swerd he fierce at him did flye,
 And strooke, and foynd,¹ and lasht outrageously,
 Withouten reason or regard. Well knew
 The Prince, with pacience and sufferance sly,²
 So hasty heat soone cooled to subdew :
 Tho, when this breathlesse woxe, that batteil gan renew.

XLVIII.

As when a windy tempest bloweth hye,
 That nothing may withstand his stormy stowre,³
 The clowdes, as thinges affrayd, before him flye ;
 But, all so soone as his outrageous powre
 Is layd, they fiercely then begin to showre ;
 And, as in scorne of his spent stormy spight,
 Now all attonce their malice forth do poure :
 So did Prince Arthur beare himselfe in fight,
 And suffred rash Pyrochles waste his ydle might.

XLIX.

At last whenas the Sarazin perceiv'd
 How that straunge⁴ sword refusd to serve his neede,
 But, when he stroke most strong, the dint deceiv'd,
 He flong it from him ; and, devoyd of dreed,
 Upon him lightly leaping without heed
 Twixt his two mighty armes engrasped fast,

¹ *Foynd*, pushed.² *Stowre*, violence.³ *Sly*, deliberate.⁴ *Straunge*, not belonging to him.

XLVII. 4. — *With his owne swerd.*] With Prince Arthur's own sword.

XLVII. 9. — *Tho, when, &c.*] Then when *this* Paynim grew breathless, *that* Prince renewed the battle.

Thinking to overthrowe and downe him tred :
 But him in strength and skill the Prince surpast,
 And through his nimble sleight did under him down cast.

L.

Nought booted it the Paynim then to strive ;
 For as a bittur¹ in the eagles clawe,
 That may not hope by flight to scape alive,
 Still waytes for death with dread and trembling aw ;
 So he, now subiect to the victours law,
 Did not once move, nor upward cast his eye,
 For vile disdain and rancour, which did gnaw
 His hart in twaine with sad melācholy ;
 As one that loathed life, and yet despysd to dye.

LI.

But, full of princely bounty and great mind,
 The Conqueror nought cared him to slay ;
 But, casting wronges and all revenge behind,
 More glory thought to give life then decay,²
 And sayd ; “ Paynim, this is thy dismall day ;
 Yet if thou wilt renounce thy miscreaunce,³
 And my trew liegeman yield thyselſe for ay,
 Life will I graunt thee for thy valiaunce,
 And all thy wronges will wipe out of my sovenaunce.”⁴

LII.

“ Foole,” sayd the Pagan, “ I thy gift defye ;
 But use thy fortune, as it doth befall ;
 And say, that I not overcome doe dye,
 But in despight of life for death doe call.”
 Wroth was the Prince, and sory yet withall,

¹ *Bittur*, bittern.² *Miscreaunce*, false faith.³ *Then decay*, than death.⁴ *Sovenaunce*, memory.

That he so wilfully refused grace ;
 Yet, sith¹ his fate so cruelly did fall,
 His shining helmet he gan soone unlace,
 And left his headlesse body bleeding all the place.

LIII.

By this, Sir Guyon from his traunce awakt,
 Life having maystered her sencelesse foe ;
 And looking up, whenas his shield he lakt²
 And sword saw not, he wexed wondrous woe³ :
 But when the Palmer, whom he long ygoe
 Had lost, he by him spyde, right glad he grew,
 And saide ; “ Deare Sir, whom wandering to and fro
 I long have lackt, I ioy thy face to vew !
 Firme is thy faith, whom daunger never fro me drew.

LIV.

“ But read⁴ what wicked hand hath robbed mee
 Of my good sword and shield ? ” The Palmer, glad
 With so fresh hew uprysing him to see,
 Him answered ; “ Fayre sonne, be no whit sad
 For want of weapons ; they shall soone be had.”
 So gan he to discourse the whole debate,⁵
 Which that straunge Knight for him sustained had,
 And those two Sarazins confounded late,
 Whose carcases on ground were horribly prostrate.

LV.

Which when he heard, and saw the tokens trew,
 His hart with great affection was embayd,⁶
 And to the Prince, with bowing reverence dew,
 As to the patrone of his life, thus sayd ;
 “ My Lord, my Liege, by whose most gracious ayd

¹ *Sith*, since.² *Lakt*, lacked, or wanted.³ *Wondrous woe*, very sad.⁴ *Read*, tell me.⁵ *Debate*, battle.⁶ *Embayd*, filled.

I live this day, and see my foes subdewd,
 What may suffice to be for meede repayd
 Of so great graces as ye have me shewd,
 But to be ever bound" —

LVI.

To whom the Infant thus; "Fayre Sir, what need
 Good turnes be counted, as a servile bond,
 To bind their dooers to receive their meed?
 Are not all Knightes by oath bound to withstond
 Oppressours powre by armes and puissant hond?
 Suffise, that I have done my dew¹ in place."
 So goodly purpose they together fond
 Of kindness and of courteous aggrace²;
 The whiles false Archimage and Atin fled apace.

¹ *Desc*, duty.² *Aggrace*, favor.

LVI. 1. — *The Infant.*] *Infant* here means *prince*, in the sense of the Spanish *infanté*.

LVI. 1. — *Fayre Sir, what need, &c.*] This remark of Prince Arthur expresses the sentiment of a beautiful maxim of de la Rochefoucauld, that the too eager desire to return a favor is, in itself, a species of ingratitude.

LVI. 7. — *So goodly purpose they together fond.*] Thus they held goodly discourse together.

CANTO IX.

The House of Temperaunce, in which
 Doth sober Alma dwell,
 Besiegd of many foes, whom straung-
 er Knights to flight compell.

I.

OF all Gods workes, which doe this worlde adorne,
 There is no one more faire and excellent
 Then ¹ is mans body, both for powre and forme,
 Whiles it is kept in sober government ;
 But none then ¹ it more fowle and indecent,
 Distempred through misrule and passions bace ;
 It grows a monster, and incontinent ²
 Doth lose his dignity and native grace :
 Behold, who list, both one and other in this place.

II.

After the Paynim brethren conquer'd were,
 The Briton Prince recov'ring his stolne sword,
 And Guyon his lost shield, they both yfere ³
 Forth passed on their way in fayre accord,
 Till him the prince with gentle court did bord ⁴ ;
 " Sir Knight, mote I of you this court'sy read, ⁵
 To weet ⁶ why on your shield, so goodly scord,

¹ *Then*, than.² *Incontinent*, immediately.³ *Yfere*, together.⁴ *Bord*, address.⁵ *Read*, ask.⁶ *Weet*, learn.

I. 9. — *In this place.*] In the persons of Prince Arthur and the two brothers, Cymochles and Pyrochles.

Beare ye the picture of that Ladies head?
Full lively is the semblaunt, though the substance dead.”

III.

“Fayre Sir,” sayd he, “if in that picture dead
Such life ye read, and vertue in vaine shew;
What mote ye weene, if the trew lively-head¹
Of that most glorious visage ye did vew!
But yf the beauty of her mind ye knew,
That is, her bounty, and imperiall powre,
Thousand times fairer then her mortall hew,
O! how great wonder would your thoughts devoure,
And infinite desire into your spirite poure!

IV.

“She is the mighty Queene of Faëry,
Whose faire retraits² I in my shield doe beare;
Shee is the flowre of grace and chastity,
Throughout the world renowned far and neare,
My Life, my Liege, my Sovereaine, my Deare,
Whose glory shineth as the morning starre,
And with her light the earth enlumines cleare;
Far reach her mercies, and her praises farre,
As well in state of peace, as puissance in warre.”

V.

“Thrise happy man,” said then the Briton Knight,
“Whom gracious lott and thy great valiaunce
Have made thee soldier of that Princesse bright,
Which with her bounty and glad countenance
Doth blesse her servaunts, and them high advaunce!

¹ *Lively-head*, livelihood, or living original. ² *Retrait*, portrait.

II. 9. — *Full lively, &c.*] ‘The likeness is animated, though the object itself, or the picture, is inanimate.’

III. 3. — *What mote ye weene.*] What would you think.

How may straunge Knight hope ever to aspire,
 By faithfull service and meete amenaunce,¹
 Unto such blisse? sufficient were that hire²
 For losse of thousand lives, to die at her desire.”

VI.

Zaid Guyon, “ Noble Lord, what meed so great,
 Or grace of earthly Prince so souveraine,
 But by your wondrous worth and warlike feat
 Ye well may hope, and easely attaine?
 But were your will her sold to entertaine,
 And numbred be mongst Knights of Maydenhed,
 Great guerdon, well I wote,³ should you remaine,
 And in her favor high be reckoned,
 As Arthegall and Sophy now beene honored.”

VII.

“ Certes,” then said the Prince, “ I God avow,
 That sith⁴ I armes and knighthood first did plight,
 My whole desire hath beene, and yet is now,
 To serve that Queene with al my powre and might.
 Now hath the sunne with his lamp-burning light
 Walkt round about the world, and I no lesse,
 Sith⁴ of that Goddessse I have sought the sight,
 Yet no where can her find; such happinesse
 Heven doth to me envý and fortune favourlesse.⁵”

¹ *Amenaunce*, deparment.² *Wote*, know.³ *Hire*, recompense.⁴ *Sith*, since.⁵ *Favourlesse*, not favouring.

VI. 5.—*Sold to entertaine.*] Receive her pay. *Sold* is a substantive, meaning *pay*.

VI. 9.—*As Arthegall and Sophy.*] Of Arthegall we hear hereafter, but not of Sophy. He was to have been, probably, the hero of some of the books never completed.

VII. 5.—*Now hath, &c.*] In book I. canto IX. stanza XV. Prince Arthur says he had been nine months in search of the Faerie Queene.

VIII.

“Fortune, the foe of famous chevisaunce,
Seldom,” said Guyon, “yields to vertue aide,
But in her way throwes mischief and mischaunce,
Whereby her course is stopt and passage staid.
But you, faire Sir, be not herewith dismaid,
But constant keepe the way in which ye stand ;
Which were it not that I am els delaid
With hard adventure, which I have in hand,
I labour would to guide you through al Fary land.”

IX.

“Gramercy,² Sir,” said he ; “but mote I weete³
What straunge adventure do ye now pursew ?
Perhaps my succour or advizement meete
Mote stead⁴ you much your purpose to subdew.”
Then gan Sir Guyon all the story shew
Of false Acrasia, and her wicked wiles ;
Which to avenge, the Palmer him forth drew
From Faery Court. So talked they, the whiles
They wasted had much way, and measurd many miles.

X.

And now faire Phoebus gan decline in haste
His weary wagon to the westerne vale,
Whenas they spide a goodly Castle, plaste
Foreby⁵ a river in a pleasaunt dale ;
Which choosing for that evenings hospitale,⁶
They thether marcht : but when they came in sight,
And from their sweaty coursers did avale,⁷

¹ *Chevisaunce*, enterprise.

² *Gramercy*, many thanks.

³ *Weete*, know.

⁴ *Stead*, help.

⁵ *Foreby*, near to.

⁶ *Hospitale*, inn.

⁷ *Avale*, alight.

X. 7. — *Their sweaty coursers.*] Sir Guyon's horse had been stolen, and we have not learned how he came by one now.

They found the gates fast barred long ere night,
And every loup¹ fast lockt, as² fearing foes despight.

XI.

Which when they saw, they weened fowle reproch
Was to them doen, their entraunce to forstall³ ;
Till that the Squire gan nigher to approach,
And wind his horne under the Castle wall,
That with the noise it shooke as² it would fall.
Eftsoones⁴ forth looked from the highest spire
The Watch, and lowd unto the Knights did call,
To weete⁵ what they so rudely did require :
Who gently answered, They entraunce did desire.

XII.

“Fly, fly, good Knights,” said he, “fly fast away,
If that your lives ye love, as meete ye should ;
Fly fast, and save yourselves from neare decay ;
Here may ye not have entraunce, though we would :
We would and would againe, if that we could ;
But thousand enemies about us rave,
And with long siege us in this Castle hould :
Seven yeares this wize they us besieged have,
And many good Knights slaine that have us sought to save.”

XIII.

Thus as he spoke, loe ! with outrageous cry
A thousand Villeins rownd about them swarmd
Out of the rockes and caves adioyning nye ;

¹ *Loup*, loop-hole.⁴ *Eftsoones*, immediately.² *As*, as if.⁵ *Weete*, know.³ *Forstall*, prevent.

XII. 8. — *They us besieged have.*] It will hardly be necessary to remind the reader that *this castle* is the human body ; that *Alma* is the mind ; and that the *besiegers* are the unruly appetites, passions, &c. which are alike injurious to body and mind.

Vile caitive wretches, ragged, rude, deformed,
 All threatning death, all in straunge manner armd ;
 Some with unweldy clubs, some with long speares,
 Some rusty knives, some staves in fier warmd :
 Sterne was their looke ; like wild amazed steares,
 Staring with hollow eies, and stiffe upstanding heares.¹

XIV.

Fiersly at first those Knights they did assayle,
 And drove them to recoile : but, when againe
 They gave fresh charge, their forces gan to fayle
 Unhable their encounter to sustaine ;
 For with such puissaunce and impetuous maine
 Those Champions broke on them, that forst them fly,
 Like scattered sheepe, whenas the shepherds swaine
 A lion and a tigre doth espye
 With greedy pace forth rushing from the forest nye.

XV.

A while they fled, but soone retournd againe
 With greater fury then ² before was found ;
 And evermore their cruell Capitaine
 Sought with his raskall routs ³ t'enclose them rownd,
 And overronne to tread them to the grownd :
 But soone the Knights with their bright-burning blades
 Broke their rude troupes, and orders did confownd,
 Hewing and slashing at their idle shades ; [fades.
 For though they bodies seem, yet substaunce from them

XVI.

As when a swarne of gnats at eventide
 Out of the fennes of Allan doe arise,
 Their murmuring small trompetts sownden ⁴ wide,

¹ *Heares, hairs.*² *Then, than.*³ *Raskall routs, multitude of low persons.*⁴ *Sownden, sound.*

Whiles in the aire their clustring army flies,
 That as a cloud doth seeme to dim the skies ;
 Ne man nor beast may rest or take repast
 For their sharpe wounds and noyous¹ iniuries,
 Till the fierce northerne wind with blustring blast
 Doth blow them quite away, and in the ocean cast.

XVII.

Thus when they had that troublous rout disperst,
 Unto the Castle gate they come againe,
 And entraunce crav'd, which was denied erst.²
 Now when report of that their perlous³ paine,
 And combrous conflict which they did sustaine,
 Came to the Ladies eare which there did dwell,
 Shee forth isséwed with a goodly traine
 Of Squires and Ladies equipaged well,
 And entertained them right fairely, as befell.

XVIII.

Alma she called was ; a Virgin bright,
 That had not yet felt Cupides wanton rage ;
 Yet was shee woo'd of many a gentle Knight,
 And many a Lord of noble parentage,
 That sought with her to lincke in marriage :
 For shee was faire, as faire mote ever bee,
 And in the flowre now of her freshest age ;
 Yet full of grace and goodly modestee,
 That even heven reioyced her sweete face to see.

XIX.

In robe of lilly white she was arayd,
 That from her shoulder to her heele downe raught⁴ ;
 The traine whereof loose far behind her strayd,
 Braunched with gold and perle most richly wrought,

¹ *Noyous*, annoying.² *Erst*, first.³ *Perlous*, perilous.⁴ *Raught*, reached.

And borne of two faire damsels which were taught
 That service well : Her yellow golden heare
 Was trimly woven and in tresses wrought,
 Ne other t¹ire she on her head did weare,
 But crowned with a garland of sweete rosiere.²

XX.

Goodly shee entertaind those noble Knights,
 And brought them up into her Castle hall ;
 Where gentle court and gracious delight
 Shee to them made, with mildnesse virginall,
 Shewing herselfe both wise and liberall.
 There when they rested had a season dew,
 They her besought of favour speciall
 Of that faire Castle to afford them vew :
 Shee graunted ; and, them leading forth, the same did shew.

XXI.

First she them led up to the Castle wall,
 That was so high as foe might not it clime,
 And all so faire and fensible³ withall ;
 Not built of bricke, ne yet of stone and lime,
 But of thing like to that Ægyptian slime,
 Whereof king Nine whilome⁴ built Babel towre :
 But O great pitty, that no lenger⁵ time
 So goodly workmanship should not endure !
 Soone it must turne to earth : No earthly thing is sure.

¹ *Tire*, head-dress.² *Rosiere*, rose-tree.³ *Fensible*, capable of being defended.⁴ *Whilome*, formerly.⁵ *Lenger*, longer.

XXI. 5. — *That Ægyptian slime.*] To express the earthly origin of the human body, Spenser says that the castle was made of such slime as was used in building the tower of Babel. (Gen. xi. 3.) Why he should call it “Ægyptian” does not readily appear, as it was a kind of bitumen found in the neighborhood, unless because it was like the glutinous slime deposited by the Nile.

XXII.

The frame thereof seemd partly circulare,
 And part triangulare ; O worke divine !
 Those two the first and last proportions are ;
 The one imperfect, mortall, fœminine ;
 Th' other immortall, perfect, masculine ;
 And twixt them both a quadrate was the base,
 Proportiond equally by seven and nine ;
 Nine was the circle sett in heavens place :
 All which compacted made a goodly diapase.

XXII. 1. — *The frame thereof, &c.*] This stanza forms the subject of an elaborate note by Upton, and is also explained in a letter by Sir Kenelm Digby, which letter is contained in Todd's edition of Spenser, and is a curious specimen of the mystical nonsense of a former age. From these two sources, I shall endeavor to extract a brief explanation. It will be remembered that the castle and its inhabitant, Alma, typify the body and mind of man.

“The frame thereof seemd partly circulare,
 And part triangulare.”

Circulars refers to the mind, and *triangulars* to the body. The circle is the most perfect of figures, and includes the greatest space, and the triangle is the most imperfect, and includes the least space ; consequently they denote the perfect mind and the imperfect body. The rank of these two figures is expressed by the line,

“Those two the first and last proportions are.”

Man's body is imperfect and mortal, but his mind immortal and perfect. The former is also called feminine, and the latter, masculine, because the mind is the active and generating principle, and the body the passive and recipient substance.

“And twixt them both a quadrate was the base.”

This line being utterly unintelligible to me, I can only copy Upton's explanation — “That is, between the mind and body, represented emblematically by the circle and triangle, — the sacred Tetractys, *the fountain of perpetual nature*, (as called in the Pythagorean verses,) the mysterious quadrate, was the base. This quadrate or sacred quaternion

XXIII.

Therein two gates were placed seemly well:
 The one before, by which all in did pas,
 Did th' other far in workmanship excell;
 For not of wood, nor of enduring bras,
 But of more worthy substance fram'd it was:
 Doubly disparted, it did locke and close,
 That, when it locked, none might thorough pas,
 And, when it opened, no man might it close;
 Still opened, to their friendes, and closed to their foes.

XXIV.

Of hewen stone the porch was fayrely wrought,
 Stone more of valew, and more smooth and fine,
 Then¹ iett or marble far from Ireland brought;
 Over the which was cast a wandring vine,

¹ *Then, than.*

comprehended all number, all the elements, all the powers, energies, and virtues in man."

"Proportiond equally by seven and nine;
 Nine was the circle sett in heavens place:
 All which compacted made a goodly diapase."

This refers to the influence supposed to be exerted upon the mind and body, both, by the heavenly bodies. Pythagoras supposed that there were nine heavenly spheres visible to us, the sphere of the fixed stars, (which is "the circle sett in heavens place,") the seven spheres of the seven planets, including the sun and moon, and the sphere of the earth; all which "compactd made a goodly diapase," that is, produced the music of the spheres. The whole stanza is derived from the well-known Pythagorean doctrines concerning numbers and figures.

XXIV. 1. — *The porch.*] It will be readily perceived that "the porch" represents the mouth; "the wandring vine," the lips; "the portcullis," the nose; "the Porter," the tongue; the "twise sixteene Warders," the teeth, &c.

XXIV. 3. — *From Ireland brought.*] It is stated by Todd that there was a marble quarry near the poet's residence, in Ireland.

Enchaced¹ with a wanton yvie twine :
 And over it a fayre portcullis hong,
 Which to the gate directly did incline
 With comely compasse and compacture strong,
 Nether unseemly short, nor yet exceeding long.

XXV.

Within the Barbican² a Porter sate,
 Day and night duely keeping watch and ward ;
 Nor wight nor word mote passe out of the gate,
 But in good order, and with dew regard ;
 Utterers of secrets he from thence debard,
 Bablers of folly, and blazers of cryme :
 His larum-bell might lowd and wyde be hard
 When cause requyrd, but never out of time ;
 Early and late it rong, at evening and at prime.

XXVI.

And rownd about the porch on every syde
 Twise sixteene Warders satt, all armed bright
 In glistring steele, and strongly fortifyde :
 Tall yeomen seemed they and of great might,
 And were enraunged ready still for fight.
 By them as Alma passed with her guesstes,
 They did obeysaunce, as beseemed right,
 And then againe retourned to their restes :
 The Porter eke to her did lout³ with humble gesses.⁴

XXVII.

Thence she them brought into a stately hall,
 Wherein were many tables fayre dispred,
 And ready dight with drapets⁵ festivall,
 Against the viaundes should be ministred.

¹ *Enchaced*, adorned.⁴ *Gesses*, gestures.² *Barbican*, out-work, porch. ⁵ *Drapets*, linen cloths.³ *Lout*, bow.

At th' upper end there sate, yclad in red
 Downe to the ground, a comely personage,
 That in his hand a white rod menaged ;
 He Steward was, hight ¹ Diet ; rype of age,
 And in demeanure sober, and in counsell sage.

XXVIII.

And through the hall there walked to and fro
 A iolly yeoman, Marshall of the same,
 Whose name was Appetite ; he did bestow
 Both gwestes and meate, whenever in they came,
 And knew them how to order without blame,
 As him the Steward badd. They both attone ²
 Did dewty to their Lady, as became ;
 Who, passing by, forth ledd her gwestes anone
 Into the kitchin rowme, ne spard for nicenesse none.

XXIX.

It was a vout ³ ybuilt for great dispence,⁴
 With many raunges reard along the wall,
 And one great chimney, whose long tonnell thence
 The smoke forth threw : And in the midst of all
 There placed was a caudron wide and tall
 Upon a mightie fornace, burning whott,⁵
 More whott ⁵ then ⁶ Aetn', or flaming Mongiball :
 F'or day and night it brent,⁷ ne ceased not,
 So long as any thing it in the caudron gott.

XXX.

But to delay ⁸ the heat, least by mischaunce

¹ *Hight*, called.

² *Attone*, together.

³ *Vaut*, vault.

⁴ *Dispence*, expense.

⁵ *Whott*, hot.

⁶ *Then*, than.

⁷ *Brent*, burnt.

⁸ *Delay*, temper.

XXIX. 5. — *A caudron*.] This *caudron* is the stomach.

XXIX. 7. — *Mongiball*.] *Mongiball* is another name for Mt. *Ætna*.

It might breake out and set the whole on fyre,
 There added was by goodly ordinaunce
 An huge great payre of bellowes, which did styre¹
 Continually, and cooling breath inspyre.
 About the caudron many Cookes accoyld²
 With hookes and ladles, as need did requyre;
 The whyles the viaundes in the vessell boyld,
 They did about their businesse sweat, and sorely toyld.

XXXI.

The maister Cooke was cald Concoction;
 A carefull man, and full of comely guyse:
 The kitchin Clerke, that hight³ Digestion,
 Did order all th' achates⁴ in seemely wise,
 And set them forth, as well he could devise.
 The rest had severall offices assynd;
 Some to remove the scum as it did rise;
 Others to beare the same away did mynd;
 And others it to use according to his kynd.

XXXII.

But all the liquour, which was fowle and waste,
 Not good nor serviceable elles for ought,
 They in another great round vessel plaste,
 Till by a conduit pipe it thence were brought;
 And all the rest, that noyous⁵ was and nought,
 By secret wayes, that none might it espy,
 Was close convoid, and to the backgate brought,
 That cleped⁶ was Port Esquiline, whereby
 It was avoided quite, and throwne out privily.

¹ *Styre*, stir, move.⁴ *Achates*, provisions.² *Accoyld*, stood round.⁵ *Noyous*, offensive.³ *Hight*, was called.⁶ *Cleped*, named.XXX. 4. — *Payre of bellowes.*] These are the lungs.XXXII. 8. — *Port Esquiline.*] The Campus Esquilinus, in ancient

XXXIII.

Which goodly order and great workmans skill
 Whenas those Knightes beheld, with rare delight
 And gazing wonder they their mindes did fill ;
 For never had they seene so straunge a sight.
 Thence backe againe faire Alma led them right,
 And soone into a goodly parlour brought,
 That was with royall arras richly dight,¹
 In which was nothing pourtrahed nor wrought ;
 Not wrought nor pourtrahed, but easie to be thought :

XXXIV.

And in the midst thereof upon the floure
 A lovely bevy of faire Ladies sate,
 Courted of many a iolly² paramoure,
 The which them did in modest wise amate,³
 And each one sought his Lady to aggrate⁴—
 And eke emongst them little Cupid playd
 His wanton sportes, being retourned late
 From his fierce warres, and having from him layd
 His cruell bow, wherewith he thousands hath dismayd.

XXXV.

Diverse delights they fownd themselves to please ;
 Some song in sweet consórt⁵ ; some laught for ioy ;
 Some plaid with strawes ; some ydly satt at ease ;

Dight, ornamented. ² *Iolly*, handsome. ³ *Amate*, accompany.

⁴ *Aggrate*, please.

⁵ *Consórt*, concert.

Rome, was granted by the senate as a place of burial for the poor. It was outside of the Esquiline gate, through which the bodies were carried. Criminals were generally carried through that gate on their way to execution.

XXXIII. 8. — *In which, &c.*] ‘In which nothing was depicted or wrought which was not easy to be comprehended.’

XXXIV. 2. — *Of faire Ladies.*] These *faire Ladies* represent the various affections ; the parlor of arras being the heart.

But other some could not abide to toy,
 All pleasaunce was to them grieve and annoy :
 This frownd ; that faund ; the third for shame did blush ;
 Another seemed envious, or coy ;
 Another in her teeth did gnaw a rush :
 But at these straungers presence every one did hush.

XXXVI.

Soone as the gracious Alma came in place,
 They all attonce out of their seates arose,
 And to her homage made with humble grace :
 Whom when the Knights beheld, they gan dispose
 Themselves to court, and each a damzell chose :
 The Prince by chaunce did on a Lady light,
 That was right faire and fresh as morning rose,
 But somewhat sad and solemne eke in sight,¹
 As if some pensive thought constrained her gentle spright.

XXXVII.

In a long purple pall, whose skirt with gold
 Was fretted² all about, she was arayd ;
 And in her hand a poplar braunch did hold ;
 To whom the Prince in courteous maner sayd ;
 “ Gentle Madáme, why beene ye thus dismayd,
 And your faire beautie doe with sadnes spill³ ?
 Lives any that you hath thus ill apayd⁴ ?
 Or doen you love, or doen you lack your will ?
 Whatever bee the cause, it sure beseemes you ill.”

¹ *In sight*, in appearance, or expression.² *Spill*, spoil, obscure.³ *Fretted*, embroidered with fret-work.⁴ *Apayd*, treated.

XXXVII. 3.—*A poplar braunch.*] The poplar was sacred to Hercules, which is probably the reason why this lady, who represents the love of distinction, has a branch of it in her hands, that hero being so preëminently distinguished for that quality.

XXXVIII.

"Fayre Sir," said she, halfe in disdaineful wise,
 "How is it that this word in me ye blame,
 And in yourselfe doe not the same advise¹?
 Him ill beseemes anothers fault to name,
 That may unwares be blotted with the same:
 Pensive I yeeld I am, and sad in mind,
 Through great desire of glory and of fame;
 Ne ought I weene are ye therein behynd, [Her find."
 That have twelve months sought One, yet no where can

XXXIX.

The Prince was inly moved at her speach,
 Well weeting² trew what she had rashly³ told;
 Yet with faire semblaunt⁴ sought to hyde the breach,
 Which change of colour did perforce unfold,
 Now seeming flaming whott,⁵ now stony cold:
 Tho,⁶ turning soft aside, he did inquire
 What wight she was that poplar braunch did hold:
 It answered was, her name was Prays-desire,
 That by well doing sought to honour to aspyre.

XL.

The whiles the Faery Knight did entertaine
 Another Damsell of that gentle crew,
 That was right fayre and modest of demayne,⁷
 But that too oft she chaung'd her native hew:
 Straunge was her tyre,⁸ and all her garment blew,
 Close rownd about her tuckt with many a plight⁹:

¹ *Advise*, perceive.⁶ *Tho*, then.² *Weeting*, knowing.⁷ *Demayne*, demeanor.³ *Rashly*, at a venture.⁸ *Tyre*, dress.⁴ *Semblaunt*, appearance.⁹ *Plight*, fold.⁵ *Whott*, hot.

Upon her fist the bird, which shonnoeth vew
 And keeps in coverts close from living wight,
 Did sitt, as yet ashamd how rude Pan did her dight.¹

XLI.

So long as Guyon with her communed,²
 Unto the grownd she cast her modest eye,
 And ever and anone with rosy red
 The bashfull blood her snowy cheekes did dye,
 That her became, as polisht yvory
 Which cunning craftsman hand hath overlayd
 With fayre vermilion or pure lastery.³
 Great wonder had the Knight to see the Mayd
 So straungely passioned,⁴ and to her gently said ;

XLII.

“Fayre Damzell, seemeth by your troubled cheare,
 That either me too bold ye weene, this wise
 You to molest, or other ill to feare
 That in the secret of your hart close lyes,
 From whence it doth, as cloud from sea, aryse :
 If it be I, of pardon I you pray ;
 But, if ought else that I mote not devyse,
 I will, if please you it discure,⁵ assay
 To ease you of that ill, so wisely as I may.”

XLIII.

She answerd nought, but more abasht for shame
 Held downe her head, the whiles her lovely face

¹ *Dight*, treat.⁴ *Passioned*, confused.² *Communed*, conversed.⁵ *Discure*, reveal.³ *Lastery*, red color.

XL. 7. — *The bird, &c.*] The nymph Echo bore to Pan a daughter named Jynx, who was changed by Juno into a bird of the same name, which, in the lexicons and dictionaries is called “the Wryneck.” Upton conjectures that Spenser, by his description, means the cuckow.

The flashing blood with blushing did inflame,
 And the strong passion¹ mard her modest grace,
 That Guyon mervayld at her uncouth cace²;
 Till Alma him bespake; "Why wonder yee,
 Faire Sir, at that which ye so much embrace?
 She is the fountaine of your modestee;
 You shamefast are, but Shamefastnes itselfe is shee."

XLIV.

Thereat the Elfe did blush in privitee,
 And turnd his face away; but she the same
 Dissembled³ faire, and faynd to oversee.⁴
 Thus they awhile with court and goodly game
 Themselves did solace each one with his Dame,
 Till that great Lady thence away them sought
 To vew her Castles other wondrous frame:
 Up to a stately turret she them brought,
 Ascending by ten steps of alabaster wrought.

XLV.

That turrets frame most admirable was,
 Like highest heaven compassed around,
 And lifted high above this earthly masse,
 Which it survewd, as hils doen lower ground:
 But not on ground mote like to this be found;
 Not that, which antique Cadmus whylome⁵ built
 In Thebes, which Alexander did confound;
 Nor that proud towre of Troy, though richly guilt,⁶ [spilt.
 From which young Hectors blood by cruell Greekes was

¹ *Passion*, emotion.⁴ *Oversee*, overlook.² *Uncouth cace*, singular appearance.⁵ *Whylome*, formerly.³ *Dissembled*, pretended not to observe.⁶ *Guilt*, gilded.

XLIII. 7. — *Which ye so much embrace.*] 'Why wonder ye at that of which you yourself have so large a share?'

XLV. 9. — *From which young Hectors blood, &c.*] Astyanax, the son of Hector, was thrown from the walls of Troy by the Greeks.

XLVI.

The rooffe hereof was arched over head,
 And deckt with flowers and herbars¹ daintily ;
 Two goodly beacons, set in watches stead,
 Therein gave light, and flamd continually :
 For they of living fire most subtilly
 Were made, and set in silver sockets bright,
 Cover'd with lids deviz'd of substance sly,²
 That readily they shut and open might.
 O, who can tell the prayeses of that Makers might !

XLVII.

Ne can I tell, ne can I stay to tell,
 This parts great workemanship and wondrous powre,
 That all this other worldes worke doth excell,
 And likest is unto that heavenly towre
 That God hath built for his owne blessed bowre.
 Therein were divers rowmes, and divers stages ;
 But three the chiefest and of greatest powre,
 In which there dwelt three honorable Sages,
 The wisest men, I weene, that lived in their ages.

XLVIII.

Not he, whom Greece, the nurse of all good arts,
 By Phœbus doome the wisest thought alive,
 Might be compar'd to these by many parts :
 Nor that sage Pylian syre, which did survive
 Three ages, such as mortall men contrive,³

¹ *Herbars*, plants. ² *Sly*, finely wrought. ³ *Contrive*, spend.

XLVI. 1. — *The rooffe*, &c.] The "arched rooffe" is the skull; the "flowers and herbars," the hair; the "two goodly beacons," the eyes.

XLVI. 3. — *In watches stead*.] In the place of watches.

XLVIII. 1. — *Not he*, &c.] Socrates, whom the oracle at Delphi pronounced the wisest of men.

XLVIII. 4. — *Nor that sage Pylian syre*.] Nestor.

By whose advise old Priams cittie fell,
 With these in praise of pollicies mote strive.
 These thre in these three rowmes did sondry dwell,
 And counselled faire Alma how to governe well.

XLIX.

The First of them could things to come foresee ;
 The Next could of things present best advise ;
 The Third things past could keep in memoree :
 So that no time nor reason could arize,
 But that the same could one of these comprize.
 Forthy¹ the First did in the forepart sit,
 That nought mote hinder his quicke preiudize² ;
 He had a sharpe foresight and working wit
 That never idle was, ne once would rest a whit.

L.

His chamber was disappointed all within
 With sondry colours, in the which were writ
 Infinite shapes of things dispersed thin ;
 Some such as in the world were never yit,
 Ne can devized be of mortall wit ;
 Some daily seene and knowen by their names,
 Such as in idle fantasies do flit ;
 Infernall hags, centaurs, feendes, hippodames,³
 Apes, lyons, aegles, owles, fooles, lovers, children, dames.

LI.

And all the chamber filled was with flyes

¹ *Fortky*, therefore.

² *Praiudize*, foresight.

³ *Hippodames*, sea-horses.

XLIX. 1.—*The First of them.*] The first of these personages is Imagination, the second, Judgment, and the third, Memory.

L. 9.—*Apes, &c.*] The singular group of objects which is here presented reminds one of the celebrated line—

“Lutes, lobsters, seas of milk, and ships of amber.”

Which buzzed all about, and made such sound
 That they encombred all mens eares and eyes ;
 Like many swarmes of bees assembled round,
 After their hives with honny do abound.
 All those were idle Thoughtes and Fantasies,
 Devices, Dreames, Opinions unsound,
 Shewes, Visions, Sooth-sayes, and Prophetesies ;
 And all that fained is, as Leasings,¹ Tales, and Lies.

LII.

Emongst them all sate he which wonned² there,
 That hight³ Phantastes by his nature trew ;
 A man of yeares yet fresh, as mote appere,
 Of swarth complexion, and of crabbed hew,
 That him full of melancholy did shew ;
 Bent hollow beetle browes, sharpe staring eyes,
 That mad or foolish seemd : one by his vew'
 Mote deeme him borne with ill-disposed skyes,
 When oblique⁴ Saturne sate in th' house of agonyes.

LIII.

Whom Alma having shewed to her Guests,
 Thence brought them to the second rowme, whose wals
 Were painted faire with memorable gestes⁵
 Of famous wisards ; and with picturals
 Of magistrates, of courts, of tribunals,
 Of commen wealthes, of states, of pollicy,

¹ *Leasings*, untruths.⁴ *Oblique*, unpropitious.² *Wonned*, dwelt.⁵ *Gestes*, deeds.³ *Hight*, is called.

LII. 9. — *When oblique Saturne, &c.*] Among astrologers, the influence of Saturn was always deemed malignant. Sir Thomas Browne, in his *Religio Medici*, says, "I was born in the planetary hour of Saturn, and I think I have a piece of that leaden planet in me."

Of lawes, of iudgementes, and of décrets,
 All artes, all science, all philosophy,
 And all that in the world was ay thought wittily.¹

LIV.

Of those that rowme was full ; and them among
 There sate a Man of ripe and perfect age,
 Who did them meditate all his life long,
 That through continuall practise and uságe
 He now was growne right wise and wondrous sage :
 Great plesure had those straunger Knightes to see
 His goodly reason and grave personage,
 That his disciples both desyrd to bee :
 But Alma thence them led to th' hindmost rowme of three.

LV.

That chamber seemed ruinous and old,
 And therefore was removed far behind,
 Yet were the wals, that did the same uphold,
 Right firme and strong, though somewhat they declind ;
 And therein sat an Old old Man, halfe blind,
 And all decrepit in his feeble corse,²
 Yet lively vigour rested in his mind,
 And recompenst them with a better scorse³ :
 Weake body well is chang'd for minds redoubled forse.

LVI.

This man of infinite remembraunce was,
 And things forgone⁴ through many ages held,

¹ *Wittily*, wisely.³ *Scorse*, exchange.² *Corse*, body.⁴ *Forgone*, gone by.LIV. 2.—*A Man*.] This is the Judgment.LV. 4.—*Declind*.] i. e. from a perpendicular position.LV. 5.—*An Old old Man*.] This is the Memory.

Which he recorded still as they did pas,
 Ne suffred them to perish through long eld,¹
 As all things els the which this world doth weld²;
 But laid them up in his immortall scrine,³
 Where they for ever incorrupted dweld:
 The warres he well remembered of king Nine,
 Of old Assaracus, and Inachus divine.

LVII.

The yeares of Nestor nothing were to his,
 Ne yet Mathusalem, though longest liv'd;
 For he remembered both their infancis:
 Ne wonder then if that he were depriv'd
 Of native strength now that he them surviv'd.
 His chamber all was hangd about with rolls
 And old records from auncient times derivd,
 Some made in books, some in long parchment scrolls,
 That were all worm-eaten and full of canker holes.

LVIII.

Amidst them all he in a chaire was sett,
 Tossing and turning them withouten end;
 But for⁴ he was unhabie them to fett,⁵
 A litle Boy did on him still attend
 To reach, whenever he for ought did send:
 And oft when thinges were lost, or laid amis,
 That Boy them sought and unto him did lend:
 Therefore he Anamnestes cleped⁶ is;
 And that Old Man Eumnestes, by their proprietis.

¹ *Eld*, age.⁴ *But for*, but because.² *Weld*, wield, or use.⁵ *Fett*, fetch.³ *Scrine*, desk.⁶ *Cleped*, called.

LVIII. 4. — *A litle Boy, &c.*] The *Boy* sustains to the *Old Man* the relation of Recollection to Memory. — *Eumnestes* means a person of

LIX.

The Knightes there entring did him reverence dew,
 And wondred at his endlessse exercise.
 Then as they gan his library to vew,
 And antique regesters for to avise,¹
 There chaunced to the Princes hand to rize
 An auncient booke, hight ² *Briton Moniments*,
 That of this lands first conquest did devise,
 And old division into regiments ³
 Till it reduced was to one mans governements.

LX.

Sir Guyon chaunst eke on another booke,
 That hight ² *Antiquitee of Faery Lond* :
 In which whenas he greedily did looke,
 Th' ofspring of Elves and Faryes there he fond,
 As it delivered was from hond to hond :
 Whereat they, burning both with fervent fire
 Their Countreys Auncestry to understand,
 Crav'd leave of Alma and that aged Sire
 To read those bookes ; who gladly graunted their desire.

¹ *Avise*, examine. ² *Hight*, called. ³ *Regiments*, governments.

good memory ; *Anamnestes*, one who puts in mind of something which has been forgotten.

CANTO X.

A Chronicle of Briton Kings,*
 From Brute to Uthers rayne ;
 And Rolls of Elfin Emperours,
 Till time of Gloriane.

I.

WHO now shall give unto me words and sound
 Equall unto this haughty¹ enterprise ?
 Or who shall lend me wings, with which from ground
 My lowly verse may loftily arise,
 And lift itselfe unto the highest skyes ?
 More ample spirit than hetherto was wount²
 Here needes me, whiles the famous Auncestryes
 Of my most dreaded Sovereigne I recount,
 By which all earthly Princes she doth far surmount.

II.

Ne under sunne that shines so wide and faire,
 Whence all that lives does borrow life and light,
 Lives ought that to her Linage may compaire ;

¹ *Haughty*, high, bold.

² *Wount*, wont.

* *A Chronicle of Briton Kings.*] As this Chronicle is purely fabulous, it has not been deemed worth while to explain it by annotations, except to point out what portions conform to sober history. It is taken from Geoffrey of Monmouth, and an abstract of it may be found in the first book of Milton's History of England. A Summary of Geoffrey of Monmouth is also contained in the first volume of Ellis's Specimens of Ancient English Metrical Romances. Hughes calls this canto "a very amusing digression"—an opinion in which, probably, few will coincide.

Which though from earth it be derived right,
 Yet doth itselfe stretch forth to hevens hight,
 And all the world with wonder overspred ;
 A labor huge, exceeding far my might !
 How shall fraile pen, with fear disparaged,
 Conceive such soveraine glory and great bountyhed !

III.

Argument worthy of Mæonian quill ;
 Or rather worthy of great Phoebus rote,¹
 Whereon the ruines of great Ossa hill,
 And triumphes of Phlegrean Iove, he wrote,
 That all the gods admird his lofty note.
 But, if some relish of that hevenly lay
 His learned daughters would to me report
 To decke my song withall, I would assay
 Thy name, O soveraine Queene, to blazon far away.

IV.

Thy name, O soveraine Queene, thy realme, and race,
 From this renowned Prince derived arre,
 Who mightily upheld that royall mace²
 Which now thou bear'st, to thee descended farre
 From mighty kings and conquerours in warre,
 Thy fathers and great-grandfathers of old,
 Whose noble deeds above the northern starre
 Immortall Fame for ever hath enrold ;
 As in that Old Mans booke they were in order told.

V.

The Land which warlike Britons now possesse,

¹ *Rote*, musical instrument.

² *Mace*, sceptre.

III. 1. — *Argument, &c.*] ‘An argument worthy of Homer’s pen, or the harp of Apollo, upon which he sung the triumphs of Jupiter over the giants on the Phlegrean plains.’

V. 1. — *The Land, &c.*] ‘The fabulous colonies of Egyptians and

And therein have their mighty empire raysd,
 In antique times was salvage wilderness,
 Unpeopled, unmannurd, unprov'd, unpraysd;
 Ne was it island then, ne was it paysd¹
 Amid the ocean waves, ne was it sought
 Of merchants farre for profits therein prayd;
 But was all desolate, and of some thought
 By sea to have bene from the Celticke mayn-land brought.

VI.

Ne did it then deserve a name to have,
 Till that the venturous mariner that way
 Learning his ship from those white rocks to save,
 Which all along the southerne sea-coast lay
 Threatning unbeedy wrecke and rash decay,
 For safety that same his sea-marke made,
 And nam'd it ALBION: But later day,
 Finding in it fit ports for fishers trade,
 Gan more the same frequent, and further to invade.

VII.

But far in land a salvage nation dwelt
 Of hideous giaunts, and halfe-beastly men,
 That never tasted grace, nor goodnes felt;
 But wild like beastes lurking in loathsome den,
 And flying fast as roebucke through the fen,
 All naked without shame or care of cold,
 By hunting and by spoiling liveden²;

¹ *Paysd*, poised.² *Liveden*, lived.

Trojans, of Scandinavians and Spaniards, which flattered the pride and amused the credulity of our rude ancestors, have insensibly vanished in the light of science and philosophy. The present age is satisfied with the simple and rational opinion that the islands of Great Britain and Ireland were gradually peopled from the adjacent continent of Gaul."

GIBBON, ch. xxv.

Of stature huge, and eke of corage bold,
That sonnes of men amazd their sternesse to behold.

VIII.

But whence they sprong, or how they were begott,
Uneath¹ is to assure²; uneath to weene
That monstrous error which doth some assott,³
That Dioclesians fifty daughters shene⁴
Into this Land by chaunce have driven bene;
Where, companing with feends and filthy sprights
Through vaine illusion of their lust unclene,
They brought forth geaunts,⁵ and such dreadful wights
As far exceeded men in their immeasurd mights.

IX.

They held this Land, and with their filthinesse
Polluted this same gentle soyle long time;
That their owne mother loathd their beastlinesse,
And gan abhorre her broods unkindly⁶ crime,
All were they borne of her owne native slime:
Until that Brutus, anciently deriv'd
From roiall stocke of old Assaracs line,
Driven by fatall error here arriv'd,
And them of their unjust possession depriv'd.

X.

But ere he had established his throne,
And spred his empire to the utmost shore,
He fought great batteils with his salvage fone⁷:
In which he them defeated evermore,

¹ *Uneath*, scarcely.⁵ *Geaunts*, giants.² *Assure*, to assure confidently.⁶ *Unkindly*, unnatural.³ *Assott*, beguile.⁷ *Fone*, foes.⁴ *Shene*, bright.VIII. 2. — *Uneath to weene*.] 'It is not easy to believe.'IX. 8. — *Fatall error*.] Wandering ordained by the fates.

And many giaunts left on groning flore :
 That well can witnes yet unto this day
 The westerne Hogh, besprincled with the gore
 Of mighty Goëmot, whome in stout fray
 Corineus conquered, and cruelly did slay.

XI.

And eke that ample pitt, yet far renownd
 For the large leape which Debon did compell
 Coulin to make, being eight lugs¹ of grownd,
 Into the which retourning backe he fell :
 But those three monstrous stones doe most excell,
 Which that huge sonne of hideous Albion,
 Whose father Hercules in Fraunce did quell,
 Great Godmer threw, in fierce contention,
 At bold Canutus ; but of him was slaine anon.

XII.

In meed of these great conquests by them gott,
 Corineus had that province utmost west
 To him assigned for his worthy lott,
 Which of his name and memorable gest²
 He called Cornwaile, yet so called best :
 And Debons shayre was, that is Devonshyre :
 But Canute had his portion from the rest,
 The which he cald Canutium, for his hyre ;
 Now Cantium, which Kent we comenly inquiryre.³

XIII.

Thus Brute this Realme unto his rule subdewd,
 And raigned long in great felicity,
 Lov'd of his freends, and of his foes eschewd :
 He left three sonnes, his famous progeny,
 Borne of fayre Inogene of Italy ;

¹ *Lugs*, rods.² *Gest*, deed.³ *Inquiryre*, call.

Mongst whom he parted his imperiall state,
 And Lochrine left chiefe lord of Britany.
 At last ripe age bad him surrender late
 His life, and long good fortune, unto finall fate.

XIV.

Lochrine was left the souveraine lord of all ;
 But Albanact had all the northerne part,
 Which of himselfe Albania he did call ;
 And Camber did possesse the westerne quart,¹
 Which Severne now from Logris doth depart² :
 And each his portion peaceably enioyd,
 Ne was there outward breach, nor grudge in hart,
 That once their quiet government annoyd ;
 But each his paynes to others profit still employd.

XV.

Untill a Nation straung, with visage swart
 And corage fierce that all men did affray,
 Which through the world then swarmd in every part,
 And overflowd all countries far away,
 Like Noyes³ great flood, with their impórtune⁴ sway,
 This Land invaded with like violence,
 And did themselves through all the north display ;
 Untill that Lochrine for his Realmes defence,
 Did head against them make and strong munificence.⁵

XVI.

He them encountred, a confused rout,
 Foreby⁶ the river that whylôme⁷ was hight⁸

¹ *Quart*, quarter.⁵ *Munificence*, defence.² *Depart*, separate.⁶ *Foreby*, near to.³ *Noyes*, Noah's.⁷ *Whylôme*, formerly.⁴ *Impórtune*, cruel.⁸ *Hight*, called.

The ancient Abus, where with courage stout
 He them defeated in victorious fight,
 And chaste so fiercely after fearefull flight,
 That forst their chiefetain, for his safeties sake,
 (Their chiefetain Humber named was aright,)
 Unto the mighty streame him to betake,
 Where he an end of batteill and of life did make.

XVII.

The King returned proud of victory,
 And insolent wox through unwonted ease,
 That shortly he forgot the ieopardy,
 Which in his Land he lately did appease,
 And fell to vaine voluptuous disease :
 He lov'd faire Ladie Estrild, leudly lov'd,
 Whose wanton pleasures him too much did please,
 That quite his hart from Guendolene remov'd,
 From Guendolene his wife, though alwaies faithful prov'd.

XVIII.

The noble daughter of Corinēus
 Would not endure to see so vile disdaind,
 But, gathering force and corage valorous,
 Encountred him in batteill well ordaind,
 In which him vanquisht she to fly constraind :
 But she so fast pursewd, that him she tooke
 And threw in bands, where he till death remaind :
 Als¹ his faire leman flying through a brooke
 She overhent,² nought moved with her piteous looke ;

XIX.

But both herselfe, and eke her daughter deare
 Begotten by her kingly paramoure,
 The faire Sabrina, almost dead with feare,

¹ *Als*, also.² *Overhent*, overtook.

She there attached,¹ far from all succoure :
 The one she slew upon the present floure ;
 But the sad virgin innocent of all
 Adowne the rolling river she did poure,
 Which of her name now Severne men do call :
 Such was the end that to disloyall love did fall.

XX.

Then for her sonne, which she to Locrin bore,
 (Madan was young, unmeet the rule to sway,)
 In her owne hand the crowne she kept in store,
 Till ryper years he raught² and stronger stay :
 During which time her powre she did display
 Through all this Realme, the glory of her sex,
 And first taught men a woman to obey :
 But, when her sonne to mans estate did wex,³
 She it surrendred, ne her selfe would lenger vex.

XXI.

Tho⁴ Madan raignd, unworthie of his race ;
 For with all shame that sacred throne he fild.⁵
 Next Memprise, as unworthy of that place,
 In which being consorted with Manild,
 For thirst of single kingdom him he kild.
 But Ebranck salved⁶ both their infamies
 With noble deedes, and warreyd on Brunchild
 In Henault, where yet of his victories
 Brave monuments remaine, which yet that land envies.

¹ *Attached*, seized.² *Raught*, reached.³ *Wex*, grow.⁴ *Tho*, then.⁵ *Fild*, defiled.⁶ *Salved*, healed.

ton's Comus, in which her sad fate is commemorated in a passage of great beauty.

XIX. 5. — *The present floure.*] The very spot.

XXI. 7. — *Brunchild.*] This is a hero of the romantic ages of Germany. *Henault*, or *Hainault*, is one of the provinces of Belgium.

XXII.

An happy man in his first dayes he was,
 And happy father of faire progeny :
 For all so many weekes, as the yeare has,
 So many children he did multiply ;
 Of which were twentie sonnes, which did apply
 Their mindes to prayse and chevalrous desyre :
 Those germans¹ did subdew all Germany,
 Of whom it hight² ; but in the end their syre
 With foule repulse from Fraunce was forced to retyre.

XXIII.

Which blott his sonne succeeding in his seat,
 The second Brute, the second both in name
 And eke in semblaunce of his puissaunce great,
 Right well recur'd,³ and did away that blame
 With recompence of everlasting fame :
 He with his victour sword first opened
 The bowels of wide Fraunce, a forlorne Dame,
 And taught her first how to be conquered ; [ed.
 Since which, with sondrie spoiles she hath been ransack-

XXIV.

Let Scaldis tell, and let tell Hania,
 And let the marsh of Esthambruges tell,
 What colour were their waters that same day,
 And all the moore twixt Elversham and Dell,
 With blood of Henalois which therein fell.
 How oft that day did sad Brunchildis see
 The *greene shield* dyde in dolorous vermill ?

¹ *Germans*, brothers. ² *Hight*, was called ³ *Recur'd*, recovered.

XXII. 8.— *Of whom it hight.*] This is an amusing derivation of the word *Germany*, a name given by the Romans.

XXIV. 1.— *Scaldis.*] This is the river Scheld.

That not *scuith guiridh* it mote seeme to bee,
But rather *y scuith gogh*, signe of sad crueltee.

XXV.

His sonne king Leill, by fathers labour long,
Enioyd an heritage of lasting peace,
And built Cairleill, and built Cairleon strong.
Next Huddibras his realme did not encrease,
But taught the Land from wearie wars to cease.
Whose footsteps Bladud following, in artes
Exceld at Athens all the learned preace,¹
From whence he brought them to these salvage parts,
And with sweet science mollifide their stubborne harts.

XXVI.

Ensample of his wondrous faculty,
Behold the boyling bathes at Cairbadon,
Which seeth with secret fire eternally,
And in their entrailles, full of quick brimstón,
Nourish the flames which they are warnd upon,
That to their people wealth they forth do well,²
And health to every forreyne nation :
Yet he at las, contending to excell
The reach of men, through flight into fond mischief fell.

XXVII.

Next him king Leyr in happie peace long raynd,

¹ *Preace*, throng.

² *Well*, pour.

XXIV. 8. — *Scuith guiridh*.] These are Welsh words, meaning "the green shield." *Y scuith gogh* means "the red shield."

XXV. 3. — *Cairleill*.] The town of Carlisle.

XXVI. 2. — *Cairbadon*.] The town of Bath.

XXVI. 9. — *Fond mischief*.] Foolish death or ruin. The story is that, in attempting to fly, he fell and was dashed in pieces.

XXVII. 1. — *King Leyr*.] At the time this stanza was written, Spenser little dreamed of the immortality which this name was destined to enjoy.

But had no issue male him to succeed,
 But three faire daughters, which were well uptraind
 In all that seemed fitt for kingly seed ;
 Mongst whom his Realme he equally decreed
 To have divided : Tho,¹ when feeble age
 Nigh to his utmost date he saw proceed,
 He cald his daughters, and with speeches sage
 Inquyrd, which of them most did love her parentage.²

XXVIII.

The eldest Gonorill gan to protest,
 That she much more than her owne life him lov'd ;
 And Regan greater love to him profest
 Then ³ all the world, whenever it were prov'd ;
 But Cordeill said she lov'd him as behoov'd :
 Whose simple answer, wanting colours fayre
 To paint it forth, him to displeasaunce moov'd,
 That in his crown he counted her no hayre,
 But twixt the other twain his Kingdom whole did shayre.

XXIX.

So wedded th' one to Maglan king of Scottes,
 And th' other to the king of Cambria,
 And twixt them shayrd his Realme by equall lottes ;
 But, without dowre, the wise Cordelia
 Was sent to Aganip of Celtica :
 Their aged syre, thus eased of his crowne,
 A private life ledd in Albania
 With Gonorill, long had in great renowne,
 That nought him griev'd to beene from rule deposed downe.

¹ *Tho*, then. ² *Parentage*, parent. ³ *Then*, than.

“King Lear” was published about sixteen years after the *Faerie Queene*.
 The magic of Shakspeare's genius has made these the only interesting
 stanzas in the whole canto.

XXX.

But true it is that, when the oyle is spent,
 The light goes out, and weeke¹ is throwne away ;
 So, when he had resign'd his regiment,²
 His daughter gan despise his drouping day,
 And wearie wax of his continuall stay :
 Tho³ to his daughter Regan he repayrd,
 Who him at first well used every way ;
 But, when of his departure she despayrd,
 Her bountie she abated, and his cheare empayrd.

XXXI.

The wretched man gan then avise⁴ too late,
 That love is not where most it is profest ;
 Too truely tryde in his extremest state !
 At last, resolv'd likewise to prove the rest,
 He to Cordelia himselfe address,
 Who with entyre affection him receav'd,
 As for her syre and king her seemed best ;
 And after all an army strong she leav'd,⁵
 To war on those which him had of his Realme bereav'd.

XXXII.

So to his crowne she him restord againe ;
 In which he dyde, made ripe for death by eld,⁶
 And after wild it should to her remaine :
 Who peaceably the same long time did weld,⁷
 And all mens harts in dew obedience held ;
 Till that her sisters children, woxen strong,

¹ *Weeks*, wick.⁵ *Leav'd*, levied.² *Regiment*, government.⁶ *Eld*, age.³ *Tho*, then.⁷ *Weld*, wield.⁴ *Avise*, reflect.

 XXX. 4.— *His drouping day.*] His declining years.

Through proud ambition against her rebeld,
 And overcommen kept in prison long,
 Till weary of that wretched life herselfe she hong.

XXXIII.

Then gan the bloody brethren both to raine :
 But fierce Cundah gan shortly to envy
 His brother Morgan, prickt with proud disdain
 To have a pere in part of soverainty ;
 And, kindling coles of cruell enmity,
 Raisd warre, and him in batteil overthrew :
 Whence as he to those woody hilles did fly,
 Which hight¹ of him Glamorgan, there him slew :
 Then did he raigne alone, when he none equal knew.

XXXIV.

His sonne Rivall⁷ his dead rowme did supply ;
 In whose sad time blood did from heaven rayne.
 Next great Gurgustus, then faire Cæcily,
 In constant peace their kingdomes did contayne.
 After whom Lago and Kinmarke did rayne,
 And Gorbogud, till far in years he grew :
 Then his ambitious sonnes unto them twayne
 Arraught² the rule, and from their father drew ;
 Stout Ferrex and sterne Porrex him in prison threw.

XXXV.

But O ! the greedy thirst of royall crowne,
 That knowes no kinred, nor regards no right,
 Sturd Porrex up to put his brother downe ;

¹ *Hight*, are called.² *Arraught*, seized.

XXXIV. 9.—*Stout Ferrex and sterne Porrex.*] *Ferrex* and *Porrex* have afforded the subject of the earliest tragedy in the English language, written by Lord Buckhurst and Thos. Norton, called "*Gorboduc*," or sometimes "*Ferrex and Porrex*."

Who, unto him assembling forreigne might,
 Made warre on him, and fell himselfe in fight:
 Whose death t' avenge, his mother mercilesse,
 Most mercilesse of women, Wyden hight,¹
 Her other sonne fast sleeping did oppresse,
 And with most cruell hand him murdred pittillesse.

XXXVI.

Here ended Brutus sacred progeny,
 Which had seven hundred years this scepter borne
 With high renowne and great felicity:
 The noble braunch from th' antique stocke was torne
 Through discord, and the roiall throne forlorne.²
 Thenceforth this Realme was into factions rent,
 Whilest each of Brutus boasted to be borne,
 That in the end was left no monument
 Of Brutus, nor of Britons glorie auncient.

XXXVII.

Then up arose a man of matchlesse might,
 And wondrous wit to menage high affayres,
 Who, stird with pittie of the stressed³ plight
 Of this sad Realme, cut into sondry shayres
 By such as claymd themselves Brutes rightfull hayres,
 Gathered the princes of the people loose
 To taken counsell of their common cares;
 Who, with his wisdom won, him streight did choose
 Their King, and swore him fealty to win or loose.

XXXVIII.

Then made he head against his enemies,
 And Ymner slew of Logris miscreate;
 Then Ruddoc and proud Stater, both allyes,

¹ *Hight*, named. ² *Forlorne*, left vacant. ³ *Stressed*, distressed.

XXXVII. 6. — *Loose*.] Who were dispersed or scattered.

This of Albány newly nominate,
 And that of Cambry King confirmed late,
 He overthrew through his owne valiaunce ;
 Whose countries he redus'd to quiet state,
 And shortly brought to civile governaunce,
 Now one, which earst ¹ were many made through variaunce.

XXXIX.

Then made he sacred lawes, which some men say
 Were unto him reveald in vision ;
 By which he freed the travellers high-way,
 The churches part, and ploughmans portion,
 Restraining stealth and strong extortion ;
 The gracious Numa of great Britany :
 For, till his dayes, the chiefe dominion
 By strength was wielded without pollicy :
 Therefore he first wore crowne of gold for dignity.

XL.

Donwallo dyde (for what may live for ay ?)
 And left two sonnes, of pearelesse prowesse both,
 That sacked Rome too dearely did assay,
 The recompence of their periúred oth ;
 And ransackt Greece wel tryde, when they were wroth ;
 Besides subiected France and Germany,
 Which yet their praises speake, all ² be they loth,
 And inly tremble at the memory
 Of Brennus and Belinus, kinges of Britany.

XLI.

Next them did Gurgunt, great Belinus sonne,

¹ *Earst*, formerly.

² *All*, although.

XL. 5. — *Ransackt Greece, &c.*] ¹ *Greece*, ransacked and well tried, or tested by them in their anger, *too dearely did assay*, or learn by experience, that they were of peerless prowess.'

In rule succede, and eke in fathers praise ;
 He Easterland subdewd, and Denmarke wonne,
 And of them both did foy¹ and tribute raise,
 The which was dew in his dead fathers daies :
 He also gave to fugitives of Spayne,
 Whom he at sea found wandring from their waies,
 A seate in Ireland safely to remayne,
 Which they should hold of him as subiect to Britayne.

XLII.

After him raigned Guitheline his hayre,
 The iustest man and trewest in his daies,
 Who had to wife Dame Mertia the fayre,
 A woman worthy of immortall praise,
 Which for this Realme found² many goodly layes,³
 And wholesome statutes to her husband brought :
 Her many deemd to have beene of the Fayes,
 As was Aegerié that Numa tought :
 Those yet of her be Mertian lawes both nam'd and thought.

XLIII.

Her sonne Sifillus after her did rayne ;
 And then Kimarus ; and then Danius :
 Next whom Morindus did the crowne sustayne ;
 Who, had he not with wrath outrageous
 And cruell rancour dim'd his valorous
 And mightie deedes, should matched have the best :
 As well in that same field victorious
 Against the forreine Morands he exprest ;
 Yet lives his memorie, though carcas sleepe in rest.

XLIV.

Five sonnes he left begotten of one wife,
 All which successively by turnes did rayne :

¹ *Foy*, (*foi*, Fr.) allegiance.² *Found*, established.³ *Leyes*, laws.

First Gorboman, a man of vertuous life ;
 Next Archigald, who for his proud disdayne
 Deposed was from pryncedome soverayne,
 And pitteous Elidure put in his sted ;
 Who shortly it to him restord agayne,
 Till by his death he it recovered ;
 But Peridure and Vigent him dithronized :

XLV.

In wretched prison long he did remaine,
 Till they out-raigned had their utmost date,
 And then therein reseized¹ was againe,
 And ruled long with honorable state,
 Till he surrendred realme and life to fate.
 Then all the sonnes of these five brethren raynd
 By dew successe,² and all their nephewes³ late ;
 Even thrise eleven descents the crowne retaynd,
 Till aged Hely by dew heritage it gaynd.

XLVI.

He had two sonnes, whose eldest, called Lud,
 Left of his life most famous memory,
 And endlesse monuments of his great good :
 The ruin'd wals he did reedifye⁴
 Of Troynovant, gainst force of enemy,
 And built that Gate which of his name is hight,⁵
 By which he lyes entombd solemnly :
 He left two sonnes, too young to rule aright,
 Androgeus and Tenantius, pictures of his might.

¹ *Reseized*, reinstated.⁴ *Reedifye*, rebuild.² *Successe*, succession.⁵ *Hight*, called.³ *Nephewes*, descendants.

XLVI. 5. — *Troynovant.*] This is London, and the gate mentioned in the next line is Ludgate.

XLVII.

Whilst they were young, Cassibalane their eme¹
 Was by the people chosen in their sted,
 Who on him tooke the roiall diademe,
 And goodly well long time it governed ;
 Till the prowde Romanes him disquieted,
 And warlike Cæsar, tempted with the name
 Of this sweet Island never conquered,
 And envying the Britons blazed fame,
 (O hideous hunger of dominion !) hether came.

XLVIII.

Yet twise they were repulsed backe againe,
 And twise renforst backe to their ships to fly ;
 The whiles with blood they all the shore did staine,
 And the gray ocean into purple dy :
 Ne had they footing found at last perdie,²
 Had not Androgeus, false to native soyle,
 And envious of uncles soveraintie,
 Betrayd his country unto forreine spoyle.
 Nought els but treason from the first this land did foyle³ !

XLIX.

So by him Cæsar got the victory,
 Through great bloodshed and many a sad assay,
 In which himselfe was charged heavily
 Of⁴ hardy Nennius, whom he yet did slay,
 But lost his sword, yet to be seene this day.

¹ *Eme*, uncle.² *Foyle*, defeat, conquer.³ *Perdie*, truly.⁴ *Of*, by.

XLVII. 1. — *Cassibalane*.] *Cassivellaunus* was the name of a British prince, who fought bravely against Julius Cæsar.

XLVIII. 2. — *Renforst*.] This is in all the editions. The sense seems to require *enforst*, or *enforced*.

Thenceforth this Land was tributarie made
 T' ambitious Rome, and did their rule obey,
 Till Arthur all that reckoning defrayd:
 Yet oft the Briton Kings against them strongly swayd.¹

L.

Next him Tenantius raignd; then Kimbeline,
 What time th' Eternall Lord in fleshly slime
 Enwombd was, from wretched Adams line
 To purge away the guilt of sinfull crime.
 O ioyous memorie of happy time,
 That heavenly grace so plenteously displayd!
 O too high ditty² for my simple rime! —
 Soone after this the Romanes him warrayd³;
 For that their tribute he refusd to let be payd.

LI.

Good Claudius, that next was Emperour,
 An army brought, and with him batteile fought,
 In which the King was by a treachetour⁴
 Disguised slaine, ere any thereof thought:
 Yet ceased not the bloody fight for ought:
 For Arvirage his brothers place supplyde
 Both in his armes and crowne, and by that draught⁵
 Did drive the Romanes to the weaker syde,
 That they to peace agreed. So all was pacifyde.

LII.

Was never King more highly magnifide,

¹ *Swayd*, resisted.⁴ *Treachetour*, traitor.² *Ditty*, theme.⁵ *Draught*, resemblance.³ *Warrayd*, warred upon.

L. 1. — *Kimbeline*.] This is Shakspeare's *Cymbeline*.

LI. 1. — *Good Claudius, &c.*] Claudius was the next emperor, who invaded Britain after Julius Cæsar. He has little claim to the title of *good*.

Nor dredd¹ of Romanes, then² was Arvirage;
 For which the Emperour to him allide
 His daughter Genuiss' in marriage:
 Yet shortly he renounst the vassallage
 Of Rome againe, who hether hastily sent
 Vespasian, that with great spoile and rage
 Forwasted³ all, till Genuissa gent⁴
 Persuaded him to ceasse, and her lord to relent.

LIII.

He dide; and him succeeded Marius,
 Who ioyd his dayes in great tranquillity.
 Then Coyll; and after him good Lucius,
 That first received Christianity,
 The sacred pledge of Christes Evangely.
 Yet true it is, that long before that day
 Hither came Ioseph of Arimathy,
 Who brought with him the Holy Grayle, (they say,)
 And preacht the truth; but since it greatly did decay.

LIV.

This good King shortly without issew dide,
 Whereof great trouble in the Kingdome grew,
 That did herselfe in sondry parts divide,
 And with her powre her owne selfe overthrew,
 Whilest Romanes daily did the weake subdew:
 Which seeing, stout Bunduca up arose,

¹ *Dredd*, dreaded.³ *Forwasted*, laid waste.² *Then*, than.⁴ *Gent*, gentle.

LII. 7. — *Vespasian*.] In the reign of Claudius, Vespasian, afterwards emperor, distinguished himself by his military achievements in Britain.

LIII. 8. — *The Holy Grayle*.] The cup of the last supper, represented as containing the mysterious wine. It is spelt in the earlier romances 'Sangréal,' (i. e. the real blood of our Lord;) subsequently transmuted into 'San greal,' 'Saint Graal;' whence Spenser's 'Holy Grayle.'

LIV. 6. — *Bunduca*.] More generally known as *Boadicea*. She was

And taking armes the Britons to her drew ;
 With whom she marched straight against her foes,
 And them unwares besides the Severne did enclose.

LV.

There she with them a cruell batteill tryde,
 Not with so good successe as shee deserv'd,
 By reason that the captaines on her syde,
 Corrupted by Paulinus, from her swerv'd:
 Yet such, as were through former flight preserv'd,
 Gathering againe, her host she did renew,
 And with fresh corage on the victor serv'd:
 But being all defeated, save a few,
 Rather than fly, or be captiv'd, herselfe she slew.

LVI.

O famous moniment of womens prayse!
 Matchable either to Semiramis,
 Whom antique history so high doth rayse,
 Or to Hypsiphil', or to Thomiris:
 Her host two hundred thousand numbred is;
 Who, whiles good fortune favoured her might,
 Triumphed oft against her enemies;
 And yet, though overcome in haplesse fight,
 Shee triumphed on death, in enemies despight.

LVII.

Her reliques Fulgent having gathered,

an historical personage, who bravely resisted the Romans, and was defeated by Paulus Suetonius, A. D. 61, and poisoned herself.

LVI. 4. — *Or to Hypsiphil', or to Thomiris.*] *Hypsiphils* was a queen of Lemnos, who headed an attack made by her female subjects upon their male relations. — *Thomiris*, or *Thomyris*, was a queen of the Messagetæ, who, according to some accounts, defeated Cyrus, and threw his head into a vessel of blood.

LVII. 1. — *Fulgent.*] *Fulgentius* is said to be the name of a Caledonian chief, who headed the armies which the Emperor Severus met

Fought with Severus, and him overthrew ;
 Yet in the chace was slaine of them that fled ;
 So made them victors whome he did subdew.
 Then gan Carausius tirannize anew,
 And gainst the Romanes bent their proper ¹ powre ;
 But him Allectus treacherously slew,
 And tooke on him the robe of Emperoure :
 Nath'lesse the same enjoyed but short happy howre :

LVIII.

For Asclepiodate him overcame,
 And left inglorious on the vanquisht playne,
 Without or robe or rag to hide his shame :
 Then afterwards he in his stead did raigne ;
 But shortly was by Coyll in batteill slaine :
 Who after long debate, since Lucies tyme,
 Was of the Britons first crownd Soveraine :
 Then gan this Realme renew her passed prime :
 He of his name Coylchester built of stone and lime.

LIX.

Which when the Romanes heard, they hether sent
 Constantius, a man of mickle ² might,

¹ *Their proper*, their own.

² *Mickle*, much.

in his march into Caledonia. But this was a hundred and fifty years after the time of Boadicea, and he is probably a fabulous person.

LVII. 5.—*Carausius*.] Carausius was a Belgian or Briton, a skilful naval commander in the Roman service in the joint reign of Diocletian and Maximinian, A. D. 288. He was sent against some pirates in the Baltic, and, after subduing them, rebelled against Rome, and went with his fleet to Britain, where he became an independent sovereign. He was murdered by Allectus, a Briton, who succeeded to his insular empire, and was defeated by the Romans after a reign of three years.

LIX. 2.—*Constantius*.] Constantius Chlorus, the father of Constantine, died at York, (then Eboracum,) A. D. 306. His wife (the

With whome King Coyll made an agreëment,
 And to him gave for wife his daughter bright,
 Fayre Helena, the fairest living wight,
 Who in all godly thewes¹ and goodly praise
 Did far excell, but was most famous hight²
 For skil in musicke of all in her daies,
 As well in curious instruments as cunning laies³ :

LX.

Of whom he did great Constantine begett,
 Who afterward was emperour of Rome ;
 To which whiles absent he his mind did sett,⁴
 Octavius here lept into his roome,
 And it usurped by unrighteous doome :
 But he his title iustifide by might,
 Slaying Traherne, and having overcome
 The Romane legion in dreadfull fight :
 So settled he his kingdome, and confirmd his right :

LXI.

But, wanting yssew male, his daughter deare
 He gave in wedlocke to Maximian,
 And him with her made of his kingdome heyre,
 Who soone by meanes thereof the Empire wan,
 Till murdred by the freends of Gratian.
 Then gan the Hunnes and Picts invade this Land,
 During the raigne of Maximinian ;
 Who dying left none heire them to withstand ;
 But that they overran all parts with easy hand.

¹ *Thewes*, gifts, faculties.² *Hight*, reputed.³ *Laies*, songs, or vocal music.⁴ *Sett*, apply.

mother of Constantine) was named Helena, and is said by some writers to have been a British princess.

LXII.

The weary Britons, whose war-hable¹ youth
 Was by Maximian lately ledd away,
 With wretched miseryes and woefull ruth
 Were to those Pagans made an open pray,
 And daily spectacle of sad decay :
 Whome Romane warres, which now fowr hundred yeares
 And more had wasted, could no whit dismay ;
 Til, by consent of Commons and of Peares,
 They crownd the second Constantine with ioyous teares :

LXIII.

Who having oft in batteill vanquished
 Those spoylefull Picts, and swarming Easterlings,
 Long time in peace his Realme established,
 Yet oft annoyd with sondry bordragings²
 Of neighbour Scots, and forrein scatterlings³
 With which the world did in those dayes abound :
 Which to outbarre, with painefull pyonings⁴
 From sea to sea he heapt a mighty mound,
 Which from Alcluid to Panwelt did that border bownd.

LXIV.

Three sonnes he dying left, all under age ;
 By meanes whereof their uncle Vortigere
 Usurpt the crowne during their pupillage ;
 Which th' infants tutors gathering to feare,⁵

¹ *War-hable*, able to serve in war.

⁴ *Pyonings*, works of pioneers.

² *Bordragings*, border forays.

⁵ *To feare*, to-ferre, together.

³ *Scatterlings*, vagrants.

LXII. 9. — *The second Constantine.*] A common soldier of the name of Constantine was made emperor in Britain at the beginning of the fifth century.

LXIII. 2. — *Easterlings.*] The northern nations.

Them closely into Armorick did beare :
 For dread of whom, and for those Picts annoyes,
 He sent to Germany straunge aid to reare ;
 From whence eftsoones¹ arrived here three hoyes²
 Of Saxons, whom he for his safety imployes.

LXV.

Two brethren were their capitayns, which hight³
 Hengist and Horsus, well approv'd in warre,
 And both of them men of renowned might ;
 Who making vantage of their civile iarre,
 And of those forreyners which came from farre,
 Grew great, and got large portions of land,
 That in the Realme ere long they stronger arre
 Then⁴ they which sought at first their helping hand,
 And Vortiger enforst the Kingdome to aband.⁵

LXVI.

But, by the helpe of Vortimere his sonne,
 He is againe unto his rule restord ;
 And Hengist, seeming sad for that was donne,
 Received is to grace and new accord,
 Through his faire daughters face and flattering word.

¹ *Eftsoones*, immediately.⁴ *Then*, than.² *Hoyes*, boats.⁵ *Aband*, abandon.³ *Hight*, were named.LXIV. 5. — *Armorick*.] Armorica, or Brittany, in France.LXV. 2. — *Hengist and Horsus*.] Hengist and Horsus were two noted Saxon chiefs, who, about the middle of the fifth century, were invited by Vortiger, a British chief, to assist his people in repelling the invasion of the Picts and Scots, and afterwards established themselves in Britain, and founded the Saxon dynasty.LXVI. 5. — *Through his faire daughters face, &c.*] Vortiger is said to have fallen in love with Rowena, the daughter of Hengist, and married her, by which alliance the Saxons were materially aided in obtaining a permanent foothold in Britain. Hengist, too, is said to

Soone after which, three hundred lords he slew
 Of British blood, all sitting at his bord ;
 Whose dolefull moniments who list to rew,¹
 Th' eternall marks of treason may at Stonheng vew.

LXVII.

By this the sonnes of Constantine, which fled,
 Ambrose and Uther, did ripe yeares attayne,
 And, here arriving, strongly challenged
 The crowne which Vortiger did long detayne ;
 Who, flying from his guilt, by them was slayne :
 And Hengist eke soone brought to shamefull death.
 Thenceforth Aurelius peaceably did rayne,
 Till that through poyson stopped was his breath ;
 So now entombed lies at Stoneheng by the heath.

LXVIII.

After him Uther, which Pendragon hight,²
 Succeeding — There abruptly did it end,
 Without full point, or other cesure³ right ;
 As if the rest some wicked hand did rend,
 Or th' author selfe could not at least⁴ attend

¹ *List to rew*, wishes to pity.² *Cesure*, (*cesura*, Lat.) stop.³ *Hight*, was named.⁴ *Least*, last.

have invited the British chieftains to a feast, and treacherously slain them all, except Vortiger. The truth of both of these accounts is matter of dispute among historians. It is certain that there were devastating wars between the Saxons and Britons, in which the latter were commanded sometimes by Vortiger, and sometimes by his son Vortimer. See Turner's *History of the Anglo-Saxons*, vol. i. pp. 253—265.

LXVII. 6. — *And Hengist, &c.*] The events in this stanza are fabulous. Hengist founded the kingdom of Kent, which he transmitted to his posterity.

LXVIII. 2. — *There abruptly did it end.*] The history is brought down to Uther Pendragon, the father of Arthur, and there ends. Prince Arthur was at that time ignorant of his parentage.

To finish it : that so untimely breach
 The Prince himselfe halfe seemed to offend ;
 Yet secret pleasure did offence empeach,¹
 And wonder of antiquity long stopt his speach.

LXIX.

At last, quite ravisht with delight to heare
 The royall ofspring of his native land,
 Cryde out ; “ Dear Countrey ! O how dearly deare
 Ought thy remembraunce and perpetuall band
 Be to thy foster childe, that from thy hand
 Did commun breath and nouriture receive !
 How brutish is it not to understand
 How much to Her we owe, that all us gave ;
 That gave unto us all whatever good we have ! ”

LXX.

But Guyon all this while his booke did read,
 Ne yet has ended : for it was a great
 And ample volume, that doth far exceed
 My leasure so long leaves here to repeat :
 It told how first Prometheus did create
 A man, of many parts from beasts deryv'd,
 And then stole fire from heven to animate
 His worke, for which he was by Iove depriv'd
 Of life himselfe, and hart-strings of² an aegle ryv'd.³

LXXI.

That man so made he called Elfe, to weet
 Quick, the first author of all Elfin kynd ;
 Who, wandring through the world with wearie feet,

¹ *Empeach*, prevent.² *Of*, by.³ *Ryv'd*, torn.

LXX. 9. — *Of life himselfe.*] Prometheus was not deprived of life by Jupiter, unless Spenser uses the word in the sense of the enjoyment of life.

Did in the gardins of Adonis fynd
 A goodly creature, whom he deemd in mynd
 To be no earthly wight, but either spright,
 Or angell, th' authour of all woman kynd ;
 Therefore a Fay he her according hight,¹
 Of whom all Faryes spring, and fetch their lignage right.

LXXII.

Of these a mighty people shortly grew,
 And puissant kinges which all the world warrayd,²
 And to themselves all nations did subdew :
 The first and eldest, which that scepter swayd,
 Was Elfin : him all India obeyd,
 And all that now America men call :
 Next him was noble Elfinan, who laid
 Cleopolis foundation first of all :
 But Elfiline enclosed it with a golden wall.

LXXIII.

His sonne was Elfinell, who overcame
 The wicked Gobbelines in bloody field :
 But Elfant was of most renowned fame,
 Who all of christall did Panthea build :
 Then Elfar, who two brethren gyauntes kild,
 The one of which had two heades, th' other three :
 Then Elfinor, who was in magick skild ;
 He built by art upon the glassy see
 A bridge of bras, whose sound hevens thunder seem'd to be.

LXXIV.

He left three sonnes, the which in order raynd,
 And all their ofspring, in their dew descents ;
 Even seven hundred princes, which maintaynd
 With mighty deedes their sondry governments :

¹ *Hight*, called.² *Warrayd*, warred upon.

That were too long their infinite contents
 Here to record, ne much materiall :
 Yet should they be most famous monuments,
 And brave ensample, both of martiall
 And civil rule, to kinges and states imperiall.

LXXV.

After all these Elficleos did rayne,
 The wise Elficleos in great maiestie,
 Who mightily that scepter did sustayne,
 And with rich spoyles and famous victorie
 Did high aduance the crowne of Faëry :
 He left two sonnes, of which faire Elferon,
 The eldest brother, did untimely dy ;
 Whose emptie place the mightie Oberon
 Doubly supplide, in spousall and dominion.

LXXVI.

Great was his power and glorie over all
 Which, him before, that sacred seate did fill,
 That yet remaines his wide memoriall :
 He dying left the fairest Tanaquill,
 Him to succede therein, by his last will :
 Fairer and nobler liveth none this howre,
 Ne like in grace, ne like in learned skill ;
 Therefore they Glorian call that glorious flowre :
 Long mayst thou, Glorian, live in glory and great powre !

LXXVII.

Beguyld thus with delight of novelties,

LXXV. 1. — *Elficleos.*] In this and the succeeding stanza there are obvious allusions to history. "Elficleos" is Henry VII.; "Elferon" is Prince Arthur, his son, who died young; "Oberon" is Henry VIII., who married his brother's betrothed bride; and "Tanaquill," or "Gloriana," his daughter, is Queen Elizabeth. It will be observed that no mention is made of Edward VI. or Queen Mary.

And naturall desire of Countryes state,
So long they redd in those antiquities,
That how the time was fled they quite forgate;
Till gentle Alma, seeing it so late,
Perforce their studies broke, and them besought
To thinke how supper did them long awaite:
So halfe unwilling from their bookes them brought,
And fayrely feasted as so noble Knightes she ought.

CANTO XI.

The Enimies of Temperaunce
 Besiege her dwelling place ;
 Prince Arthure them repelles, and fowle
 Maleger doth deface.

I.

WHAT warre so cruell, or what siege so sore,
 As that, which strong Affections¹ doe apply
 Against the forte of Reason evermore,
 To bring the sowle into captivity !
 Their force is fiercer through infirmity
 Of the fraile flesh, relenting to their rage ;
 And exercise most bitter tyranny
 Upon the partes, brought into their bondage :
 No wretchednesse is like to sinfull vellenage.²

II.

But in a body which doth freely yeeld
 His partes to Reasons rule obedient,
 And letteth Her that ought the scepter weeld,
 All happy peace and goodly government
 Is settled there in sure establishment.
 There Alma, like a Virgin Queene most bright,
 Doth florish in all beautie excellent ;
 And to her guesstes doth bounteous banquet dight,³
 Attempted goodly well for health and for delight.

¹ *Affections*, passions.² *Vellenage*, servitude³ *Dight*, furnish.

III.

Early, before the Morne with cremosin¹ ray
 The windowes of bright heaven opened had,
 Through which into the world the dawning Day
 Might looke, that maketh every creature glad,
 Uprose Sir Guyon in bright armour clad,
 And to his purposd iourney him prepar'd :
 With him the Palmer eke in habit sad²
 Himselfe address to that adventure hard :
 So to the rivers syde they both together far'd :

IV.

Where them awaited ready at the ford
 The Ferriman, as Alma had behight,³
 With his well-rigged bote : They goe aboard,
 And he eftsoones⁴ gan launch his barke forthright.
 Ere long they rowed were quite out of sight,
 And fast the land behynd them fled away.
 But let them pas, whiles winde and wether right
 Doe serve their turnes : here I a while must stay,
 To see a cruell fight doen by the Prince this day.

V.

For, all so soone as Guyon thence was gon
 Upon his voyage with his trustie Guyde,
 That wicked band of Villeins fresh begon
 That Castle to assaile on every side,
 And lay strong siege about it far and wyde.
 So huge and infinite their numbers were,
 That all the land they under them did hyde ;
 So fowle and ugly, that exceeding feare
 Their visages imprest, when they approched neare.

¹ *Cremosin*, crimson.² *Behight*, directed.³ *Sad*, grave.⁴ *Eftsoones*, immediately.

VI.

Them in twelve Troupes their Captein did dispart,
 And round about in fittest steades¹ did place,
 Where each might best offend his proper part,
 And his contráry obiect most deface,
 As every one seem'd meetest in that cace.
 Seven of the same against the Castle-Gate
 In strong entrenchments he did closely place,
 Which with incessaunt force and endlesse hate
 They battred day and night, and entraunce did awate.

VII.

The other Five five sondry wayes he sett
 Against the five great Bulwarkes of that pyle,
 And unto each a Bulwarke did arrett,²
 T^r assaile with open force or hidden guyle,
 In hope thereof to win victorious spoile.
 They all that charge did fervently apply³
 With greedie malice and importune⁴ toyle,
 And planted there their huge artillery,
 With which they dayly made most dreadfull battery.

VIII.

The first Troupe was a monstrous rablement
 Of fowle misshapen wightes, of which some were
 Headed like owles, with beckes⁵ uncomely bent ;
 Others like dogs ; others like gryphons dreare ;
 And some had wings, and some had clawes to teare :

¹ *Steades*, positions.⁴ *Importune*, troublesome, restless.² *Arrett*, appoint.⁵ *Beckes*, beaks.³ *Apply*, observe.

VI. 6. — *Seven, &c.*] These, according to Upton, represent the seven deadly sins, and the *Five* mentioned in the next stanza, the vices that attack the senses.

And every one of them had lynces eyes ;
 And every one did bow and arrowes beare :
 All those were lawlesse Lustes, corrupt Envyes,
 And covetous Aspécts, all cruell enimyes.

IX.

Those same against the Bulwarke of the Sight
 Did lay strong siege and battailous assault,
 Ne once did yield it respitt day nor night ;
 But soone as Titan gan his head exault,
 And soone againe as he his light withhault,¹
 Their wicked engins they against it bent ;
 That is, each thing by which the eyes may fault :
 But two then ² all more huge and violent,
 Beautie and Money, they that Bulwarke sorely rent.

X.

The second Bulwarke was the Hearing Sence,
 Gainst which the second Troupe dessignment ³ makes ;
 Deformed creatures, in straunge difference :
 Some having heads like harts, some like to snakes,
 Some like wild bores late rouzd out of the brakes ;
 Slaunderous Reproches, and fowle Infamies,
 Leasinges,⁴ Backbytinges, and vain-glorious Crakes,⁵
 Bad Counsels, Prayses, and false Flatteries :
 All those against that Fort did bend their batteries.

XI.

Likewise that same third Fort, that is the Smell,
 Of that third Troupe was cruelly assayd ;
 Whose hideous shapes were like to feendes of hell,

¹ *Withhault*, withdrew.⁴ *Leasinges*, falsehoods.² *Then*, than.⁵ *Crakes*, boastings.³ *Dessignment*, attack.IX. 7. — *May fault*.] May offend or be in fault.

Some like to houndes, some like to apes, dismayd¹ ;
 Some, like to puttockes,² all in plumes arayd ;
 All shap't according³ their conditions :
 For, by those ugly formes weren pourtrayd
 Foolish Delights, and fond⁴ Abusions,⁵
 Which doe that Sence besiege with light illusions.

XII.

And that fourth Band which cruell battry bent
 Against the fourth Bulwarke, that is the Taste,
 Was, as the rest, a grysie⁶ rablement ;
 Some mouth'd like greedy oystiges ; some faste⁷
 Like loathly toades ; some fashioned in the waste
 Like swine : for so deformd is Luxury,
 Surfeat, Misdiet, and unthriftie Waste,
 Vaine Feastes, and ydle Superfluity :
 All those this Sences Fort assayle incessantly.

XIII.

But the fift Troupe, most horrible of hew
 And ferce of force, is dreadfull to report ;
 For some like snailes, some did like spyders shew,
 And some like ugly urchins⁸ thick and short :
 Cruelly they assayled that fift Fort,
 Armed with dartes of sensuall Delight,
 With stinges of carnall Lust, and strong effort
 Of feeling Pleasures, with which day and night
 Against that same fift Bulwarke they continued fight.

XIV.

Thus these twelve Troupes with dreadfull puissance
 Against that Castle restlesse siege did lay,

¹ *Dismayd*, ill made.² *Puttockes*, kites.³ *According*, according to.⁴ *Fond*, foolish.⁵ *Abusions*, abuses.⁶ *Grysie*, filthy, or squalid.⁷ *Faste*, faced.⁸ *Urchins*, hedgehogs.

And evermore their hideous ordinaunce¹
 Upon the Bulwarkes cruelly did play,
 That now it gan to threaten neare decay:
 And evermore their wicked Capitayn
 Provoked them the breaches to assay,
 Sometimes with threats, sometimes with hope of gayn,
 Which by the ransack of that Peece² they should attayn.

XV.

On th' other syde, th' asseiged³ Castles Ward⁴
 Their stedfast stonds⁵ did mightily maintaine,
 And many bold repulse and many hard
 Atchievement wrought, with perill and with payne,
 That goodly Frame from ruine to sustaine:
 And those two brethren Gyauntes did defend
 The walles so stoutly with their sturdie mayne,⁶
 That never entraunce any durst pretend,
 But they to direful death their groning ghosts did send.

XVI.

The noble virgin, Ladie of the place,
 Was much dismayed with that dreadful sight,
 (For never was she in so evill cace,)
 Till that the Prince, seeing her wofull plight,
 Gan her recomfort from so sad affright,
 Offring his service and his dearest life
 For her defence against that Carle to fight,
 Which was their Chiefe and th' authour of that strife:
 She him remerciéd⁷ as the patrone of her life.

¹ *Ordinaunce*, battering engines.⁵ *Stonds*, stations.² *Peece*, castle.⁶ *Mayne*, force.³ *Assaigned*, besieged.⁷ *Remerciéd*, thanked.⁴ *Ward*, guard.

XV. 6. — *Brethren Gyauntes.*] Prince Arthur and his squire, giants in courage and prowess.

XVII.

Eftsoones¹ himselfe in glitterand armes he dight,
 And his well proved weapons to him hent²;
 So taking courteous conge³ he behight⁴
 Those gates to be unbar'd, and forth he went.
 Fayre mote he thee, the prowest⁵ and most gent,⁶
 That ever brandished bright steele on hye!
 Whom soone as that unruly rablement
 With his gay Squyre issewing did espye,
 They reard a most outrageous dreadfull yelling cry :

XVIII.

And therewithall attonce at him let fly
 Their fluttring arrowes, thicke as flakes of snow,
 And round about him focke impetuously,
 Like a great water-flood, that tomling low
 From the high mountaines, threates to overflow
 With suddein fury all the fertile playne,
 And the sad husbandmans long hope doth throw
 Adowne the streame, and all his vowes make vayne ;
 Nor bounds nor banks his headlong ruine may sustayne.

XIX.

Upon his shield there heaped hayle he bore,
 And with his sword disperst the raskall⁷ flockes,
 Which fled asonder, and him fell before ;
 As withered leaves drop from their dried stockes,
 When the wroth western wind does reave⁸ their locks :
 And underneath him his courageous steed,

¹ *Eftsoones*, immediately.² *Hent*, took.³ *Conge*, leave.⁴ *Behight*, ordered.⁵ *Prowest*, bravest.⁶ *Gent*, accomplished.⁷ *Raskall*, base, or low.⁸ *Reave*, strip.XVII. 5.—*Fayre mote he thee.*] Well may he prosper.

The fierce Spumador, trode them downe like docks¹ ;
 The fierce Spumador borne of heavenly seed ;
 Such as Laomedon of Phœbus race did breed.

XX.

Which suddaine horreur and confused cry
 When as their Capteine heard, in haste he yode²
 The cause to weet,³ and fault to remedy :
 Upon a tygre swift and fierce he rode,
 That as the winde ran underneath his lode,
 Whiles his long legs nigh raught⁴ unto the ground :
 Full large he was of limbe, and shoulders brode ;
 But of such subtile substance and unsound, [bound :
 That like a ghost he seem'd whose grave-clothes were un-

XXI.

And in his hand a bended bow was seene,
 And many arrowes under his right side,
 All deadly daungerous, all cruell keene,
 Headed with flint, and fethers bloody dide ;
 Such as the Indians in their quivers hide :
 Those could he well direct and streight as line,
 And bid them strike the marke which he had eyde ;
 Ne was there salve, ne was there medicine
 That mote recure their wounds ; so inly they did tine.⁵

XXII.

As pale and wan as ashes was his looke ;
 His body leane and meagre as a rake ;
 And skin all withered like a dried rooke ;

¹ *Docks*, weeds.⁴ *Raught*, reached.² *Yode*, came.⁵ *Tine*, inflame.³ *Weet*, learn.

XIX. 7. — *Spumador*.] So called from the Latin *spuma*, foam.

XIX. 9. — *Such as Laomedon, &c.*] Laomedon was a king of Troy, who had a fine breed of horses, which sprang from those of the sun.

Thereto¹ as cold and drery as a snake ;
 That seemd to tremble evermore and quake :
 All in a canvas thin he was bedight,²
 And girded with a belt of twisted brake :
 Upon his head he wore an helmet light,
 Made of a dead mans skull, that seemd a ghastly sight :

XXIII.

Maleger was his name : And after him
 There follow'd fast at hand two wicked Hags,
 With hoary lockes all loose and visage grim ;
 Their feet unshod, their bodies wrapt in rags,
 And both as swift on foot as chased stags ;
 And yet the one her other legge had lame,
 Which with a staffe all full of litle snags³
 She did support, and Impotence her name :
 But th' other was Impatience armd with raging flame.

XXIV.

Soone as the Carle from far the Prince espyde
 Glistring in arnes and warlike ornament,
 His beast he felly prickt on either syde,
 And his mischiévous bow full readie bent,
 With which at him a cruell shaft he sent :

¹ *Thereto*, besides.² *Bedight*, dressed.³ *Snags*, knobs, or protuberant points.

XXIII. 1. — *Maleger was his name.*] *Maleger* is compounded of two Latin words, signifying badly diseased; and from this and the description given of him, he seems to represent the various diseases which an indulgence in those "fleshy lusts which war against the soul" gives birth to.

XXIII. 6. — *Her other leggs.*] *Other*, according to Upton, means *left*.

XXIII. 6. — *Had lame.*] The lameness of *Impotence*, that is, weakness, or want of restraining power, expresses the want of the capacity of self-support.

But he was warie, and it warded well
 Upon his shield, that it no further went,
 But to the ground the idle quarrel¹ fell :
 Then he another and another did expell.²

XXV.

Which to prevent, the Prince his mortall speare
 Soone to him raught,³ and fierce at him did ride,
 To be avenged of that shot whyleare⁴ :
 But he was not so hardy to abide
 That bitter stownd,⁵ but, turning quicke aside
 His light-foot beast, fled fast away for feare :
 Whom to pursue, the Infant⁶ after hide⁷
 So fast as his good courser could him beare ;
 But labour lost it was to weene approach him neare.

XXVI.

Far as the winged wind his tigre fled,
 That vew of eye could scarce him overtake,
 Ne scarce his feet on ground were seene to tread ;
 Through hils and dales he speedy way did make,
 Ne hedge ne ditch his readie passage brake,
 And in his flight the Villeine turn'd his face
 (As wons the Tartar by the Caspian lake,
 Whenas the Russian him in fight does chace,)
 Unto his tygres taile, and shot at him apace.

XXVII.

Apace he shot, and yet he fled apace,
 Still as the greedy Knight nigh to him drew ;
 And oftentimes he would relent⁸ his pace,
 That him his foe more fiercely should poursew :

¹ *Quarrel*, bolt.² *Expell*, throw.³ *Raught*, reached, or seized.⁴ *Whyleare*, just before.⁵ *Stownd*, assault.⁶ *Infant*, prince.⁷ *Hide*, hied, went.⁸ *Relent*, slacken.

But, when his uncouth¹ manner he did vew,
 He gan avize² to follow him no more,
 But keepe his standing, and his shaftes eschew,
 Untill he quite had spent his perlous³ store,
 And then assaile him fresh, ere he could shift for more.

XXVIII.

But that lame Hag, still as abroad he strew
 His wicked arrowes, gathered them againe,
 And to him brought, fresh batteill to renew ;
 Which he espying cast⁴ her to restraine
 From yielding succour to that cursed Swaine,
 And her attaching⁵ thought her hands to tye ;
 But, soone as him dismounted on the plaine
 That other Hag did far away espye
 Binding her Sister, she to him ran hastily ;

XXIX.

And catching hold of him, as downe he lent,⁶
 Him backward overthrew, and downe him stayd⁷
 With their rude handes and gryesly graplement⁸ :
 Till that the Villein, comming to their ayd,
 Upon him fell, and lode upon him layd :
 Full litle wanted, but he had him slaine,
 And of the battell balefull end had made,
 Had not his gentle Squire beheld his paine,
 And comen to his reskew ere his bitter bane.

XXX.

So greatest and most glorious thing on ground
 May often need the helpe of weaker hand ;

¹ *Uncouth*, strange.⁶ *Lent*, stooped.² *Avize*, determine.⁷ *Stayd*, held.³ *Perlous*, perilous.⁸ *Gryesly graplement*, fearful
grasp, or clutch.⁴ *Cast*, resolved.⁵ *Attaching*, seizing.

So feeble is mans state, and life unsound,
 That in assuraunce it may never stand,
 Till it dissolved be from earthly band!
 Prooue be thou, Prince, the prowest man alyve,
 And noblest borne of all in Briton land;
 Yet thee fierce Fortune did so nearely drive,
 That, had not Grace thee blest, thou shouldest not survive.

XXXI.

The Squyre arriving, fiercely in his armes
 Snatcht first the one, and then the other Jade,
 His chiefest letts¹ and authors of his harmes,
 And them perforce withheld with threatned blade,
 Least that his Lord they should behinde invade;
 The whiles the Prince, prickt with reprochful shame,
 As one awakte out of long slombring shade,
 Revivying thought of glory and of fame,
 United all his powres to purge himselfe from blame.

XXXII.

Like as a fire, the which in hollow cave
 Hath long bene underkept and down suppress,
 With murmurous disdayne doth inly rave,
 And grudge, in so streight² prison to be prest,
 At last breakes forth with furious unrest,
 And strives to mount unto his native seat;
 All that did earst³ it hinder and molest,
 Yt now devoures with flames and scorching heat,
 And carries into smoake with rage and horror great.

XXXIII.

So mightely the Briton Prince him rouzd
 Out of his holde, and broke his caytive bands;
 And as a beare, whom angry cures have touz'd,⁴

¹ *Letts*, obstructions.² *Earst*, before.³ *Streight*, confined.⁴ *Touz'd*, worried.

Having off-shakt them and escapt their hands,
 Becomes more fell, and all that him withstands
 Treads down and overthrowes. Now had the Carle
 Alighted from his tigre, and his hands
 Discharged of his bow and deadly quar'le,¹
 To seize upon his foe flatt lying on the marle.²

XXXIV.

Which now him turnd to disavantage deare³;
 For neither can he fly, nor other⁴ harme,
 But trust unto his strength and manhood meare,
 Sith⁵ now he is far from his monstrous swarme,
 And of his weapons did himselfe disarme.
 The Knight, yet wrothfull for his late disgrace,
 Fiercely advaunst⁶ his valorous right arme,
 And him so sore smott with his yron mace,
 That groveling to the ground he fell, and fild his place.

XXXV.

Wel weened hee that field was then his owne,
 And all his labor brought to happy end;
 When suddein up the Villeine overthrowne
 Out of his swowne arose, fresh to contend,
 And gan himselfe to second battaill bend,
 As hurt he had not beene. Thereby there lay
 An huge great stone, which stood upon one end,
 And had not bene removed many a day;
 Some land-marke seemd to bee, or signe of sundry way:

¹ *Quar'le*, bolts.⁴ *Other*, any other person.² *Marle*, ground.⁵ *Sith*, since.³ *Deare*, grievous.⁶ *Advaunst*, raised.

XXXIV. 9. — *Fild his place.*] Covered with his body the place where he lay.

XXXV. 9. — *Or signe of sundry way.*] Or a sign-post denoting the direction of various cross-roads.

XXXVI.

The same he snatch, and with exceeding sway¹
 Threw at his foe, who was right well aware
 To stonne the engin of his meant decay ;
 It booted not to thinke that throw to beare,
 But grownd he gave, and lightly lept areare² ;
 Eft³ fierce retourning, as a faulcon fayre,
 That once hath failed of her souse⁴ full neare,
 Remounts againe into the open ayre,
 And unto better fortune doth herselfe prepayre :

XXXVII.

So brave retourning, with his brandisht blade,
 He to the Carle himselfe agayn address,
 And strooke at him so sternely, that he made
 An open passage through his riven brest,
 That halfe the steele behind his backe did rest ;
 Which drawing backe, he looked evermore
 When the hart blood should gush out of his chest,
 Or his dead corse should fall upon the flore ;
 But his dead corse upon the flore fell nathemore⁵ :

XXXVIII.

Ne drop of blood appeared shed to bee,
 All⁶ were the wovnd so wide and wonderous
 That through his carcas one might playnly see.
 Halfe in amaze with horror hideous,
 And halfe in rage to be deluded thus,
 Again through both the sides he strooke him quight,

¹ *Swoay*, force.⁴ *Souse*, swoop, or attack.² *Areare*, back.⁵ *Nathemore*, none the more.³ *Eft*, again.⁶ *All*, although.

XXXVI. 3.— *The engin of his meant decay.*] ‘The engine which was intended to kill him.’

That made his spright to grone full piteous ;
 Yet nathemore ¹ forth fled his groning spright,
 But freshly, as at first, prepard himselfe to fight.

XXXIX.

Thereat he smitten was with great affright,
 And trembling terror did his hart apall ;
 Ne wist ² he what to thinke of that same sight,
 Ne what to say, ne what to doe at all :
 He doubted ³ least it were some magicall
 Illusion that did beguile his sense,
 Or wandring ghost that wanted funerall,
 Or aery spirite under false pretence,
 Or hellish feend raysd up through divelish science.

XL.

His wonder far exceeded reasons reach,
 That he began to doubt his dazeled sight,
 And oft of error did himselfe appeach ⁴ :
 Flesh without blood, a person without spright,
 Wounds without hurt, a body without might,
 That could doe harme, yet could not harmed bee,
 That could not die, yet seemd a mortall wight,
 That was most strong in most infirmittee ;
 Like did he never heare, like did he never see.

XLI.

Awhile he stood in this astonishment,
 Yet would he not for all his great dismay
 Give over to effect his first intent,
 And th' utmost meanes of victory assay,

¹ *Nathemore*, none the more.² *Doubted*, feared.³ *Wist*, knew.⁴ *Appeach*, accuse.

Or th' utmost yssew of his owne decay.
 His owne good sword Mordure, that never sayld
 At need till now, he lightly threw away,
 And his bright shield that nought him now avayld ;
 And with his naked hands him forcibly assayld.

XLII.

Twixt his two mighty armes him up he snatcht,
 And crusht his carcas so against his brest,
 That the disdainfull sowle he thence dispatcht,
 And th' ydle breath all utterly exprest ¹ :
 Tho,² when he felt him dead, adowne he kest ³
 The lumpish ⁴ corse unto the sencelesse grownd ;
 Adowne he kest ³ it with so puissant wrest,⁵
 That backe againe it did aloste rebownd,
 And gave against his mother Earth a gronefull ⁶ sownd.

XLIII.

As when Loves harness-bearing ⁷ bird from hye
 Stoupes at a flying heron with proud disdayne,
 The stone-dead quarrey ⁸ falls so forciblye,
 That yt rebownds against the lowly playne,
 A second fall redoubling backe agayne.
 Then thought the Prince all peril sure was past,
 And that he victor onely did remayne ;
 No sooner thought, then ⁹ that the Carle as fast
 Gan heap huge strokes on him, as ere he down was cast.

¹ *Exprest*, pressed out.² *Tho*, then.³ *Kest*, cast.⁴ *Lumpish*, heavy.⁵ *Wrest*, wrist, or force.⁶ *Gronefull*, groanful, mournful.⁷ *Harnesse-bearing*, armor bearing.⁸ *Quarrey*, game.⁹ *Then*, than.

test to an end, by resorting to every means to gain the victory, or by exposing his own life to the most extreme peril.

XLIV.

Nigh his wits end then woxe th' amazed Knight,
 And thought his labor lost, and travell¹ vayne,
 Against this lifelesse shadow so to fight :
 Yet life he saw, and felt his mighty mayne,
 That, whiles he marveild still, did still him payne ;
 Forthy² he gan some other wayes advize,
 How to take life from that dead-living swayne,
 Whom still he marked freshly to arize
 From th' earth, and from her womb new spirits to reprize.³

XLV.

He then remembred well, that had bene sayd,
 How th' Earth his mother was, and first him bore ;
 She eke, so often as his life decayd,
 Did life with usury to him restore,
 And reysd⁴ him up much stronger then⁵ before,
 So soone as he unto her wombe did fall :
 Therefore to grownd he would him cast no more,
 Ne him committ to grave terrestriall,
 But beare him farre from hope of succour usuall.

XLVI.

Tho⁶ up he caught him twixt his puissant hands,
 And having scruzd⁷ out of his carrion corse
 The lothfull life, now loosd from sinfull bands,
 Upon his shoulders carried him perforce
 Above three furlongs, taking his full course,
 Until he came unto a standing lake ;
 Him thereinto he threw without remorse,
 Ne sturd, till hope of life did him forsake :
 So end of that Carles days and his owne paynes did make.

¹ *Travell*, travail, labor. ² *Forthy*, therefore. ³ *Reprize*, take again.

⁴ *Reysd*, raised. ⁵ *Then*, than. ⁶ *Tho*, then. ⁷ *Scruzd*, pressed.

XLVII.

Which when those wicked Hags from far did spye,
 Like two mad dogs they ran about the lands ;
 And th' one of them with dreadfull yelling crye,
 Throwing away her broken chaines and bands,
 And having quencht her burning fier-brands,
 Hedlong herselfe did cast into that lake :
 But Impotence with her owne wilfull hands
 One of Malegers cursed darts did take,
 So ryv'd¹ her trembling hart, and wicked end did make.

XLVIII.

Thus now alone he conquerour remains :
 Tho,² cumming to his Squyre that kept his steed,
 Thought to have mounted ; but his feeble vaines
 Him faild thereto, and served not his need,
 Through losse of blood which from his wounds did bleed,
 That he began to faint, and life decay :
 But his good Squyre, him helping up with speed,
 With stedfast hand upon his horse did stay,
 And led him to the Castle by the beaten way.

XLIX.

Where many Groomes and Squiers ready were
 To take him from his steed full tenderly ;
 And eke the fayrest Alma mett him there
 With balme, and wine, and costly spicery,
 To comfort him in his infirmity :

¹ *Ryv'd*, divided, pierced.

² *Tho*, then.

XLVII. 1.—*Which when, &c.*] When disease is expelled from the frame, the impatience and irritability which are its consequences also depart.

XLIX. 4.—*And costly spicery.*] This probably means a beverage in which spices had been infused or steeped.

Eftesoones¹ she causd him up to be conwayd,
And of his arnes despoyled easily
In sumptuous bed shee made him to be layd ;
And, al the while his wounds were dressing, by him stayd.

¹ *Eftesoones*, immediately.

CANTO XII.

Guyon, by Palmers governaunce,
 Passing through perilles great,
 Doth overthrow the Bowre of Blis,
 And Acrasy defeat.

I.

Now ginnes¹ that goodly frame of Temperaunce
 Fayrely to rise, and her adorned hed
 To pricke² of highest prayse forth to advaunce,
 Formerly grounded and fast setteled
 On firme foundation of true bountyhed³ :
 And this brave Knight, that for this vertue fightes,
 Now comes to point of that same perilous sted,⁴
 Where Pleasure dwelles in sensuall delights,
 Mongst thousand dangers and ten thousand magick mightes.

II.

Two dayes now in that sea he sayled has,
 Ne ever land beheld, ne living wight,
 Ne ought save perill, still as he did pas :

¹ *Ginnes*, begins.

³ *Bountyhed*, goodness, virtue.

² *Pricke*, pitch, point.

⁴ *Sted*, place.

I. 4. — *Formerly grounded.*] Being, first of all, grounded, or established.

I. 6. — *And this brave Knight.*] i. e. Sir Guyon, whose adventures are resumed from the beginning of the preceding canto.

I. 8. — *Where Pleasure, &c.*] This is Acrasia.

Tho,¹ when appeared the third Morrow bright
 Upon the waves to spread her trembling light,
 An hideous roring far away they heard,
 That all their sences filled with affright ;
 And streight they saw the raging surges reard
 Up to the skyes, that them of drowning made affeard.

III.

Said then the Boteman, " Palmer, sterve aright,
 And keepe an even course ; for yonder way
 We needes must pas (God doe us well acquight !)
 That is the Gulfe of Greedinesse, they say,
 That deepe engorgeth² all this worldes pray ;
 Which having swallowd up excessively,
 He soone in vomit up againe doth lay,³
 And belcheth forth his superfluity,
 That all the seas for feare doe seeme away to fly.

IV.

" On th' other syde an hideous Rock is pight⁴
 Of mightie magnes stone,⁵ whose craggie clift
 Depending from on high, dreadfull to sight,
 Over the waves his rugged arnes doth lift,
 And threatneth downe to throw his ragged rift
 On whoso cometh nigh ; yet nigh it draws
 All passengers, that none from it can shift :
 For, whiles they fly that Gulfe's devouring iawes,
 They on the rock are rent, and sunck in helpes waves.⁶"

¹ *Tho*, then.⁴ *Pight*, placed.² *Engorgeth*, swallows.⁵ *Magnes-stone*, magnet.³ *Lay*, spread, throw.⁶ *Waves*, waves.

III. 3.— *God doe us well acquight.*] 'May God bring us safely through.'

IV. 5.— *Ragged rift.*] Uneven or broken fragments. — *Rift* means, literally, a *rent*, or *chasm*.

V.

Forward they passe, and strongly he them rowes,
 Untill they nigh unto that Gulfe arryve,
 Where streame more violent and greedy growes :
 Then he with all his puisaunce doth stryve
 To strike his oares, and mightily doth dryve
 The hollow vessell through the threatfull wave ;
 Which, gaping wide to swallow them alyve
 In th' huge abyссе of his engulfing grave,
 Doth rore at them in vaine, and with great terroure rave.

VI.

They, passing by, that grisely¹ mouth did see
 Sucking the seas into his entralles deepe,
 That seemd more horrible than hell to bee,
 Or that darke dreadfull hole of Tartare steepe
 Through which the damned ghosts doen often creep
 Backe to the world, bad livers to torment :
 But nought that falles into this direfull deepe,
 Ne that approacheth nigh the wyde descent,
 May backe retourne, but is condemned to be drent.²

VII.

On th' other side they saw that perilous Rocke,
 Threatning itselfe on them to ruinate,³
 On whose sharp cliftes the ribs of vessels broke ;
 And shivered ships, which had beene wrecked late,
 Yet stuck with carcasses exanimate⁴
 Of such, as having all their substance spent
 In wanton ioyes and lustes intemperate,
 Did afterwarde make shipwrack violent
 Both of their life and fame for ever fowly blent.⁵

¹ *Grisely*, grisly, terrible.⁴ *Exanimate*, lifeless.² *Drent*, drenched, drowned.⁵ *Blent*, polluted, disgraced.³ *Ruinate*, fall.

VIII.

Forthy¹ this hight² the Rock of vile Reproch,
 A dangerous and détestable place,
 To which nor fish nor fowle did once approach,
 But yelling meawes,³ with seagulles hoars and bace,
 And cormoyraunts, with birds of ravenous race,
 Which still sat wayting on that wastfull clift
 For spoile of wretches, whose unhappy cace,
 After lost credit and consumed thrift,
 At last them driven hath to this despairefull drift.

IX.

The Palmer, seeing them in safetie past,
 Thus saide; "Behold th' ensamples in our sightes
 Of lustfull luxurie and thriflesse wast!
 What now is left of miserable wightes
 Which spent their looser daies in leud delightes,
 But shame and sad reproch, here to be red
 By these rent reliques speaking their ill plights!
 Let all that live hereby be counselled
 To shunne Rock of Reproch, and it as death to dread!"

X.

So forth they rowed; and that Ferryman
 With his stiffe oares did brush the sea so strong,
 That the hoare⁴ waters from his frigot ran,
 And the light bubbles daunced all along,
 Whiles the salt brine out of the billowes sprong.
 At last far off they many Islandes spy
 On every side floting the floodes among:

¹ *Forthy*, hence.³ *Meawes*, sea-mews.² *Hight*, is called.⁴ *Hoare*, white with foam.

VIII. 9.—*This despairefull drift.*] This miserable course or direction.

Then said the Knight: "Lo! I the land descry;
Therefore, old Syre, thy course doe thereunto apply."

XI.

"That may not bee," said then the Ferryman,
"Least wee unweeting¹ hap to be fordonne²:
For those same Islands, seeming now and than,
Are not firme land, nor any certein wonne,³
But stragling plots,⁴ which to and fro doe ronne
In the wide waters: therefore are they hight⁵
The Wandring Islands: Therefore doe them shonne;
For they have oft drawn many a wandring wight
Into most deadly daunger and distressed plight.

XII.

"Yet well they seeme to him, that farre doth vew,
Both faire and fruitfull, and the grownd dispreed
With grassy greene of délectable hew;
And the tall trees with leaves appareled
Are deckt with blossoms dyde in white and red,
That mote the passengers thereto allure;
But whosoever once hath fastened
His foot thereon, may never it recure,⁶
But wandreth evermore uncertein and unsure.

XIII.

"As th' isle of Delos whylome,⁷ men report,

¹ *Unweeting*, unknowing.

⁵ *Hight*, called.

² *Fordonne*, undone.

⁶ *Recure*, recover.

³ *Wonne*, habitation.

⁷ *Whylome*, formerly.

⁴ *Plots*, pieces of ground.

XI. 3. — *Seeming now and than.*] Appearing now and then.

XIII. 1. — *As th' isle of Delos, &c.*] This island is represented by the ancients as having been floating under water until it was made to appear and remain fixed, in order that Latona might give birth there to Apollo and Diana, the earth having been bound by an oath imposed

Amid th' Aegæan sea long time did stray,
 Ne made for shipping any certeine port,
 Till that Latona traueiling that way,
 Flying from Iunoes wrath and hard assay,¹
 Of her fayre twins was there delivered,
 Which afterwards did rule the night and day ;
 Thenceforth it firmly was established,
 And for Apolloes temple highly herried.²"

XIV.

They to him hearken, as beseemeth meete ;
 And passe on forward : so their way does ly,
 That one of those same Islands, which doe fleet³
 In the wide sea, they needes must passen by,
 Which seemd so sweet and pleasaunt to the eye,
 That it would tempt a man to touchen there :
 Upon the banck they sitting did espy
 A daintie Damsell dressing of her heare,
 By whom a little skippet⁴ floting did appeare.

XV.

She, them espying, loud to them gan call,
 Bidding them nigher draw unto the shore,
 For she had cause to busie them withall ;
 And therewith lowdly laught : But nathemore⁵
 Would they once turne, but kept on as afore :
 Which when she saw, she left her lockes undight,⁶

¹ *Assay*, pursuit.⁴ *Skippet*, skiff.² *Herried*, honored.⁵ *Nathemore*, none the more.³ *Fleet*, float.⁶ *Undight*, undressed, loosely flowing.

by Juno not to give her a resting-place, by which oath this island was not deemed to be bound. Hence the name of *Delos*, which is a Greek word, meaning *manifest*.

XIV. 3. — *One of those same islands.*] This was the island to which Guyon had been carried by Phædria, as described in the sixth canto.

And running to her boat withouten ore,
 From the departing land it launched light,
 And after them did drive with all her power and might.

XVI.

Whom overtaking, she in merry sort
 Them gan to bord,¹ and purpose diversly² ;
 Now faining dalliaunce and wanton sport,
 Now throwing forth lewd wordes immodestly ;
 Till that the Palmer gan full bitterly
 Her to rebuke for being loose and light :
 Which not abiding, but more scornfully
 Scoffing at him that did her iustly wite,³
 She turnd her bote about, and from them rowed quite.

XVII.

That was the wanton Phædria, which late
 Did ferry him over the Idle Lake :
 Whom nought regarding they kept on their gate,⁴
 And all her vaine allurements did forsake ;
 When them the wary Boteman thus bespake ;
 " Here now behoveth us well to avyse,⁵
 And of our safety good heede to take ;
 For here before a perlous⁶ passage lyes,
 Where many Mermayds haunt making false melodies :

XVIII.

" But by the way there is a great Quicksand,
 And a Whirlepoole of hidden ieopardy ;

¹ *Bord*, accost.² *Purpose diversly*, speak of various things.³ *Wite*, blame.⁴ *Gate*, way.⁵ *Ayise*, consider.⁶ *Perlous*, perilous.

XV. 7. — *Withouten ore.*] This boat, it will be remembered, was moved by turning a pin. See canto VI. stanza V.

XVII. 1. — *Whick late.*] See canto VI.

Therefore, Sir Palmer, keepe an even hand ;
 For twixt them both the narrow way doth ly."
 Scarse had he saide, when hard at hand they spy
 That Quicksand nigh with water covered ;
 But by the checked¹ wave they did descry
 It plaine, and by the sea discoloured :
 It called was the Quikesand of Unthriftyhed.

XIX.

They, passing by, a goodly ship did see
 Laden from far with precious merchandize,
 And bravely furnished as ship might bee,
 Which through great disaventure, or mesprize,²
 Herselfe had ronned into that hazardize³ ;
 Whose mariners and merchants with much toyle
 Labour'd in vaine to have recur'd⁴ their prize,
 And the rich wares to save from pitteous spoyle ;
 But neither toyle nor travaill might her backe recoyle.

XX.

On th' other side they see that perilous Poole,
 That called was the Whirlepoole of Decay ;
 In which full many had with haplesse doole⁵
 Beene suncke, of whom no memorie did stay :
 Whose circled waters rapt with whirling sway,
 Like to a restlesse wheele, still ronning round,
 Did covet, as they passed by that way,
 To draw their bote within the utmost⁶ bound
 Of his wide labyrinth, and then to have them dround.

¹ *Checked*, checkered.⁴ *Recur'd*, recovered.² *Mesprize*, mistake.⁵ *Doole*, sorrow.³ *Hazardize*, hazardous situation.⁶ *Utmost*, outmost.

XIX. 9.—*Might her backe recoyle.*] Might cause her to go back, or
 be removed off the quicksand.

XXI.

But th' heedful Boteman strongly forth did stretch
 His brawnie armes, and all his bodie straine,
 That th' utmost sandy breach they shortly fetch,
 Whiles the dredd daunger does behind remaine.
 Sudden they see from midst of all the maine
 The surging waters like a mountaine rise,
 And the great sea, puft up with proud disdain,
 To swell above the measure of his guise,
 As threatening to deuoure all that his powre despise.

XXII.

The waves come rolling, and the billowes rore
 Outragiously, as¹ they enraged were,
 Or wrathfull Neptune did them drive before
 His whirling charet for exceeding feare;
 For not one puffed of winde there did appeare;
 That all the three thereat woxe much afraid,
 Unweeting² what such horreur straunge did reare.³
 Eftsoones⁴ they saw an hideous hoast arrayd
 Of huge sea-monsters, such as living sence dismayd:

XXIII.

Most ugly shapes and horrible aspects,
 Such as dame Nature selfe mote feare to see,
 Or shame,⁵ that ever should so fowle defects
 From her most cunning hand escaped bee;
 All dreadfull pourtraicts of deformitee:

¹ *As*, as if.⁴ *Eftsoones*, immediately.² *Unweeting*, unknowing.⁵ *Shame*, be ashamed.³ *Reare*, raise, make.

XXI. 3. — *That th' utmost sandy breach, &c.*] They come to the outside or extreme edge of the quicksand, which is called a "sandy breach," because the sea breaks over it.

XXI. 8. — *The measure of his guise.*] Its usual or average level.

Spring-headed hydres ; and sea-shouldring whales,
 Great whirlpooles, which all fishes make to flee ;
 Bright scolopendraes armd with silver scales ;
 Mighty monoceros with immeasured ¹ tayles ;

XXIV.

The dreadful fish, that hath deserv'd the name
 Of Death, and like him lookes in dreadfull hew ;
 The griesly wasserman, that makes his game
 The flying ships with swiftnes to pursue ;
 The horrible sea-satyre, that doth shew
 His fearefull face in time of greatest storme ;
 Huge ziffius, whom mariners eschew
 No lesse than rockes, as travellers informe ;
 And greedy rosmarines with visages deforme :

¹ *Immeasured*, immeasurable.

XXIII. 6. — *Spring-headed hydres.*] Hydras with heads springing from their bodies.

XXIII. 6. — *Sea-shouldring whales.*] So called from the quantity of water they displace in moving.

XXIII. 7. — *Great whirlpooles.*] *Whirlpool*, a large fish of the whale kind ; a general name, like *leviathan*, for any large fish.

XXIII. 8. — *Scolopendraes.*] *Scolopendra* is the name of the centipede, and is also applied to a sea-fish resembling it.

XXIII. 9. — *Monoceros.*] The sea-unicorn, or perhaps the sword-fish. The word is a Greek one, meaning 'one-horned.'

XXIV. 1. — *The dreadful fish.*] This is the Walrus, or Morse, (*Mors* being the Latin for *death*,) a marine quadruped found in the polar regions.

XXIV. 3. — *The griesly wasserman.*] This is an imaginary monster supposed to dwell in the sea, in the shape of a man.

XXIV. 5. — *Horrible sea-satyre.*] This fish, too, is a creature of the fancy.

XXIV. 7. — *Huge ziffius.*] Probably *Xiphias*, which is the sword-fish. Olaus Magnus, however, describes under the name of *Ziffius* a huge and formidable fish, which, as he truly says, is like nothing else.

XXIV. 9. — *Greedy rosmarines.*] This is an imaginary sea-animal

XXV.

All these, and thousand thousands many more,
 And more deformed monsters thousand fold,
 With dreadfull noise and hollow rombling rore
 Came rushing, in the fomy waves enrold,¹
 Which seem'd to fly for feare them to behold :
 Ne wonder, if these did the Knight appall ;
 For all that here on earth we dreadfull hold,
 Be but as bugs to fearen² babes withall,
 Compared to the creatures in the seas entrall.³

XXVI.

“Feare nought,” then saide the Palmer well aviz’d,
 “For these same monsters are not these in deed,
 But are into these fearefull shapes disguiz’d
 By that same wicked Witch, to worke us dread,
 And draw from on this journey to proceed.”
 Tho,⁴ lifting up his vertuous staffe on hye,
 He smote the sea, which calmed was with speed,
 And all that dreadfull armie fast gan flye
 Into great Tethys bosome, where they hidden lye.

XXVII.

Quit from that danger forth their course they kept ;
 And as they went they heard a ruefull cry
 Of one that wayld and pittifully wept,
 That through the sea th’ resounding plaints did fly :

¹ *Enrold*, enveloped.² *Entrall*, entrails, depths.³ *Fearen*, frighten.⁴ *Tho*, then.

described by Olaus Magnus. One of its accomplishments is that of climbing with its teeth to the top of rocks, to feed upon the dew, whence its name, from *ros*, dew, and *marinus*, marine.

XXVI. 4. — *Wicked Witch*.] *Acrasia*.

XXVI. 5. — *And draw from, &c.*] ‘And draw us from proceeding on our journey.’

At last they in an Island did espy
 A seemely¹ Maiden, sitting by the shore,
 That with great sorrow and sad agony
 Seemed some great misfortune to deplore,
 And lowd to them for succour called evermore.

XXVIII.

Which Guyon hearing, streight his Palmer bad
 To stere the bote towards that dolefull Mayd,
 That he might know and ease her sorrow sad :
 Who, him avizing better, to him sayd ;
 " Faire Sir, be not displeasd if disobayd :
 For ill it were to hearken to her cry ;
 For she is inly nothing ill apayd² ;
 But onely womanish fine forgery,
 Your stubborne hart t' affect with fraile infirmity :

XXIX.

" To which when she your courage³ hath inclind
 Through foolish pittty, then her guilefull bayt
 She will embosome deeper in your mind,
 And for your ruine at the last awayt."
 The Knight was ruled, and the Boteman strayt
 Held on his course with stayed⁴ stedfastnesse,
 Ne ever shroncke, ne ever sought to bayt⁵
 His tryed armes for toylesome wearinesse :
 But with his oares did sweeppe the watry wildernessse.

XXX.

And now they nigh approched to the sted⁶
 Whereas those Mermayds dwelt : It was a still
 And calmy bay, on th' one side sheltered

¹ *Seemely, comely.*⁴ *Stayed, constant.*² *Ill apayd, distressed.*⁵ *Bayt, rest.*³ *Courage, heart, mind.*⁶ *Sted, place.*

With the brode shadow of an hoarie hill ;
 On th' other side an high rocke toured still,
 That twixt them both a pleasaunt port they made,
 And did like an halfe theatre fulfill :
 There those five Sisters had continuall trade,¹
 And usd to bath themselves in that deceitfull shade.

XXXI.

They were faire Ladies, till they fondly striv'd
 With th' Heliconian Maides for maystery ;
 Of whom they over-comen were depriv'd
 Of their proud beautie, and th' one moyity
 Transform'd to fish for their bold surquedry² ;
 But th' upper halfe their hew retayned still,
 And their sweet skill in wonted melody ;
 Which ever after they abusd to ill,
 T^o allure weake travellers, whom gotten they did kill.

XXXII.

So now to Guyon, as he passed by,
 Their pleasaunt tunes they sweetly thus applyde ;
 " O thou fayre sonne of gentle Faëry,
 That art in mightie armes most magnifyde
 Above all Knights that ever batteill tryde,
 O turne thy rudder hetherward awhile :

¹ *Trade*, occupation, employment. ² *Surquedry*, insolence.

XXX. 7. — *An halfe theatre fulfill.*] ' And did enclose the whole, like an amphitheatre.'

XXXI. 1. — *Faire Ladies.*] These are the sirens of mythology, who were, however, three in number. Spenser makes them five, to correspond with the five senses. They were also shaped partly like women, and partly like birds, and not like mermaids, as is here represented. Some say that they contended with the muses in singing, who vanquished them and deprived them of their wings; but there is nothing in mythology about the "sea-change" which Spenser gives to them.

Here may thy storme-bett vessell safely ryde ;
 This is the Port of rest from troublous toyle,
 The wordes sweet In ¹ from paine and wearisome turnoyle.”

XXXIII.

With that the rolling sea, resounding soft,
 In his big base them fitly answered ;
 And on the rocke the waves breaking aloft
 A solemne meane ² unto them measured ;
 The whiles sweet zephyrus lowd whisteled
 His treble, a straunge kinde of harmony ;
 Which Guyons senses softly ticeled,
 That he the Boteman bad row easily,
 And let him heare some part of their rare melody.

XXXIV.

But him the Palmer from that vanity
 With temperate advice discourseled,
 That they it past, and shortly gan descry
 The land to which their course they levelled ³ ;
 When suddainly a grosse fog over spred
 With his dull vapour all that desert has,
 And heavens chearefull face enveloped,
 That all things one, and one as nothing was,
 And this great universe seemd one confused mas.

XXXV.

Thereat they greatly were dismayd, ne wist ⁴
 How to direct theyr way in darkenes wide,
 But feard to wander in that wastefull mist,
 For tomling into mischiefes unespyde :
 Worse is the daunger hidden then ⁵ descride.

¹ In, resting-place. ² Meane, tenor. ³ Levelled, aimed.

⁴ Wist, knew.

⁵ Then, than.

XXXV. 4. — *For tomling.*] Lest they should tumble or fall.

Suddeinly an innumerable flight
 Of harmefull fowles about them fluttering cride,
 And with their wicked wings them ofte did smight,
 And sore annoyed, groping in that griesly night.

XXXVI.

Even all the nation of unfortunate
 And fatall birds about them flocked were,
 Such as by nature men abhorre and hate ;
 The ill-faste¹ owle, deaths dreadfull messengere ;
 The hoars night-raven, trump of dolefull dreere² ;
 The lether-winged batt, dayes enemy ;
 The ruefull strich,³ still waiting on the bere⁴ ;
 The whistler shrill, that whoso heares doth dy ;
 The hellish harpyes, prophets of sad destiny :

XXXVII.

All those, and all that els does horror breed,
 About them flew, and fild their sayles with feare ;
 Yet stayd they not, but forward did proceed,
 Whiles th' one did row, and th' other stifly⁵ steare,
 Till that at last the weather gan to cleare,
 And the faire land itselfe did playnly show.
 Said then the Palmer ; " Lo ! where does appeare
 The sacred⁶ soile where all our perills grow !
 Therefore, Sir Knight, your ready arms about you throw."

XXXVIII.

He hearkned, and his armes about him tooke,
 The whiles the nimble bote so well her sped,
 That with her crooked keele the land she strooke :

¹ *Ill-faste*, ill-faced.⁴ *Bere*, bier.² *Dreere*, sorrow.⁵ *Stifly*, resolutely.³ *Strich*, the screech-owl.⁶ *Sacred*, cursed, or, perhaps, enchanted.

XXXVII. 2. — *Fild their sayles with feare.*] A bold metaphor, like Milton's

" Built in th' eclipse and rigged with curses dark."

Then forth the noble Guyon sallied,
 And his sage Palmer that him governed ;
 But th' other by his bote behind did stay.
 They marched fayrly forth, of nought ydred,¹
 Both firmly armd for every hard assay,
 With constancy and care, gainst daunger and dismay.

XXXIX.

Ere long they heard an hideous bellowing
 Of many beasts, that roard outrageously,
 As if that hungers poynt or Venus sting
 Had them enraged with fell surquedry² ;
 Yet nought they feard, but past on hardily,
 Untill they came in vew of those wilde beasts,
 Who all attonce, gaping full greedily,
 And rearing fercely their upstaring³ crests,
 Ran towards to deuoure those unexpected guests.

XL.

But, soone as they approcht with deadly threat,
 The Palmer over them his staffe upheld,
 His mighty staffe, that could all charmes defeat :
 Eftesoones⁴ their stubborne corages were queld,
 And high aduanced crests downe meekely feld⁵ ;
 Instead of fraying⁶ they themselves did feare,
 And trembled, as them passing they beheld :

¹ *Ydred*, afraid.⁴ *Eftesoones*, instantly.² *Surquedry*, insolence.⁵ *Feld*, were felled,³ *Upstaring*, high-advanced.⁶ *Fraying*, terrifying.

XL. 2. — *His staffe upheld.*] In the fifteenth book of the Jerusalem Delivered, (from which Spenser has drawn some of the incidents and descriptions of this canto,) the knights Charles and Ubaldo encounter various wild beasts on their way to the Gardens of Armida, which are rendered harmless by holding a charmed rod over them. The virtues of this staff express that power over the inferior appetites, which springs from habits of temperance and self-control.

Such wondrous powre did in that staffe appeare,
All monsters to subdew to him that did it beare.

XLI.

Of that same wood it fram'd was cunningly,
Of which Caducęus whilome¹ was made,
Caducęus, the rod of Mercury,
With which he wons the Stygian realmes invade
Through ghastly horror and eternall shade ;
Th' infernall feends with it he can asswage,
And Orcus tame, whome nothing can persuade,
And rule the Furyes when they most doe rage :
Such vertue in his staffe had eke this Palmer sage.

XLII.

Thence passing forth, they shortly doe arryve
Whereas the Bowre of Blisse was situate ;
A place pickt out by choyce of best alyve,
That natures worke by art can imitate :
In which whatever in this worldly state
Is sweete and pleasing unto living sense,
Or that may dayntest² fantasy aggrate,³
Was poured forth with plentifull dispence,⁴
And made there to abound with lavish affluence.

XLIII.

Goodly it was enclosed rownd about,
As well their entred gwestes to keep within,
As those unruly beasts to hold without ;
Yet was the fence thereof but weake and thin ;
Nought feard their force that fortilage⁵ to win,

¹ *Whilome*, formerly.

⁴ *Dispence*, expense.

² *Dayntest*, daintiest, most delicate.

⁵ *Fortilage*, fortress.

³ *Aggrate*, delight.

XLIII. 5.—*Nought feard, &c.*] Their forces did not apprehend danger from the assault of any power, except the power of wisdom and the might of temperance.

But Wisedomes powre, and Temperaunces might,
 By which the mightiest things efforced bin¹:
 And eke the gate was wrought of substaunce light,
 Rather for pleasure then for battery or fight.

XLIV.

Yt framed was of precious yvory,
 That seemd a worke of admirable witt;
 And therein all the famous history
 Of Iason and Medæa was ywritt;
 Her mighty charmes, her furious loving fitt;
 His goodly conquest of the golden fleece,
 His falsed fayth, and love too lightly flitt²;
 The wondred³ Argo, which in venturous peece
 First through the Euxine seas bore all the flowr of Greece.

XLV.

Ye might have seene the frothy billowes fry⁴
 Under the ship as thorough them she went,
 That seemd the waves were into yvory,
 Or yvory into the waves were sent;
 And otherwhere⁵ the snowy substaunce sprent⁶
 With vermell,⁷ like the boyes blood therein shed,

¹ *Bin*, been, are.⁵ *Otherwhere*, in another place.² *Flitt*, departed.⁶ *Sprent*, sprinkled.³ *Wondred*, wondered at or admired.⁷ *Vermell*, vermilion.⁴ *Fry*, foam.

XLIV. 1. — *Yt framed was, &c.*] Tasso describes the gates of the palace of Armida as being of silver, on which were wrought the stories of Hercules and Iole, and of Antony and Cleopatra. — JER. DEL., canto XVI.

XLIV. 8. — *In venturous peece.*] *Peece* was formerly used to designate a castle, or any large structure. Hence it is here applied to a ship.

XLV. 6. — *The boyes blood.*] Medea put to death the children she had by Jason, and presented Creusa, the destined wife of Jason, with an enchanted garment, which consumed her to ashes.

A piteous spectacle did represent ;
 And otherwhiles with gold besprinkeled
 Yt seemed th' enchanted flame, which did Crēusa wed.

XLVI.

All this and more might in that goodly gate
 Be red, that ever open stood to all
 Which thether came : but in the porch there sate
 A comely personage of stature tall,
 And semblaunce pleasing, more then naturall,
 That travelers to him seemd to entize ;
 His looser garment to the ground did fall,
 And flew about his heeles in wanton wize,
 Not fitt for speedy pace or manly exercise.

XLVII.

They in that place him Genius did call :
 Not that celestiall Powre, to whom the care
 Of life, and generation of all
 That lives, pertaines in charge particulare,
 Who wondrous things concerning our welfare,
 And straunge phantomes, doth lett us ofte foresee,
 And ofte of secret ills bids us beware :
 That is our Selve, whom though we do not see,
 Yet each doth in himselfe it well perceive to bee :

XLVIII.

Therefore a god him sage Antiquity
 Did wisely make, and good Agdistes call :

XLVII. 1.— *Genius.*] This personage, called *Genius*, represents what is called the genius of the place, and is here a loose reveler. The "celestiall Powre" is that genius or spirit which the ancients supposed was assigned to each individual, to watch over him, of which the "demon" of Socrates is an example.

XLVII. 8.— *Our Selve.*] Our soul.

XLVIII. 2.— *Agdistes.*] *Agdistes* was a name given by the Greeks to the genius or demon. He was a being of a double sex, born, some

But this same was to that quite contrary,
 The foe of life, that good envyes to all,
 That secretly doth us procure to fall
 Through guilefull semblants,¹ which he makes us see:
 He of this Gardin had the governall,²
 And Pleasures Porter was devizd to bee,
 Holding a staffe in hand for more formalitee.

XLIX.

With diverse flowres he daintily was deckt,
 And strowed rownd about; and by his side
 A mighty mazer³ bowle of wine was sett,
 As if it had to him bene sacrificide;
 Wherewith all new-come guests he gratyfyde:
 So did he eke Sir Guyon passing by;
 But he his ydle curtesie defide,
 And overthrew his bowle disdainfully,
 And broke his staffe, with which he charmed semblants sly.

L.

Thus being entred, they behold arownd
 A large and spacious plaine, on every side
 Strowed with pleasauns⁴; whose fayre grassy grownd
 Mantled with greene, and goodly beautifide
 With all the ornaments of Floraes pride,
 Wherewith her mother Art, as halfe in scorne
 Of niggard Nature, like a pompous bride

¹ *Semblants*, phantoms, appearances. ² *Governall*, government.

³ *Mazer*, made of maple. ⁴ *Pleassuns*, objects inspiring pleasure.

say of Jupiter and Terra, and others, of Jupiter and a woman into whom the Rock Agdus had been changed, which rock supplied the fragments which Deucalion and Pyrrha used in re-peopling the world.

XLIX. 9. — *He charmed semblants sly.*] 'He conjured up thin phantoms.'

Did decke her, and too lavishly adorne,
When forth from virgin bowre she comes in th' early morne.

LI.

Thereto¹ the heavens alwayes joviall
Lookte on them lovely, still in stedfast state,
Ne suffred storme nor frost on them to fall,
Their tender buds or leaves to violate ;
Nor scorching heat, nor cold intemperate,
T' afflict the creatures which therein did dwell ;
But the milde ayre with season moderate
Gently attempted, and disposd so well,
That still it breathed forth sweet spirit² and holesom smell :

LII.

More sweet and holesome then the pleasaunt hill
Of Rhodope, on which the nimphe, that bore
A gyaunt babe, herselfe for grieffe did kill ;
Or the Thessalian Tempe, where of yore
Fayre Daphne Phœbus hart with love did gore ;
Or Ida, where the gods lov'd to repayre,
Whenever they their heavenly bowres forlore³ ;
Or sweet Parnasse, the haunt of Muses fayre ;
Or Eden selfe, if ought with Eden mote compayre.

LIII.

Much wondred Guyon at the fayre aspect
Of that sweet place, yet suffred no delight

¹ *Thereto*, also. ² *Spirit*, breath. ³ *Forlore*, forsook.

LII. 2. — *Of Rhodope.*] Rhodope was the wife of Hemus, king of Thrace, and was changed into the mountain of the same name. She had by Neptune the giant Athos, afterwards changed into a mountain of the same name. I presume that Rhodope is the 'nimphe' mentioned in the text, but I can find no account of her killing herself for grief.

To sincke into his sence, nor mind affect;
 But passed forth, and lookt still forward right,
 Brydling his will and maystering¹ his might :
 Till that he came unto another gate :
 No gate, but like one, being goodly dight²
 With bowes and braunches, which did broad dilate
 Their clasping armes in wanton wreathings intricate :

LIV.

So fashioned a porch with rare device,
 Archt over head with an embracing vine,
 Whose bounces hanging downe seemd to entice
 All passers-by to taste their lushious wine,
 And did themselves into their hands incline,
 As freely offering to be gathered ;
 Some deepe empurpled as the hyacine,³
 Some as the rubine⁴ laughing sweetely red,
 Some like faire emeraudes,⁵ not yet well ripened :

LV.

And them amongst some were of burnisht gold,
 So made by art to beautify the rest,
 Which did themselves emongst the leaves enfold,
 As lurking from the vew of covetous guest,
 That the weake boughes with so rich load opprest
 Did bow adowne as overburdened.
 Under that porch a comely Dame did rest
 Clad in fayre weedes⁶ but fowle disordered,
 And garments loose that seemd unmeet for womanhed :

LVI.

In her left hand a cup of gold she held,
 And with her right the riper fruit did reach,

¹ *Maystering*, controlling.⁴ *Rubine*, ruby.² *Dight*, adorned.⁵ *Emeraudes*, emeralds.³ *Hyacins*, hyacinth, or jacinth.⁶ *Weedes*, clothes.

Whose sappy liquor, that with fulnesse sweld,
 Into her cup she scruzd¹ with daintie breach
 Of her fine fingers, without fowle empeach,²
 That so faire winepresse made the wine more sweet :
 Thereof she usd to give to drinke to each,
 Whom passing by she happened to meet :
 It was her guise all straungers goodly so to greet.

LVII.

So she to Guyon offred it to tast ;
 Who, taking it out of her tender hond,
 The cup to ground did violently cast,
 That all in peeces it was broken fond,³
 And with the liquor stained all the lond :
 Whereat Excesse exceedinly was wroth,
 Yet no'te⁴ the same amend, ne yet withstond,
 But suffered him to passe, all⁵ were she loth ;
 Who, nought regarding her displeasure, forward goth.

LVIII.

There the most daintie paradise on ground
 Itselfe doth offer to his sober eye,
 In which all pleasures plenteously abownd,
 And none does others happinesse envye ;
 The painted flowres ; the trees upshooting hye ;
 The dales for shade ; the hilles for breathing space ;
 The trembling groves ; the christall running by ;

¹ *Scruzd*, squeezed.² *Empeach*, injury, or disfigurement.³ *Fond*, found.⁴ *No'te*, could not.⁵ *All*, although.

LVII. 5. — *Without fowle empeach.*] She pressed the fruit so delicately with her fair fingers that there was nothing distasteful or offensive in the sight.

LVIII. 1. — *There the most, &c.*] Compare Tasso, *Jer. Del.*, canto XVI. stanzas IX. X.

And, that which all faire workes doth most aggrace,¹
The art, which all that wrought, appeared in no place.

LIX.

One would have thought, (so cunningly the rude
And scorned partes were mingled with the fine,)
That Nature had for wantonnesse ensude²
Art, and that Art at Nature did repine ;
So striving each th' other to undermine,
Each did the others worke more beautify ;
So diff'ring both in willes agreed in fine³ :
So all agreed, through sweete diversity,
This Gardin to adorne with all variety.

LX.

And in the midst of all a fountaine stood,
Of richest substance that on earth might bee,
So pure and shiny that the silver flood
Through every channell running one might see ;
Most goodly it with curious ymageree
Was over-wrought, and shapes of naked boyes,
Of which some seemd with lively iollitee
To fly about playing their wanton toyes,⁴
Whylest others did themselves embay⁵ in liquid ioyes.

LXI.

And over all of purest gold was spred
A trayle of yvie in his native hew ;
For the rich metall was so coloured,
That wight, who did not well avis'd it vew,

¹ *Aggrace*, give grace to.⁴ *Toyes*, sports.² *Ensude*, followed, or imitated.⁵ *Embay*, baths.³ *In fine*, in the end.

LXI. 4. — *That wight, &c.*] 'That any one who did not view it with attention.'

Would surely deeme it to bee yvie trew :
 Low his lascivious armes adown did creepe,
 That themselves dipping in the silver dew
 Their fleecy flowres they fearefully did steepe,
 Which drops of christall seemd for wantones to weep.

LXII.

Infinitt streames continually did well¹
 Out of this fountaine, sweet and faire to see,
 The which into an ample laver fell,
 And shortly grew to so great quantitie,
 That like a litle lake it seemd to bee ;
 Whose depth exceeded not three cubits hight,
 That through the waves one might the bottom see,
 All pav'd beneath with jasper shining bright,
 That seemd the fountaine in that sea did sayle upright.

LXIII.

And all the margent round about was sett
 With shady laurell trees, thence to defend²
 The sunny beames which on the billowes bett,
 And those which therein bathed mote offend.
 As Guyon hapned by the same to wend,³
 Two naked Damzelles he therein espyde,
 Which therein bathing seemed to contend
 And wrestle wantonly, ne car'd to hyde
 Their dainty partes from vew of any which them eyd.

LXIV.

Sometimes the one would lift the other quight
 Above the waters, and then downe againe

¹ *Well*, flow.² *Defend*, keep off.³ *Wend*, go.

LXIII. 6. — *Two naked Damzelles, &c.*] The incident of the damzels bathing in the fountain is taken from Tasso, *Jer. Del.*, canto XV. Many of the stanzas are closely imitated from the Italian.

Her plong, as over-maystered by might,
 Where both awhile would covered remaine,
 And each the other from to rise restraine;
 The whiles their snowy limbes, as through a vele,
 So through the christall waves appeared plaine:
 Then suddainly both would themselves unhele,¹
 And th' amorous sweet spoiles to greedy eyes revele.

LXV.

As that faire starre, the messenger of morne,
 His dewy face out of the sea doth reare:
 Or as the Cyprian goddessse, newly borne
 Of th' ocean's fruitfull froth, did first appeare:
 Such seemed they, and so their yellow heare
 Christalline humor dropped downe apace.
 Whom such when Guyon saw, he drew him neare,
 And somewhat gan relent² his earnest pace;
 His stubborne brest gan secret pleasance to embrace.

LXVI.

The wanton Maidens him espying, stood
 Gazing awhile at his unwonted guise;
 Then th' one herselfe low ducked in the flood,
 Abasht that her a straunger did avise³:
 But th' other rather higher did arise,
 And her two lilly paps aloft displayd,
 And all, that might his melting hart entyse

¹ *Unhels*, expose. ² *Relent*, slacken. ³ *Avise*, perceive.

LXV. 1. — *As that faire starre, &c.*]

“As when the morning star escaped and fled
 From greedy waves with dewy beams upflies;
 Or as the queen of love, new-born and bred
 Of th' ocean's fruitfull froth did first arise.”

FAIRFAX'S TASSO, canto XV. stanza LX.

To her delights, she unto him bewrayd ;
The rest, hidd underneath, him more desirous made.

LXVII.

With that the other likewise up arose,
And her faire lockes, which formerly were bownd
Up in one knott, she low adowne did lose,
Which flowing long and thick her cloth'd around,
And th' yvorie in golden mantle gownd¹ :
So that faire spectacle from him was reft,²
Yet that which reft² it no lesse faire was fownd :
So hidd in lockes and waves from lookers theft,
Nought but her lovely face she for his looking left.

LXVIII.

Withall she laughed, and she blusht withall,
That blushing to her laughter gave more grace,
And laughter to her blushing, as did fall.³
Now when they spyde the Knight to slacke his pace
Them to behold, and in his sparkling face
The secrete signes of kindled lust appeare,
Their wanton merriments they did encrease,
And to him beckned to approach more neare,
And shewd him many sights that corage⁴ cold could reare⁵ :

LXIX.

On which when gazing him the Palmer saw,
He much rebukt those wandring eyes of his,
And counseld well him forward thence did draw.
Now are they come nigh to the Bowre of Blis,
Of her fond favorites so nam'd amis ;
When thus the Palmer ; " Now, Sir, well advise⁶ ;

¹ *Gownd*, enclosed.⁴ *Corage*, heart, mind.² *Reft*, taken away.⁵ *Reare*, raise, exhilarate.³ *Fall*, befall, or happen.⁶ *Advise*, reflect.

For here the end of all our travaill is :
 Here wones¹ Acrasia, whom we must surprize,
 Els she will slip away, and all our drift² despise.”

LXX.

Eftsoones³ they heard a most melodious sound,
 Of all that mote delight a daintie eare,
 Such as attonce might not on living ground,
 Save in this paradise, be heard elsewhere :
 Right hard it was for wight which did it heare,
 To read⁴ what manner musicke that mote bee ;
 For all that pleasing is to living eare
 Was there consorted in one harmonie ;
 Birdes, voices, instruments, windes, waters, all agree :

LXXI.

The ioyous birdes, shrouded in chearefull shade,
 Their notes unto the voice attempted sweet ;
 Th' angelicall soft trembling voyces made
 To th' instruments divine responce meet ;
 The silver-sounding instruments did meet
 With the base murmure of the waters fall ;
 The waters fall with difference discreet,
 Now soft, now loud, unto the wind did call ;
 The gentle warbling wind low answered to all.

LXXII.

There, whence that musick seemed heard to bee,
 Was the faire Witch herselfe now solacing

¹ *Wones*, dwells.² *Eftsoones*, immediately.³ *Drift*, aim, purpose.⁴ *Read*, explain.

LXX. 1. — *Eftsoones, &c.*] Nothing can be conceived of more admirable than the rich and elaborate harmony of this and the succeeding stanza. The same thought is contained in a stanza of Tasso; but Spenser has greatly expanded and embellished it from his own affluent fancy.

With a new lover, whom, through sorceree
 And witchcraft, she from farre did tether bring :
 There she had him now laid a slombering
 In secrete shade after long wanton ioyes ;
 Whilst round about them pleasauntly did sing
 Many faire ladies and lascivious boyes,
 That ever mixt their song with light licentious toyes.¹

LXXIII.

And all that while right over him she hong
 With her false² eyes fast fixed in his sight,
 As seeking medicine whence she was stong,
 Or greedily depasturing delight ;
 And oft inclining downe with kisses light,
 For feare of waking him, his lips bedewd,
 And through his humid eyes did sucke his spright,
 Quite molten into lust and pleasure lewd ;
 Wherewith she sighed soft, as if his case she rew.³

LXXIV.

The whiles some one did chaunt this lovely lay ;
*Ah ! see, whoso fayre thing doest faine to see,*⁴

¹ *Toyes*, sport.² *Rewd*, pitied.³ *Falss*, deceiving, or betraying.⁴ *Faine to see*, gladly see.

LXXIII. 2. — *Fixed in his sight.*] ‘Fixed upon his eyes.’

LXXIV. 1. — *The whiles, &c.*] The song which follows is translated from Tasso, Jer. Del., canto XVI. stanzas XIV. XV., where it is sung by a bird in a human voice. I have subjoined the two stanzas in the beautiful version of Fairfax, that the reader may compare them.

“The gently-budding rose, quoth she, behold,
 That first scant peeping forth with virgin beams,
 Half ope, half shut, her beauties doth unfold
 In their clear Leaves, and less seen, fairer seems ;
 And after spreads them forth more broad and bold,
 Then languisheth and dies in last extremes ;
 Nor seems the same, that decked bed and bower
 Of many a lady, late, and paramour.

*In springing flowre the image of thy day!
 Ah! see the virgin rose, how sweetly she
 Doth first peepe foorth with bashfull modestee,
 That fairer seemes the lesse ye see her may!
 Lo! see soone after how more bold and free
 Her bared bosome she doth broad display;
 Lo! see soone after how she fades and falls away!*

LXXV.

*So passeth, in the passing of a day,
 Of mortall life the lease, the bud, the flowre;
 Ne more doth flourish after first decay,
 That¹ earst² was sought to deck both bed and bowre
 Of many a lady, and many a paramoure!
 Gather therefore the rose whilst yet is prime,
 For soone comes age that will her pride deflowre:
 Gather the rose of love whilst yet is time,
 Whilst loving thou mayst loved be with equall crime.³*

LXXVI.

He ceast; and then gan all the quire of birdes
 Their diverse notes t' attune unto his lay,
 As in approvaunce⁴ of his pleasing wordes.

¹ That, that which.² With equall crime, to an equal degree.³ Earst, before.⁴ Approvaunce, approval.

“So, in the passing of a day, doth pass
 The bud and blossom of the life of man,
 Nor ere doth flourish more, but like the grass
 Cut down, becometh withered, pale and wan;
 O gather then the rose while time thou hast,
 Short is the day, done when it scant began;
 Gather the rose of love, while yet thou may'st,
 Loving, be loved; embracing, be embraced.”

LXXIV. 3. — *The image of thy day.*] ‘The emblem of thy life.’LXXV. 6. — *Whilst yet is prime.*] ‘While it is yet early.’

The constant¹ Payre heard all that he did say,
 Yet swarved not, but kept their forward way
 Through many covert groves and thickets close,
 In which they creeping did at last display²
 That wanton Lady with her lover lose,
 Whose sleepeie head she in her lap did soft dispose.

LXXVII.

Upon a bed of roses she was layd,
 As faint through heat, or dight³ to pleasant sin;
 And was arayd, or rather disarayd,
 All in a vele of silke and silver thin,
 That hid no whit her alablaster skin,
 But rather shewd more white, if more might bee:
 More subtile⁴ web Arachne cannot spin;
 Nor the fine nets, which oft we woven see
 Of scorched deaw, do not in th' ayre more lightly flee.

LXXVIII.

Her snowy brest was bare to ready spoyle
 Of hungry eies, which n'ote⁵ therewith be filld;
 And yet through languour of her late sweet toyle,
 Few drops, more cleare then nectar, forth distild,
 That like pure orient perles adowne it trild⁶;
 And her faire eyes, sweet smyling in delight,
 Moystened their fierie beames, with which she thrild⁷

¹ *Constant*, resolute.⁵ *N'ote*, could not.² *Display*, discover.⁶ *Trild*, flowed.³ *Dight*, prepared.⁷ *Thrild*, pierced.⁴ *Subtile*, thin.

LXXVI. 8.—*Fine nets*.] This alludes to the gossamer, which, when laden with dew-drops, falls to the ground, and is then observed from its sparkling in the sun. When it floats in the air, it is dry. Hence Spenser fancifully represents it as consisting of scorched or parched dew.

Fraille harts, yet quenched not ; like starry light, [bright.
Which, sparckling on the silent waves, does seeme more

LXXIX.

The young man, sleeping by her, seemd to be
Some goodly swayne of honorable place¹ ;
That certes² it great pittie was to see
Him his nobility so fowle deface :
A sweet regard and amiable grace,
Mixed with manly sternesse, did appeare,
Yet sleeping, in his well-proportiond face ;
And on his tender lips the downy heare
Did now but freshly spring, and silken blossoms beare.

LXXX.

His warlike armes, the ydle instruments
Of sleeping praise, were hong upon a tree ;
And his brave shield, full of old monuments,³
Was fowly ras't,⁴ that none the signes might see ;
Ne for them ne for honour cared hee,
Ne ought that did to his advauncement tend ;
But in lewd loves, and wastfull luxuree,
His dayes, his goods, his bodie he did spend :
O horrible enchantment, that him so did blend⁵ !

LXXXI.

The noble Elfe and carefull Palmer drew
So nigh them, minding nought but lustfull game,
That suddaine forth they on them rusht, and threw
A subtile net, which only for that same
The skilfull Palmer formally⁶ did frame :

¹ *Place*, rank.⁴ *Ras't*, erased.² *Certes*, certainly.⁵ *Blend*, blind.³ *Moniments*, marks, or memorials.⁶ *Formally*, expressly.LXXXI. 4.— *For that same.*] 'For that purpose.'

So held them under fast ; the whiles the rest
 Fled all away for feare of fowler shame.
 The faire Enchauntresse, so unwares opprest,
 Tryde all her arts and all her sleights thence out to wrest¹ ;

LXXXII.

And eke her lover strove ; but all in vaine :
 For that same net so cunningly was wound,
 That neither guile nor force might it distraine.¹
 They tooke them both, and both them strongly bound
 In captive bandes, which there they readie found :
 But her in chaines of adamant he tyde ;
 For nothing else might keepe her safe and sound :
 But Verdant (so he hight³) he soone untyde,
 And counsell sage in steed thereof to him applyde.

LXXXIII.

But all those pleasaunt bowres, and pallace brave,⁴
 Guyon broke downe with rigour pittlesse :
 Ne ought their goodly workmanship might save
 Them from the tempest of his wrathfulnesse,
 But that their blisse he turn'd to balefulnesse,
 Their groves he feld ; their gardins did deface ;
 Their arbers spoyle ; their cabinets⁵ suppressse ;
 Their banket-houses burne ; their buildings race⁶ ;
 And, of the fayrest late, now made the fowlest place.

LXXXIV.

Then led they her away, and eke that Knight
 They with them led, both sorrowfull and sad :
 The way they came, the same retourn'd they right,
 Till they arrived where they lately had

¹ *Wrest*, escape.² *Distraine*, rend.³ *Hight*, was called.⁴ *Brave*, fair, beautiful.⁵ *Cabinets*, cottages.⁶ *Race*, raze.

Charm'd those wild beasts that rag'd with furie mad ;
 Which, now awaking, fierce at them gan fly,
 As in their Mistresse reskew, whom they lad¹ ;
 But them the Palmer soone did pacify. [did ly.
 Then Guyon askt, what meant those beastes which there

LXXXV.

Sayd he ; " These seeming beasts are men in deed,
 Whom this Enchauntresse hath transformed thus ;
 Whylome² her lovers, which her lustes did feed,
 Now turned into figures hideous,
 According to their mindes like monstrous." "
 " Sad end," quoth he, " of life intemperate,
 And mournfull meed of ioyes delicious !
 But, Palmer, if it mote thee so aggrate,³
 Let them returned be unto their former state."

LXXXVI.

Streightway he with his vertuous staffe them strooke,
 And streight of beastes they comely men became ;
 Yet being men they did unmanly looke,
 And stared ghastly ; some for inward shame,
 And some for wrath to see their captive Dame :
 But one above the rest in speciall⁴
 That had an hog beene late, hight⁵ Grylle by name,
 Repnyed greatly, and did him miscall⁶
 That had from hoggish forme him brought to naturall.

¹ *Lad*, led.² *Whylome*, formerly.³ *Aggrate*, please.⁴ *In speciall*, especially.⁵ *Hight*, called.⁶ *Miscall*, abuse.

LXXXVI. 7. — *Hight Grylle*.] In a dialogue by Plutarch, Gryllus, a companion of Ulysses, who had been changed into a swine by Circe, holds a conversation with him, and refuses to be restored to his human shape.

LXXXVII.

Saide Guyon ; “ See the mind of beastly man,
That hath so soone forgot the excellence
Of his creation, when he life began,
That now he chooseth with vile difference
To be a beast, and lacke intelligence ! ”
To whom the Palmer thus ; “ The donghill kinde
Delightes in filth and fowle incontinence :
Let Gryll be Gryll, and have his hoggish minde ;
But let us hence depart whilest wether serves and winde.”

THE THIRDE BOOKE
OF
THE FAERIE QUEENE

CONTAYNING

THE LEGEND OF BRITOMARTIS, OR OF CHASTITY.

I.

IT falls me here to write of Chastity,
That fayrest vertue, far above the rest :
For which what needes me fetch from Faëry
Forreine ensamples it to have exprest ?
Sith ¹ it is shrined in my Soveraines brest,
And formd so lively in each perfect part,
That to all Ladies, which have it profest,
Need but behold the pourtraict of her hart ;
If pourtrayd it might bee by any living art :

II.

But living art may not least part expresse,
Nor life-resembling pencill it can paynt :
All ² were it Zeuxis or Praxiteles,
His dædale ³ hand would faile and greatly faynt,

¹ *Sith*, since. ² *All*, although. ³ *Dædale*, skilful.

I. 1. — *It falls me here to write of Chastity.*] The subject of this book enables the poet, in his introduction, to pay some delicate compliments to the "Virgin Queen," to whom it is addressed.

And her perfections with his error taynt :
 Ne poets witt, that passeth painter farre
 In picturing the parts of beauty daynt,¹
 So hard a workemanship adventure darre,
 For fear through want of words her excellence to marre.

III.

How then shall I, apprentice of the skill
 That whilome² in divinest wits did rayne,
 Presume so high to stretch mine humble quill ?
 Yet now my luckelesse lott doth me constraayne
 Hereto perforce : But, O dredd Soverayne,
 Thus far forth pardon, sith³ that choicest witt
 Cannot your glorious pourtraict figure playne,
 That I in colourd showes may shadow itt,
 And antique praises unto present persons fitt.

IV.

But if in living colours, and right hew,
 Thyselſe thou covet to see pictured,
 Who can it doe more lively, or more trew,
 Then⁴ that sweete verse, with nectar sprinckled,
 In which a gracious servaunt pictured
 His Cynthia, his heavens fayrest light ?
 That with his melting sweetnes ravished,
 And with the wonder of her beamës bright,
 My senses lulled are in slomber of delight.

¹ *Daynt*, dainty.² *Sith*, since.³ *Whilome*, formerly.⁴ *Then*, than.

III. 4. — *Luckelesse lot.*] Luckless, because he apprehends he shall not do justice to the subject.

IV. 5. — *A gracious servaunt.*] This was Sir Walter Raleigh, who wrote a poem eulogizing Queen Elizabeth, called "Cynthia."

V.

But let that same delitious poet lend
A little leave unto a rusticke Muse
To sing his Mistresse prayse ; and let him mend,
If ought amis her liking may abuse :
Ne let his fayrest Cynthia refuse
In mirrours more then ¹ one herselfe to see ;
But either Gloriana let her chuse,
Or in Belphebe fashioned to bee ;
In th' one her rule, in th' other her rare chastitce.

¹ *Then, than.*

CANTO I.

Guyon encountreth Britomart:
 Fayre Florimell is chaced:
 Duessaes traines and Malecastaes
 champions are defaced.

I.

THE famous Briton Prince and Faery Knight,
 After long ways and perilous paines endur'd,
 Having their weary limbes to perfect plight
 Restord, and sory wounds right well recur'd,
 Of the faire Alma greatly were procur'd¹
 To make there lenger² sojourne and abode;
 But, when thereto they might not be allur'd
 From seeking praise and deeds of armes abroad,
 They courteous congé³ tooke, and forth together yode.⁴

II.

But the captiv'd Acrasia he sent,
 Because of travaill long, a nigher way,

¹ *Procur'd*, entreated.

³ *Congé*, farewell.

² *Lenger*, longer.

⁴ *Yode*, went.

Arg. 3.—*Malecastaes*.] The meaning of the word *Malecasta* (unchaste) expresses the vice which she typifies.

I. 1.—*The famous Briton Prince*.] The narrative is resumed from the second book. Prince Arthur remained in the house of Alma till the wounds he had received in his encounter with Maleger were healed. Sir Guyon, after destroying the Bower of Bliss, returned to the house of Alma, from which he and Prince Arthur now set forth. Sir Guyon has provided himself with a new steed, in place of his own, which had been stolen, but we are not informed how.

With a strong gard, all reskew to prevent,
 And her to Faery Court safe to convey ;
 That her for witnes of his hard assay
 Unto his Faery Queene he might present :
 But he himselfe betooke another way,
 To make more triall of his hardiment,¹
 And seek adventures, as he with Prince Arthure went.

III.

Long so they traueiled through wastefull wayes,
 Where daungers dwelt, and perils most did wonne,²
 To hunt for glory and renowned prayse :
 Full many countreyes they did overronne,
 From the uprising to the setting sunne,
 And many hard adventures did atchieve ;
 Of all the which they honour ever wonne,
 Seeking the weake oppressed to relieve,
 And to recover right for such as wrong did grieve.

IV.

At last, as through an open plaine they yode,³
 They spide a Knight that towards pricked fayre ;
 And him beside an aged Squire there rode,
 That seemd to couch⁴ under his shield three-square,
 As if that age badd him that burden spare,
 And yield it those that stouter could it wield :
 He, them espying, gan himselfe prepare,
 And on his arme addresse his goodly shield
 That bore a lion passant in a golden field.

V.

Which seeing good Sir Guyon deare besought
 The Prince, of grace, to let him ronne that turne.

¹ *Hardiment* courage.² *Yode*, went.³ *Wonne*, dwell.⁴ *Couch*, bend.

He graunted: then the Faery quickly raught¹
 His poynant² speare, and sharply gan to spurne³
 His fomy steed, whose fiery feete did burne
 The valiant gras as he thereon did tread;
 Ne did the other backe his foote returne,
 But fiercely forward came withouten dread,
 And bent his dreadful speare against the others head.

VI.

They beene ymett, and both theyr points arriv'd;
 But Guyon drove so furious and fell,
 That seemd both shield and plate it would have riv'd;
 Nathelesse it bore his foe not from his sell,⁴
 But made him stagger, as⁵ he were not well:
 But Guyon selfe, ere well he was aware,
 Nigh a speares length behind his crouper fell;
 Yet in his fall so well himselfe he bare,
 That mischievous mischaunce his life and limbs did spare.

VII.

Great shame and sorrow of that fall he tooke;
 For never yet, sith⁶ warlike armes he bore
 And shivering speare in bloody field first shooke,
 He fownd himselfe dishonored so sore.
 Ah! gentlest Knight, that ever armor bore,

¹ *Raught*, reached.⁴ *Sell*, saddle.² *Poynant*, piercing, sharp.⁵ *As*, as if.³ *Spurne*, spur.⁶ *Sith*, since.

VI. 1. — *They beene ymett, &c.*] They met, and each one's spear struck, or pierced his antagonist.

VI. 6. — *But Guyon, &c.*] In this encounter between Guyon and Britomart Upton discovers an historical allusion to the Earl of Essex's presuming to match himself with Queen Elizabeth, and adds, "And has not the poet with the finest art managed a very dangerous and secret piece of history?"

Let not thee grieve dismounted to have beene,
 And brought to grownd, that never wast before ;
 For not thy fault, but secret powre unseene ;
 That speare enchanted was which layd thee on the greene !

VIII.

But weenedst thou what wight thee overthrow,
 Much greater grieffe and shamefuller regret
 For thy hard fortune then thou wouldst renew,
 That of a single Danzell thou wert mett
 On equall plaine, and there so hard besett :
 Even the famous Britomart it was,
 Whom straunge adventure did from Britayne fett ¹
 To seeke her lover (love far sought alas !)
 Whose image shee had seene in Venus looking-glas.

IX.

Full of disdainfull wrath, he fierce uprose
 For to revenge that fowle reprochefull shame,
 And snatching his bright sword began to close
 With her on foot, and stoutly forward came ;
 Dye rather would he then ² endure that same.
 Which when his Palmer saw, he gan to feare
 His toward ³ perill, and untoward blame,⁴
 Which by that new rencounter he should reare ⁵ ;
 For Death sate on the point of that enchanted speare :

¹ *Fett*, fetch.⁴ *Blame*, injury.² *Then*, than.⁵ *Reare*, raise, bring upon himself.³ *Toward*, near at hand.

VII. 9. — *That speare enchanted.*] This spear, as we are subsequently informed, was made by Bladud by "magic art." See book III. canto III. stanza LX.

VIII. 9. — *Whose image, &c.*] This incident is told at length in the next canto.

X.

And hasting towards him gan fayre perswade
 Not to provoke misfortune, nor to weene
 His speares default to mend with cruell blade ;
 For by his mightie science he had seene
 The secrete vertue of that weapon keene,
 That mortall puissance mote not withstood :
 Nothing on earth mote alwaies happy ¹ beene !
 Great hazard were it, and adventure fond, ²
 To loose long-gotten honour with one evill hond. ³

XI.

By such good meanes he him discourselled
 From prosecuting his revenging rage :
 And eke the Prince like treaty handeled,
 His wrathfull will with reason to aswage ;
 And laid the blame, not to his carriage,
 But to his starting steed that swarv'd asyde,
 And to the ill purveyaunce ⁴ of his Page,
 That had his furnitures ⁵ not firmly tyde :
 So is his angry corage ⁶ fayrly pacifyde.

XII.

Thus reconcilment was betweene them knitt,
 Through goodly temperaunce and affection chaste ;
 And either vovd with all their power and witt
 To let not others honour be defaste
 Of ⁷ friend or foe, whoever it embaste, ⁸

¹ *Happy, successful.*

² *Fond, rash.*

³ *Hond, adventure, enterprise.*

⁴ *Purveyaunce, management, provision.*

⁵ *Furnitures, equipments.*

⁶ *Corage, heart, mind.*

⁷ *Of, by.*

⁸ *Embaste, dishonored.*

XI. 3. — *Like treaty handeled.*] Employed the same solicitations or arguments.

Ne armes to bear against the others syde:
 In which accord ¹ the Prince was also plaste,
 And with that golden chaine of concord tyde:
 So goodly all agreed, they forth yfere ² did ryde.

XIII.

O, goodly usage of those antique tymes,
 In which the sword was servaunt unto right;
 When not for malice and contentious crymes,
 But all for prayse, and prooffe of manly might,
 The martiall brood accustomed to fight:
 Then honour was the meed of victory,
 And yet the vanquished had no despight:
 Let later age that noble use ³ envy, ⁴
 Vyle rancor to avoid and cruel surquedry ⁵!

XIV.

Long they thus traveled in friendly wise,
 Through countreyes waste, and eke well edifyde, ⁶
 Seeking adventures hard, to exercise
 Their puissaunce, whylome ⁷ full dernly ⁸ tryde:
 At length they came into a forest wyde,
 Whose hideous horror and sad trembling sownd
 Full griesly ⁹ seemd: Therein they long did ryde,
 Yet tract of living creature none they fownd,
 Save beares, lyons, and buls, which romed them arownd.

XV.

All suddenly out of the thickest brush,
 Upon a milk-white palfrey all alone,

¹ *Accord*, agreement.² *Yfere*, together.³ *Use*, custom.⁴ *Envy*, emulate.⁵ *Surquedry*, insolence.⁶ *Edifyde*, built, or peopled.⁷ *Whylome*, formerly.⁸ *Dernly*, earnestly.⁹ *Griesly*, grisly, terrible.

A goodly Lady did foreby¹ them rush,
 Whose face did seeme as cleare as christall stone,
 And eke, through feare, as white as whalës bone :
 Her garments all were wrought of beaten gold,
 And all her steed with tinsell trappings shone,
 Which fledd so fast that nothing mote him hold,
 And scarce them leasure gave her passing to behold.

XVI.

Still as she fledd her eye she backward threw,
 As fearing evill that poursewd her fast ;
 And her faire yellow locks behind her flew,
 Loosely disperst with puff of every blast :
 All as a blazing starre doth farre outcast
 His hearie² beames, and flaming lockes dispredd,
 At sight whereof the people stand aghast ;
 But the sage wisard telles, as he has redd,
 That it impörtunes³ death and dolefull dreryhedd.⁴

XVII.

So as they gazed after her awhyle,
 Lo ! where a griesly foster⁵ forth did rush,
 Breathing out beastly lust her to defyle :
 His tyreling⁶ jade⁷ he fiersly forth did push
 Through thicke and thin, both over banck and bush,
 In bope her to attaine by hooke or crooke,
 That from his gory sydes the blood did gush :
 Large were his limbes, and terrible his looke,
 And in his clownish hand a sharp bore-speare he shooke.

¹ *Foreby*, hard by.⁵ *Foster*, forester.² *Hearie*, hairy.⁶ *Tyreling*, weary.³ *Impörtunes*, threatens.⁷ *Jade*, horse.⁴ *Dreryhedd*, disaster.

XV. 3. — *A goodly Lady, &c.*] This is Florimell, of whom we hear much in the subsequent cantos.

XVIII.

Which outrage when those gentle Knights did see,
 Full of great envy and fell gealosity
 They stayd not to avise ¹ who first should bee,
 But all spurd after, fast as they mote fly,
 To reskew her from shamefull villany.
 The Prince and Guyon equally bylive ²
 Herselfe pursewd, in hope to win thereby
 Most goodly meede, the fairest Dame alive:
 But after the foule foster ³ Timias did strive.

XIX.

The whiles faire Britomart, whose constant mind
 Would not so lightly follow Beauties chace,
 Ne reckt of Ladies love, did stay behynd;
 And them awayted there a certaine space,
 To weet ⁴ if they would turne backe to that place:
 But, when she saw them gone, she forward went,
 As lay her journey, through that perlous ⁵ pace,
 With stedfast corage and stout hardiment ⁶;
 Ne evil thing she feard, ne evill thing she ment.

XX.

At last, as nigh out of the wood she came,
 A stately Castle far away she spyde,

¹ *Avise*, consider.⁴ *Weet*, learn.² *Bylive*, instantly.⁵ *Perlous*, perilous.³ *Foster*, forester.⁶ *Hardiment*, boldness.

XVIII. 2. — *Full of great envy, &c.*] *Envy* I take here to be used in the sense of emulation, and *gealosity*, of indignation.

XVIII. 6. — *The Prince and Guyon, &c.*] These adventures are resumed in canto IV. stanza XLV. and canto VI. stanza LIV.

XVIII. 9. — *Timias.*] *Timias* is Prince Arthur's squire, supposed to represent Sir W. Raleigh.

XIX. 7. — *Pace.*] This is conjectured to be the French word *pais*, country, Anglicized.

To which her steps directly she did frame.¹
 That Castle was most goodly edifyde,²
 And plaste for pleasure nigh that Forrest syde:
 But faire before the gate a spacious playne,
 Mantled with greene, itselfe did spredden³ wyde,
 On which she saw six Knights, that did darrayne⁴
 Fiers battaill against one with cruell might and mayne.

XXI.

Mainely⁵ they all attonce upon him laid,
 And sore beset on every side arownd,
 That nigh he breathlesse grew, yet nought dismaid,
 Ne ever to them yielded foot of grownd,
 All⁶ had he lost much blood through many a wownd;
 But stoutly dealt his blowes, and every way,
 To which he turned in his wrathfull stownd,⁷
 Made them recoile, and fly from dredd decay,
 That none of all the six before him durst assay:

XXII.

Like dastard cures, that, having at a bay
 The salvage beast embost⁸ in wearie chace,
 Dare not adventure on the stubborne pray,
 Ne byte before, but rome from place to place
 To get a snatch when turned is his face.
 In such distresse and doubtfull ieopardy
 When Britomart him saw, she ran apace

¹ *Frame*, adjust, direct.⁵ *Mainely*, strongly, violently.² *Edifyde*, built.⁶ *All*, although.³ *Spredden*, spread.⁷ *Stownd*, assault.⁴ *Darrayne*, prepare.⁸ *Embost*, hard pressed.

XX. 9. — *Against one.*] This is the Red-cross Knight of the first book.

XXI. 9. — *Before him durst assay.*] Durst attack him in front.

Unto his reskew, and with earnest cry
Badd those same sixe forbear that single enimy.

XXIII.

But to her cry they list not lenden eare,
Ne ought the more their mightie strokes surceasse¹ ;
But, gathering him rownd about more neare,
Their direfull rancour rather did encrease ;
Till that she rushing through the thickest preasse²
Perforce disparted³ their compacted gyre,⁴
And soone compeld to hearken unto peace :
Tho⁵ gan she myldly of them to inquire
The cause of their dissention and outrageous yre.

XXIV.

Whereto that single Knight did answere frame ;
“These six would me enforce, by oddes of might,
To chaunge my lief⁶, and love another dame ;
That death me liefer⁷ were then such despight,
So unto wrong to yield my wrested right :
For I love one, the truest one on grownd,
Ne list me chaunge ; she th’ Errant Damzell hight⁸ ;
For whose deare sake full many a bitter stownd⁹
I have endurd, and tasted many a bloody wownd.”

XXV.

“Certes,¹⁰” said she, “then beene ye sixe to blame,
To weene your wrong by force to iustify :

¹ *Surceasse*, leave off.⁶ *Liefe*, love.² *Preasse*, press.⁷ *Liefer*, preferable.³ *Disparted*, broke.⁸ *Hight*, is called.⁴ *Gyre*, circle.⁹ *Stownd*, assault.⁵ *Tho*, then.¹⁰ *Certes*, certainly.

XXIV. 7.—*Th’ Errant Damzell.*] This is Una, who is also called the *Errant Damozell* in book II. canto I. stanza XIX.

For Knight to leave his Lady were great shame
 That faithfull is ; and better were to dy.
 All losse is lesse, and lesse the infamy,
 Then¹ losse of love to him that loves but one :
 Ne may Love be compeld by maistry² ;
 For, soone as maistry² comes, sweet Love anone
 Taketh his nimble wings, and soone away is gone.”

XXVI.

Then spake one of those six ; “ There dwelleth here
 Within this castle-wall a Lady fayre,
 Whose souveraine beautie hath no living pere ;
 Thereto³ so bounteous and so debonayre,⁴
 That never any mote with her compayre :
 She hath ordaind this law, which we approve,
 That every Knight which doth this way repayre,
 In case he have no Lady nor no Love,
 Shall doe unto her service, never to remove :

XXVII.

“ But if he have a Lady or a Love,
 Then must he her forgoe with fowle defame,⁵
 Or els with us by dint of sword approve,
 That she is fairer than our fairest Dame ;
 As did this Knight, before ye hether came.”

¹ Then, than. ² Maistry, superior power. ³ Thereto, besides.
⁴ Debonayre, gracious. ⁵ Defame, dishonor.

XXV. 7. — *Ne may Love, &c.*]

“ Love wolle not be constreyned by maistry ;
 When maistry cometh, the god of love anone
 Betith his wings, and farevell he is gone.”

CHAUCER.

“ Love, free as air, at sight of human ties,
 Spreads his light wings, and in a moment flies.”

POPE.

“Perdy,”¹ said Britomart, “the choise is hard!

But what reward had he that overcame?”

“He should advaunced bee to high regard,”

Said they, “and have our Ladies love for his reward.

XXVIII.

“Therefore aread,² Sir, if thou have a Love.”

“Love have I sure,” quoth she, “but Lady none;

Yet will I not fro mine owne Love remove,

Ne to your Lady will I service done,³

But wreake your wronges wrought to this Knight alone,

And prove his cause.” With that, her mortall speare

She mightily aventred⁴ towards one,

And downe him smot ere well aware he weare⁵;

Then to the next she rode, and downe the next did beare.

XXIX.

Ne did she stay till three on ground she layd,

That none of them himselfe could reare againe:

The fourth was by that other Knight dismayd,⁶

All⁷ were he wearie of his former paine;

That now there do but two of six remaine;

Which two did yield before she did them smight.

“Ah!” said she then, “now may ye all see plaine,

That Truth is strong, and trew Love most of might,

That for his trusty servaunts doth so strongly fight.”

XXX.

“Too well we see,” saide they, “and prove too well

Our faulty weakenes, and your matchlesse might:

¹ *Perdy*, truly.

² *Aread*, explain, declare.

³ *Done*, do.

⁴ *Aventred*, pushed at a venture.

⁵ *Weare*, were.

⁶ *Dismayd*, subdued.

⁷ *All*, although.

XXVIII. 5. — *But wreake, &c.*] ‘But avenge the wrongs you have done to this knight in attacking him alone.’

Forthy,¹ faire Sir, yours be the Damozell,
 Which by her owne law to your lot doth light,
 And we your liegemen faith unto you plight."
 So underneath her feet their swords they mard,²
 And, after, her besought, well as they might,
 To enter in and reape the dew reward:
 She graunted; and then in they all together far'd.

XXXI.

Long were it to describe the goodly frame
 And stately port of Castle Joyeous,
 (For so that Castle hight³ by common name,)
 Where they were entertaynd with courteous
 And comely glee of many gracious
 Faire Ladies, and of many a gentle Knight;
 Who, through a chamber long and spacious,
 Eftsoones⁴ them brought unto their Ladies sight,
 That of them cleeped⁵ was the Lady of Delight.

XXXII.

But, for to tell the sumptuous aray
 Of that great chamber, should be labour lost;
 For living wit, I weene, cannot display
 The roiall riches and exceeding cost
 Of every pillour and of every post,
 Which all of purest bullion framed were,
 And with great perles and pretious stones embost⁶;
 That the bright glister of their beamës cleare
 Did sparckle forth great light, and glorious did appeare.

¹ *Forthy*, therefore.⁴ *Eftsoones*, immediately.² *Mard*, cast.⁵ *Cleeped*, called.³ *Hight*, is called.⁶ *Embst*, adorned.

XXXI. 2. — *Castle Joyeous*.] This is the name of Sir Lancelot's
 Castle in the *Morte d'Arthur*.

XXXIII.

These stranger Knights, through passing, forth were led
 Into an inner rowme, whose royallee
 And rich purveyance¹ might uneath² be red³ ;
 Mote Princes place beseeme so deckt to bee.
 Which stately manner whenas they did see,
 The image of superfluous riotize,
 Exceeding much the state of meane⁴ degree,
 They greatly wondred whence so sumptuous guize
 Might be maintaynd, and each gan diversely devise.

XXXIV.

The wals were round about apparelled
 With costly clothes of Arras and of Toure ;
 In which with cunning⁵ hand was pourtrahed
 The love of Venus and her paramoure,
 The fayre Adonis, turned to a flowre ;
 A worke of rare device and wondrous wit.
 First did it shew the bitter balefull stowre,⁶
 Which her assayd with many a fervent fit,
 When first her tender hart was with his beautie smit :

XXXV.

Then with what sleights and sweet allurements she
 Entyst the boy, as well that art she knew,

¹ *Purveyance*, furniture.⁴ *Meane*, moderate.² *Uneath*, scarcely.⁵ *Cunning*, skilful.³ *Red*, described.⁶ *Stowre*, passion.

XXXIII. 4. — *Mote Princes, &c.*] The meaning of the line is, that the style of embellishment would be suitable to a prince's palace.

XXXIV. 2. — *Clothes of Arras and of Toure.*] Tapestry made at the cities of Arras and Tours. — Warton censures Spenser for this anachronism, which reminds one of the fault found by certain philosophers with Plato for alluding to the ring of Gyges, which made the wearer invisible, because there never was such a ring, in point of fact. See Whatcley's *Rhet.* p. 67.

And wooed him her paramoure to bee ;
 Now making girlonds of each flowre that grew,
 To crowne his golden lockes with honour dew ;
 Now leading him into a secret shade
 From his beauperes,¹ and from bright heavens vew,
 Where him to sleepe she gently would perswade,
 Or bathe him in a fountaine by some covert glade :

XXXVI.

And, whilst he slept, she over him would spred
 Her mantle colour'd like the starry skyes,
 And her soft arme lay underneath his hed,
 And with ambrosiall kisses bathe his eyes ;
 And, whilst he bath'd, with her two crafty spyes²
 She secretly would search each daintie lim,
 And throw into the well sweet rosemaryes,
 And fragrant violets, and paunces³ trim ;
 And ever with sweet nectar she did sprinkle him.

XXXVII.

So did she steale his heedelesse hart away,
 And ioyd his love in secret unespyde :
 But for⁴ she saw him bent to cruell play,
 To hunt the salvage beast in forrest wyde,
 Dreadfull⁵ of daunger that mote him betyde
 She oft and oft adviz'd him to refraine
 From chase of greater beastes, whose brutish pryde
 Mote breede him scath⁶ unwares : but all in vaine ;
 For who can shun the chance that dest'ny doth ordaine ?

XXXVIII.

Lo! where beyond⁷ he lyeth languishing,

¹ *Beauperes*, fair companions.

² *Spyes*, eyes.

³ *Paunces*, pansies.

⁴ *For*, because.

⁵ *Dreadfull*, fearful.

⁶ *Scath*, injury.

⁷ *Beyond*, at a distance.

Deadly engored of a great wilde bore ;
 And by his side the goddesse groveling
 Makes for him endlesse mone, and evermore
 With her soft garment wipes away the gore
 Which staynes his snowy skin with hatefull hew :
 But, when she saw no helpe might him restore,
 Him to a dainty flowre she did transmew,¹
 Which in that cloth was wrought, as if it lively grew.

XXXIX.

So was that chamber clad in goodly wize :
 And rownd about it many beds were dight,²
 As whylome³ was the antique worldës guize,
 Some for untimely ease, some for delight,
 As pleased them to use that use it might :
 And all was full of Damzels and of Squyres,
 Dauncing and reveling both day and night,
 And swimming deepe in sensuall desyres ;
 And Cupid still amongst them kindled lustfull fyres.

XL.

And all the while sweet Musicke did divide
 Her looser notes with Lydian harmony ;
 And all the while sweete birdes thereto applide
 Their daintie layes and dulcet melody,
 Ay caroling of love and iollity,
 That wonder was to heare their trim consórt.⁴

¹ *Transmew*, change.² *Whylome*, formerly.³ *Dight*, prepared.⁴ *Trim consórt*, pleasing concert.XXXVIII. 8. — *A dainty flowre.*] The anemone.XL. 2. — *With Lydian harmony.*] The Lydian music was supposed to be of a soft and voluptuous character. Thus Dryden —

“Softly sweet, in Lydian measures,
 Soon he soothed his soul to pleasures.”

Which when those Knights beheld, with scornfull eye
 They sdeigned¹ such lascivious disport,
 And loath'd the loose demeanure of that wanton sort.²

XLI.

Thence they were brought to that great Ladies vew,
 Whom they found sitting on a sumptuous bed
 That glistred all with gold and glorious shew,
 As the proud Persian queenes accustomed:
 She seemd a woman of great bountyhed
 And of rare beautie, saving that askaunce
 Her wanton eyes (ill signes of womanhed)
 Did roll too lightly, and too often glaunce,
 Without regard of grace or comely amenaunce.³

XLII.

Long worke it were, and needlesse, to devise⁴
 Their goodly entertainment and great glee:
 She caused them be led in courteous wize
 Into a bowre,⁵ disarmed for to be,
 And cheared well with wine and spiceree:
 The Redcrosse Knight was soon disarmed there;
 But the brave Mayd would not disarmed bee,
 But onely vented up her umbrière,
 And so did let her goodly visage to appere.

XLIII.

As when fayre Cynthia, in darkesome night,
 Is in a noyous⁶ cloud enveloped,
 Where she may finde the substance thin and light,

¹ *Sdeigned*, disdained.⁴ *Devise*, describe.² *Sort*, company.⁵ *Bowre*, chamber.³ *Amenaunce*, behavior.⁶ *Noyous*, unpleasing, or disagreeable.

XLII. 8. — *Vented up her umbriërs.*] Lifted up the visor of her helmet. — *Umbrière* is so called from its shading the face, derived from *umbra*, Lat., shadow.

Breakes forth her silver beames, and her bright hed
 Discovers to the world discomfited ;
 Of the poore traveller that went astray
 With thousand blessings she is heried¹ :
 Such was the beautie and the shining ray,
 With which fayre Britomart gave light unto the day.

XLIV.

And eke those six, which lately with her fought,
 Now were disarmd, and did themselves present
 Unto her vew, and company unsought ;
 For they all seemed courteous and gent,²
 And all sixe brethren, borne of one parent,
 Which had them traynd in all civillitee,
 And goodly taught to tilt and turnament ;
 Now were they liegmen to this Ladie free,
 And her Knights-service ought,³ to hold of her in fee.

XLV.

The first of them by name Gardantè hight,⁴
 A iolly⁵ person, and of comely vew ;
 The second was Parlantè, a bold Knight ;

¹ *Heried*, praised. ² *Gent*, accomplished. ³ *Ought*, owed.

⁴ *Hight*, called. ⁵ *Iolly*, handsome.

XLIII. 5.—*Discomfited*.] Disconcerted at the temporary obscuration of the moon.

XLIV. 9.—*Knights-services ought*.] The tenure by knights-service was the most honorable one known to the English law. To constitute it, a determinate quantity of land, called a "knight's fee," was necessary; and the tenant was obliged to attend the lord of whom he held to the war forty days in every year, if called upon.

XLV. 1.—*The first of them, &c.*] The names of these six persons are appropriate to the attendants upon *Malecasts*, or Incontinence. *Gardantè* means a gazer, or ogler; *Parlantè*, a prattler; *Iocantè*, a jester; *Basciantè*, one who kisses; *Bacchantè*, a drinker of wine, and *Noctantè*, a reveller by night.

And next to him Iocantè did ensew¹;
 Basciantè did himselve most courteous shew;
 But fierce Bacchantè seemd too fell and keene;
 And yett in armes Noctantè greater grew:
 All were faire Knights, and goodly well besene;
 But to faire Britomart they all but shadowes beene.

XLVI.

For shee was full of amiable grace
 And manly terror mixed therewithall;
 That as the one stird up affections bace,
 So th' other did mens rash desires apall,
 And hold them backe that would in error fall:
 As hee that hath espide a vermeill rose,
 To which sharp thornes and breres² the way forstall,³
 Dare not for dread his hardy hand expose,
 But, wishing it far off, his ydle wish doth lose.

XLVII.

Whom when the Lady saw so faire a wight,
 All ignorant of her contráry sex,
 (For shee her weend a fresh and lusty Knight,)
 Shee greatly gan enamoured to wex,
 And with vaine thoughts her falsed⁴ fancy vex:
 Her fickle hart conceived hasty fyre,
 Like sparkes of fire which fall in sclender flex,
 That shortly brent⁵ into extreme desyre,
 And ransackt all her veines with passion entyre.⁶

XLVIII.

Eftsoones⁷ shee grew to great impatience,

¹ *Ensew*, follow.

⁵ *Brent*, burnt.

² *Breres*, briars.

⁶ *Entyre*, inward.

³ *Forstall*, obstruct.

⁷ *Eftsoones*, immediately.

⁴ *Falsed*, deceived.

XLVII. 7.— *Sclender flex.*] Thin flax.

And into termes of open outrage burst,¹
 That plaine discovered her incontinence ;
 Ne reekt shee who her meaning did mistrust ;
 For she was given all to fleshly lust,
 And poured forth in sensuall delight,
 That all regard of shame she had discust,²
 And meet respect of honor put to flight :
 So shamelesse beauty soone becomes a loathly sight.

XLIX.

Faire Ladies, that to love captived arre,
 And chaste desires doe nourish in your mind,
 Let not her fault your sweete affections marre ;
 Ne blott the bounty³ of all womankind
 'Mongst thousands good, one wanton dame to find :
 Emongst the roses grow some wicked weeds :
 For this was not to love, but lust, inclind ;
 For love does alwaies bring forth bounteous⁴ deeds,
 And in each gentle hart desire of honor breeds.

L.

Nought so of love this looser Dame did skill,⁵
 But as a cole to kindle fleshly flame,
 Giving the bridle to her wanton will,
 And treading under foote her honest name :
 Such love is hate, and such desire is shame.
 Still did she rove⁶ at her with crafty glaunce
 Of her false eies, that at her hart did ayme,
 And told her meaning in her countenance ;
 But Britomart dissembled it with ignoraunce.

¹ *Burst*, burst.⁴ *Bounteous*, generous, noble.² *Discust*, thrown off.⁵ *Skill*, understand.³ *Bounty*, goodness.⁶ *Rove*, shoot.

L. 9. — *Dissembled it with ignoraunce.*] Appeared as if she did not perceive or understand her conduct.

LI.

Supper was shortly dight,¹ and downe they satt ;
 Where they were served with all sumptuous fare,
 Whiles fruitfull Ceres and Lyæus fatt
 Pourd out their plenty, without spight² or spare ;
 Nought wanted there that dainty was and rare :
 And aye the cups their bancks did overflow ;
 And aye betweene the cups she did prepare
 Way to her love, and secret darts did throw ;
 But Britomart would not such guilfull message know.

LII.

So, when they slaked had the fervent heat
 Of appetite with meates of every sort,
 The Lady did faire Britomart entreat
 Her to disarme, and with delightfull sport
 To loose her warlike limbs and strong effort :
 But when shee mote not thereunto be wonne,
 (For shee her sexe under that straunge purpört³
 Did use to hide, and plaine apparaunce shonne,)
 In playner wise to tell her grievance she begonne ;

LIII.

And all atonce discovered her desire
 With sighes, and sobs, and plaints, and piteous grieffe,
 The outward sparkes of her in-burning fire :
 Which spent in vaine, at last she told her briefe,⁴

¹ *Dight*, prepared.² *Purpört*, disguise.³ *Spight*, reluctance.⁴ *Briefe*, briefly.

LI. 3. — *Lyæus*.] A name of Bacchus, used here for wine, as 'Ceres' is for food.

LI. 6. — *The cups their bancks did overflow*.] 'Were emptied of their contents.'

LII. 4. — *Her to disarme, &c.*] To lay aside her arms, and relax the sternness of her demeanor.

That, but if¹ she did lend her short reliefe
 And doe her comfort, she mote algates² dye.
 But the chaste Damzell, that had never priefe³
 Of such malengine⁴ and fine forgerye,⁵
 Did easely beleewe her strong extremitye.

LIV.

Full easy was for her to have beliefe,
 Who by self-feeling of her feeble sexe,
 And by long triall of the inward grieffe
 Wherewith imperious love her hart did vexe,
 Could iudge what paines doe loving harts perplexe.
 Who means no guile, be guiled soonest shall,
 And to faire semblaunce doth light⁶ faith annexe :
 The bird, that knowes not the false fowlers call,
 Into his hidden nett full easely doth fall.

LV.

Forthy⁷ she would not in discourteise wise⁸
 Scorne the faire offer of good will profest ;
 For great rebuke⁹ it is love to despise,
 Or rudely sdeigne¹⁰ a gentle harts request ;
 But with faire countenance, as beseemed best,
 Her entertaynd ; nath'lesse shee inly deemd
 Her love too light, to wooe a wandring guest ;

¹ *But if, unless.*² *Algates, at all events.*³ *Priefe, proof.*⁴ *Malengins, guile.*⁵ *Forgerye, deceit.*⁶ *Light, ready.*⁷ *Forthy, therefore.*⁸ *Discourteise wise, discourteously.*⁹ *Rebuke, rudeness.*¹⁰ *Sdeigns, disdain.*

LIV. 6. — *Nath'lesse shee inly deemd.*] Britomart treated Malecasta courteously, but deemed her love to be of a very light and frivolous character, to be proffered to a chance guest like herself; while Malecasta interpreted the courtesy of Britomart to be evidence of a like passion in the breast of the supposed knight.

Which she misconstruing, thereby esteemd
That from like inward fire that outward smoke had steemd.

LVI.

Therewith awhile she her flit¹ fancy fedd,
Till she mote winne fit time for her desire ;
But yet her wound still inward freshly bledd,
And through her bones the false instilled fire
Did spred itselfe, and venime close² inspire.
Tho³ were the tables taken all away ;
And every Knight, and every gentle Squire,
Gan choose his Dame with *bascioman* gay,
With whom he ment to make his sport and courtly play.

LVII.

Some fell to daunce ; some fell to hazardry⁴ ;
Some to make love ; some to make meryment ;
As diverse witts to diverse things apply :
And all the while faire Malecasta bent
Her crafty engins to her close intent.
By this th' eternall lampes, wherewith high Love
Doth light the lower world, were halfe yspent,
And the moist daughters of huge Atlas strove
Into the ocean deepe to drive their weary drove.

LVIII.

High time it seemed then for everie wight

¹ *Flit*, rapid.

² *Tho*, then

³ *Closs*, secret.

⁴ *Hazardry*, gaming.

LVI. 8. — *Bascioman* gay.] 'With kissing her hands' — an Italian word.

LVII. 5. — *Closs intent*.] Deep-seated purpose.

LVII. 8. — *And the moist daughters, &c.*] The Hyades, a constellation of seven stars in the head of Taurus, supposed by the ancients to occasion rain. They were the daughters of Atlas, and pined away with grief for the death of their brother, Hyas, and were changed into stars.

Them to betake unto their kindly rest :
 Eftesoones¹ long waxen torches weren light
 Unto their bowres² to guyden every guest :
 Tho,³ when the Britonesse saw all the rest
 Avoided quite, she gan herselfe despoile,
 And safe committ to her soft feathered nest ;
 Wher through long watch, and late daies weary toile,
 She soundly slept, and carefull thoughts did quite assoile.⁴

LIX.

Now whenas all the world in silence deepe
 Yshrowded was, and every mortall wight
 Was drowned in the depth of deadly sleepe ;
 Faire Malecasta, whose engrieved spright
 Could find no rest in such perplexed plight,
 Lightly arose out of her wearie bed,
 And, under the blacke vele of guilty night,
 Her with a scarlott mantle covered
 That was with gold and ermines faire enveloped.

LX.

Then panting softe, and trembling every ioynt,
 Her fearfull feete towards the bowre⁵ she mov'd,
 Where she for secret purpose did appoynt
 To lodge the warlike Maide, unwisely loov'd ;
 And, to her bed approching, first she proov'd
 Whether she slept or wakte : with her softe hand
 She softly felt if any member moov'd,

¹ *Eftesoones*, immediately.⁴ *Assoile*, put off.² *Bowres*, chambers.⁵ *Bowre*, chamber.³ *Tho*, then.LVIII. 5.— *all the rest**Avoided quits.*] That all the others had departed, or,
 that she was alone.

And lent her wary eare to understand
If any puffe of breath or signe of sence shee fond.

LXI.

Which whenas none shee fond, with easy shifte,
For feare least her unwares she should abrayd,¹
Th' embroder'd quilt shee lightly up did lifte,
And by her side herselfe shee softly layd,
Of every finest fingers touch affrayd ;
Ne any noise shee made, ne worde shee spake,
But inly sighd. At last the royall Mayd
Out of her quiet slomber did awake,
And chaungd her weary side the better ease to take.

LXII.

Where feeling one close couched by her side,
Shee lightly lept out of her filed² bedd,
And to her weapon ran, in minde to gride³
The loathed leachour : but the Dame, halfe dedd
Through suddaine feare and ghasly drierihedd,⁴
Did shrieke aloud, that through the hous it rong,
And the whole family therewith adredd⁵
Rashly⁶ out of their rouzed couches sprong,
And to the troubled chamber all in armes did throng.

LXIII.

And those sixe Knightes, that Ladies champions,
And eke the Redcrosse Knight ran to the stownd,⁷
Halfe armd and halfe unarmd, with them attons⁸ :
Where when confusedly they came, they fownd

¹ *Abrayd*, awake.⁶ *Adredd*, disturbed.² *Filed*, defiled.⁸ *Rashly*, inconsiderately.³ *Grilde*, pierce.⁷ *Stownd*, alarm.⁴ *Drierihedd*, horror.⁸ *Attions*, together.LXI. 1. — *Easy shifte.*] Light movement.

Their Lady lying on the sencelesse grownd :
 On th' other side they saw the warlike Mayd
 Al in her snow-white smocke, with locks unbownd,
 Threatning the point of her avenging blade ;
 That with so troublous terror they were all dismayd.

LXIV.

About their Ladye first they flockt arownd ;
 Whom having laid in comfortable couch,
 Shortly they reard out of her frozen swownd ;
 And afterwarde they gan with fowle reproch
 To stirre up strife, and troublous contecke¹ broch² :
 But, by ensample of the last dayes losse,
 None of them rashly durst to her approach,
 Ne in so glorious spoile themselves embosse³ :
 Her succourd eke the Champion of the Bloody Crosso.

LXV.

But one of those sixe knights, Gardantè hight,⁴
 Drew out a deadly bow and arrow keene,
 Which forth he sent with felonous despight⁵
 And fell intent against the Virgin sheene⁶ :
 The mortall steele stayd not till it was seene
 To gore her side ; yet was the wound not deepe,
 But lightly rased her soft silken skin,
 That drops of purple blood thereout did weepe,
 Which did her lilly smock with staines of vermeil steep.

LXVI.

Wherewith enrag'd she fiercely at them flew,

¹ *Contecks*, contention.

⁴ *Hight*, named.

² *Broch*, broach, commence.

⁵ *Felonous despight*, wicked malice.

³ *Embosse*, adorn.

⁶ *Sheene*, shining, bright.

LXIII. 5. — *Lying on the sencelesse grownd.*] Lying senseless on the floor.

And with her flaming sword about her layd,
 That none of them foule mischief could eschew,¹
 But with her dreadfull strokes were all dismayd:
 Here, there, and every where, about her swayd
 Her wrathfull steele, that none mote it abyde;
 And eke the Redcrosse Knight gave her good ayd,
 Ay ioyning foot to foot, and syde to syde;
 That in short space their foes they have quite terrifyde.

LXVII.

Tho,² whenas all were put to shamefull flight,
 The noble Britomartis her arayd,
 And her bright armes about her body dight³:
 For nothing would she lenger⁴ there be stayd,
 Where so loose life, and so ungentle trade,⁵
 Was usd of⁶ Knightes and Ladies seeming gent⁷:
 So, earely, ere the grosse earthes gryesy⁸ shade
 Was all disperst out of the firmament,
 They tooke their steeds, and forth upon their iourney went.

¹ *Eschew*, avoid.⁵ *Trade*, treatment, conduct.² *Tho*, then.⁶ *Of*, by.³ *Dight*, put on.⁷ *Gent*, courteous.⁴ *Lenger*, longer.⁸ *Gryesy*, moist, or foggy.LXVI. 9. — *Quite terrifyde*.] Frightened away, or driven off.

CANTO II.

The Redcrosse Knight to Britomart
 Describeth Artegall:
 The wondrous Myrrhour, by which she
 In love with him did fall.

I.

HERE have I cause in men iust blame to find,
 That in their proper praise too partiall bee,
 And not indifferent ¹ to woman kind,
 To whom no share in armes and chevalree
 They doe impart, ne maken memoree
 Of their brave gestes ² and prowesse martiall:
 Scarse doe they spare to one, or two, or three,
 Rowme in their writtes ³; yet the same writing small
 Does all their deedes deface, and dims their glories all.

II.

But by recórd of ántique times I finde
 That wemen wont in warres to beare most sway,
 And to all great exploites themselves inclin'd,
 Of which they still the girlond bore away;
 Till envious men, fearing their rules decay,
 Gan coyne streight ⁴ lawes to curb their liberty:
 Yet, sith ⁵ they warlike armes have laide away,

¹ *Indifferent*, impartial.⁴ *Streight*, strict.² *Gestes*, deeds.⁵ *Sith*, since.³ *Writtes*, writings.

 II. 5. — *Their rules decay.*] The decline of their own authority.

They have exceld in artes and pollicy,
That now we foolish men that prayse gin eke t' envy.

III.

Of warlike puissaunce in ages spent,¹
Be thou, faire Britomart, whose prayse I wryte;
But of all wisdom bee thou precedent,
O soveraine Queene, whose prayse I would endyte,
Endite I would as dewtie doth excyte;
But ah! my rymes too rude and rugged arre,
When in² so high an object they doe lyte,
And, striving fit to make, I feare, doe marre:
Thyselfe thy prayses tell, and make them knowen farre.

IV.

She, traveling with Guyon, by the way
Of sondry thinges faire purpose³ gan to find,
T' abridg their journey long and lingring day:
Mongst which it fell into that Fairies mind
To aske this Briton Maid, what uncouth⁴ wind
Brought her into those partes, and what inquest⁵
Made her dissemble her disguised kind⁶:
Faire Lady she him seemd like Lady drest,
But fairest Knight alive when armed was her brest.

¹ *Spent*, passed.⁴ *Uncouth*, strange.² *In*, on.⁵ *Inquest*, quest, or adventure.³ *Purpose*, discourse.⁶ *Kind*, sex.III. 2. — *Be thou, faire Britomart.*] *Precedent* is understood.III. 4. — *O soveraine Queene.*] This is an invocation to Queen Elizabeth.III. 8. — *And, striving, &c.*] 'And, in endeavoring to treat the subject in a proper manner, I fear I only mar it.'IV. 1. — *Traveling with Guyon.*] This is a mistake. Guyon went in quest of Florimel, in the first canto, and Britomart is now in company with the Red-cross Knight.

V.

Thereat she sighing softly had no powre
 To speake awhile, ne ready answer make ;
 But with hart-thrilling throbs and bitter stowre,¹
 As if she had a fever fitt, did quake,
 And every daintie limbe with horrou shake ;
 And ever and anone the rosy red
 Flasht through her face, as² it had beene a flake³
 Of lightning through bright heven fulmined :
 At last, the passion past, she thus him answered :

VI.

“ Faire Sir, I let you weete,⁴ that from the howre
 I taken was from nourses tender pap,
 I have been trained up in warlike stowre,⁵
 To tossen⁶ speare and shield, and to affrap⁷
 The warlike ryder to his most mishap ;
 Sithence⁸ I loathed have my life to lead,
 As Ladies wont, in Pleasures wanton lap,
 To finger the fine needle and nyce thread ;
 Me lever⁹ were with point of foemans speare be dead.

VII.

“ All my delight on deedes of armes is sett,
 To hunt out perilles and adventures hard,
 By sea, by land, whereso they may be mett,
 Onely for honour and for high regard,

¹ *Stowre*, emotion.⁶ *Tossen*, toss, brandish.² *As*, as if.⁷ *Affrap*, strike down.³ *Flake*, flash.⁸ *Sithence*, since.⁴ *Let you weete*, inform you.⁹ *Me lever*, I would rather.⁵ *Stowre*, exercises.

VI. 4. — *And to affrap, &c.*] And to strike down the warlike rider in such a way as most effectually to disable him.

Without respect of richesse or reward :
 For such intent into these partes I came,
 Withouten compasse or withouten card,
 Far fro my native soyle, that is by name
 The Greater Brytayne, here to seeke for praise and fame.

VIII.

"Fame blazed hath, that here in Faery Lond
 Doe many famous Knightes and Ladies wonne,¹
 And many straunge adventures to bee fond,
 Of which great worth and worship² may be wonne :
 Which to prove, I this voyage have begonne.
 But mote I weet³ of you, right courteous Knight,
 Tydings of one that hath unto me donne
 Late foule dishonour and reprochfull spight,
 The which I seek to wreake,⁴ and Arthegall he hight.⁵"

IX.

The worde gone out she backe againe would call,
 As her repenting so to have missayd,
 But that he, it uptaking ere the fall,
 Her shortly answered ; "Faire martiall Mayd.
 Certes⁶ ye misavised⁷ beene t' upbrayd
 A gentle Knight with so unknighly blame :
 For, weet³ ye well, of all that ever playd

¹ *Wonne*, dwell.² *Worship*, honor.³ *Weet*, learn.⁴ *Wreake*, avenge.⁵ *Hight*, is called.⁶ *Certes*, certainly.⁷ *Misavised*, misinformed,
or ill-counselled.

VII. 9.—*The Greater Brytayne.*] Church says that this means Wales, and is so called to distinguish it from Lesser Brittany, in France. Fairy Land is England proper.

IX. 3.—*Ere the fall.*] Immediately ; before the words had fallen to the ground.

At tilt or tourney, or like warlike game,
The noble Arthegall hath ever borne the name.

X.

“Forthy¹ great wonder were it, if such shame
Should ever enter in his bounteous² thought,
Or ever doe that mote deserven blame :
The noble corage³ never weeneth ought
That may unworthy of itselfe be thought.
Therefore, faire Damzell, be ye well aware,
Least that too farre ye have your sorrow sought :
You and your Countrey both I wish welfare,
And honour both ; for each of other worthy are.”

XI.

The royall Maid woxe inly wondrous glad,
To heare her Love so highly magnifyde ;
And ioyd that ever she affixed had
Her hart on Knight so goodly glorifyde,
However finely she it faind to hyde.
The loving mother, that nine monethes did beare
In the deare closett of her painefull syde
Her tender babe, it seeing safe appeare,
Doth not so much reioyce as she reioyced there.

XII.

But to occasion him to further talke,
To feed her humor with his pleasing style,

¹ *Forthy*, therefore. ² *Bounteous*, generous, noble.

³ *Corage*, heart, mind.

IX. 9. — *Borne the name.*] That is, of gentle, or accomplished.

X. 4. — *The noble corage, &c.*] ‘The noble mind never entertains a thought unworthy of itself. Therefore, fair damsel, be careful to ascertain the truth, lest you should discover that you have been already too far on a wrong course in search of the cause of your sorrow.’

Her list¹ in stryfull² termes with him to balke,³
 And thus replyde ; “ However, Sir, ye fyle⁴
 Your courteous tongue his prayses to compyle,⁵
 It ill beseemes a Knight of gentle sort,
 Such as ye have him boasted, to beguyle
 A simple Maide, and worke so hainous tort,⁶
 Ll shame of Knighthood, as I largely can report.

XIII.

“ Let bee⁷ therefore my vengeance to disswade,
 And read,⁸ where I that Faytour⁹ false may find.”
 “ Ah! but if reason faire might you perswade
 To slake your wrath, and mollify your mind,”
 Said he, “ perhaps ye should it better find :
 For hardie thing it is, to weene by might
 That man to hard conditions to bind ;
 Or ever hope to match in equall fight,
 Whose prowesse paragone saw never living wight.

XIV.

“ Ne soothlich¹⁰ is it easie for to read⁸
 Where now on earth, or how, he may be fownd ;
 For he ne wonneth¹¹ in one certeine stead,¹²
 But restlesse walketh all the world arownd,
 Ay doing thinges that to his fame redownd,

¹ Her list, she was pleased.

² Stryfull, contentious.

³ Balke, deal in cross-purposes.

⁴ Fyle, smooth, polish.

⁵ Compyle, heap up.

⁶ Tort, wrong.

⁷ Let bee, omit.

⁸ Read, declare.

⁹ Faytour, villain.

¹⁰ Soothlich, truly.

¹¹ Wonneth, dwelleth.

¹² Stead, place.

XII. 9. — *As I largely can report.*] ‘As I can amply assert or maintain.’

XIII. 9. — *Whose prowesse, &c.*] ‘Whose prowess no living wight ever saw equalled.’

Defending Ladies cause and Orphans right,
 Whereso he heares that any doth confownd
 Them comfortlesse through tyranny or might ;
 So is his souveraine honour raisde to hevens hight."

XV.

His feeling wordes her feeble sence much pleased,
 And softly sunck into her molten hart :
 Hart, that is inly hurt, is greatly eased
 With hope of thing that may allegge¹ his smart ;
 For pleasing wordes are like to magick art,
 That doth the charmed snake in slomber lay :
 Such secrete ease felt gentle Britomart,
 Yet list² the same efforce³ with faind ganesay ;
 (So dischord ofte in musick makes the sweeter lay ;)

XVI.

And sayd ; " Sir Knight, these ydle termes forbear ;
 And, sith⁴ it is uneath⁵ to find his haunt,
 Tell me some markes by which he may appeare,
 If chaunce I him encounter paravaunt⁶ ;
 For perdy⁷ one shall other slay, or daunt : [stedd,
 What shape, what shield, what arnes, what steed, what
 And whatso else his person most may vaunt⁸ ?"
 All which the Redcrosse Knight to point ared,⁹
 And him in everie part before her fashioned.

XVII.

Yet him in everie part before she knew,

¹ *Allagge*, alleviate.

² *List*, preferred.

³ *Efforce*, struggle against.

⁴ *Sith*, since.

⁵ *Uneath*, difficult.

⁶ *Paravaunt*, peradventure.

⁷ *Perdy*, truly.

⁸ *Vaunt*, display.

⁹ *To point ared*, exactly described.

XVI. 6. — *What stedd.*] What manner of person.

However list¹ her now her knowledge fayne,
 Sith² him whylome³ in Britayne she did vew,
 To her revealed in a Mirrhour playne;
 Whereof did grow her first engrafted⁴ payne,
 Whose root and stalke so bitter yet did taste,
 That, but the fruit more sweetnes did contayne,
 Her wretched dayes in dolour⁵ she mote waste,
 And yield the pray of love to lothsome death at last.

XVIII.

By straunge occasion she did him behold,
 And much more straungely gan to love his sight,
 As it in bookes hath written beene of old.
 In Deheubarth, that now South-Wales is hight,⁶
 What time king Ryence raign'd and dealed right,
 The great Magtien Merlin had deviz'd,
 By his deepe science and hell-dreaded might,
 A Looking-glasse, right wondrously aguiz'd,⁷ [niz'd.⁸
 Whose vertues through the wyde worlde soone were solem-

XIX.

It vertue had to shew in perfect sight
 Whatever thing was in the world contaynd,
 Betwixt the lowest earth and hevens hight,
 So⁹ that it to the looker appertaynd:
 Whatever foe had wrought, or frend had faynd,
 Therein discovered was, ne ought mote pas,
 Ne ought in secret from the same remaynd;
 Forty¹⁰ it round and hollow shaped was,
 Like to the world itselfe, and seemd a World of Glas.

¹ List her, she was pleased.² Sith, since.³ Whylome, formerly.⁴ Engrafted, fixed, planted.⁵ Dolour, grief.⁶ Hight, called.⁷ Aguiz'd, contrived.⁸ Solemniz'd, made famous.⁹ So, provided.¹⁰ Forty, therefore.

XX.

Who wonders not, that reades so wondrous worke?
 But who does wonder, that has red the Towre
 Wherein th' Aegyptian Phao long did lurke
 From all mens vew, that none might her discoure,¹
 Yet she might all men vew out of her bowre²?
 Great Ptolomæ it for his Lemans sake
 Ybuided all of glasse, by magicke powre,
 And also it impregnable did make;
 Yet, when his Love was false, he with a peaze³ it braka.

XXI.

Such was the glassy Globe that Merlin made,
 And gave unto king Ryence for his gard,⁴
 That never foes his kingdome might invade,
 But he it knew at home before he hard⁵
 Tydings thereof, and so them still debar'd:
 It was a famous present for a Prince,
 And worthy worke of infinite reward,
 That treasons could bewray, and foes convince⁶:
 Happy this realme, had it remayned ever since!

XXII.

One day it fortun'd fayre Britomart

¹ *Discoure*, discover.

⁴ *Gard*, protection.

² *Bowre*, chamber, apartment.

⁵ *Hard*, heard.

³ *Peaze*, violent blow.

⁶ *Convince*, overthrow.

XX. 6.—*Great Ptolomæ.*] This is probably Ptolemy the astronomer, who, like Virgil, was probably invested with the honors of a magician, during the middle ages. The source from which Spenser derived the story I have not been able to ascertain.

XXI. 1.—*The glassy Globe.*] Magic globes or mirrors are frequently mentioned in romantic literature. The reader will recollect the beautiful verses in "The Lay of the Last Minstrel," describing an interview between the Earl of Surrey and Cornelius Agrippa, in which the latter showed him the Lady Geraldine in one of these mirrors.

Into her fathers closet to repayre ;
 For nothing he from her reserv'd apart,
 Being his onely daughter and his hayre ;
 Where when she had espyde that Mirrhour fayre,
 Herselfe awhile therein she vewd in vaine :
 Tho,¹ her avizing² of the vertues rare
 Which thereof spoken were, she gan againe
 Her to bethinke of that mote to herselfe pertaine.

XXIII.

But as it falleth, in the gentlest harts
 Imperious Love hath highest set his throne,
 And tyrannizeth in the bitter smarts
 Of them, that to him buxome³ are and prone :
 So thought this Mayd (as maydens use to done)
 Whom fortune for her husband would allot ;
 Not that she lusted after any one,
 For she was pure from blame of sinfull blott ;
 Yet wist⁴ her life at last must lincke in that same knot.

XXIV.

Eftsoones⁵ there was presented to her eye
 A comely Knight, all arm'd in complete wize,⁶
 Through whose bright ventayle⁷ lifted up on hye
 His manly face, that did his foes agrize⁸
 And frends to termes of gentle truce entize,
 Lookt fourth, as Phœbus face out of the east
 Betwixt two shady mountaynes doth arize :

¹ *Tho*, then.⁵ *Eftsoones*, immediately.² *Her avizing*, considering.⁶ *Wize*, manner.³ *Buxome*, (*biegsam*, Ger.)
obedient, yielding.⁷ *Ventayle*, front part of the helmet.⁸ *Agrize*, terrify.⁴ *Wist*, knew.

XXII. 6. — *In vaine*.] Because, looking into it without any definite purpose, she saw nothing but her own image.

Portly his person was, and much increast
Through his heroicke grace and honorable gest.¹

XXV.

His crest was covered with a couchant hownd,
And all his armour seemd of antique mould,
But wondrous massy and assured sownd,
And round about yfretted² all with gold,
In which there written was, with cyphers old,
Achilles armes which Arthegall did win :
And on his shield enveloped sevenfold
He bore a crowned little ermilin,³
That deckt the azure field with her fayre pouldred⁴ skin.

XXVI.

The Damzell well did vew his personage,⁵
And liked well ; ne further fastned not,
But went her way ; ne her unguilty⁶ age
Did weene,⁷ unwares, that her unlucky lot
Lay hidden in the bottome of the pot :
Of hurt unwist⁸ most daunger doth redound :
But the false archer, which that arrow shot
So slyly that she did not feele the wound,
Did smyle full smoothly at her weetlesse⁹ wofull stound.¹⁰

XXVII.

Thenceforth the fether in her lofty crest,

¹ *Gest*, demeanor.

² *Yfretted*, adorned with fret-work.

³ *Ermilin*, ermine.

⁴ *Pouldred*, spotted.

⁵ *Personage*, personal appearance.

⁶ *UngUILTY*, unsuspecting.

⁷ *Weene*, think.

⁸ *Unwist*, unknown.

⁹ *Weetlesse*, unconscious.

¹⁰ *Stound*, grief.

XXV. 6. — *Achilles armes, &c.*] Arthegall is the hero of the fifth book ; but we are not informed how he came by the arms of Achilles.

XXVI. 2. — *No further fastned not.*] Her thoughts dwelt no more upon it.

Ruffed¹ of Love, gan lowly to auaile²;
 And her proude portance³ and her princely gest,⁴
 With which she earst⁵ tryumphed, now did quaile:
 Sad, solemne, sowre, and full of fancies fraile,
 She woxe; yet wist⁶ she nether how, nor why;
 She wist⁶ not, silly Mayd, what she did aile,
 Yet wist⁶ she was not well at ease perdy⁷;
 Yet thought it was not love, but some melânccholy.

XXVIII.

So soone as Night had with her pallid hew
 Defaste⁸ the beautie of the shyning skye,
 And refte from men the worldes desired vew,
 She with her nourse adowne to sleepe did lye;
 But sleepe full far away from her did fly:
 Instead thereof sad sighes and sorrowcs deepe
 Kept watch and ward about her warily;
 That nought she did but wayle, and often steepe
 Her dainty couch with teares which closely⁹ she did weepe.

XXIX.

And if that any drop of slombring rest
 Did chauce to still¹⁰ into her weary spright,
 When feeble nature felt herselfe opprest,
 Streightway with dreames, and with fantastick sight
 Of dreadfull things, the same was put to flight;
 That oft out of her bed she did astart,
 As one with vew of ghasly feends affright:

¹ *Ruffed*, ruffled.² *Auaile*, sink.³ *Portance*, port.⁴ *Gest*, demeanor.⁵ *Earst*, before.⁶ *Wist*, knew.⁷ *Perdy*, truly.⁸ *Defaste*, defaced.⁹ *Closely*, secretly.¹⁰ *Still*, drop, flow.

Tho¹ gan she to renew her former smart,
And thinke of that fayre visage written in her hart.

XXX.

One night, when she was tost with such unrest,
Her aged nurse, whose name was Glaucè hight,²
Feeling her leape out of her loathed nest,
Betwixt her feeble armes her quickly keight,³
And downe againe in her warme bed her dight⁴ :
“ Ah! my deare daughter, ah! my dearest dread,⁵
What uncouth⁶ fit,” sayd she, “ what evill plight
Hath thee opprest, and with sad drearyhead⁷
Chaunged thy lively cheare, and living made thee dead ?

XXXI.

“ For not of nought these suddein ghastly feares
All night afflict thy naturall repose ;
And all the day, whenas thine equall peares
Their fit disports with faire delight doe chose,
Thou in dull corners doest thyselfe inclose ;
Ne tastest princes pleasures, ne doest spred
Abroad thy fresh youths fayrest flowre, but lose
Both leafe and fruite, both too untimely shed,
As one in wilfull bale⁸ for ever buried.

XXXII.

“ The time that mortall men their weary cares
Do lay away, and all wilde beastes do rest,
And every river eke his course forbearcs,
Then doth this wicked evill thee infest,
And rive with thousand throbs thy thrilled⁹ brest :

¹ *Tho*, then.² *Hight*, called.³ *Keight*, caught.⁴ *Dight*, placed, disposed.⁵ *Dread*, object of regard.⁶ *Uncouth*, strange.⁷ *Drearyhead*, sorrow.⁸ *Bale*, affliction.⁹ *Thrilled*, pierced.

Like an huge Actn' of deepe engulfed gryefe,
 Sorrow is heaped in thy hollow chest,
 Whence fourth it breakes in sighes and anguish ryfe,¹
 As smoke and sulphure mingled with confused stryfe.

XXXIII.

“ Ay me! how much I feare least love it bee!
 But if that love it be, as sure I read
 By knowen signes and passions which I see,
 Be it worthy of thy race and royall sead,²
 Then I avow, by this most sacred head
 Of my dear foster childe, to ease thy grieffe
 And win thy will: Therefore away doe dread;
 For death nor daunger from thy dew reliefe
 Shall me debarre: Tell me therefore, my liefest liefe³!”

XXXIV.

So having sayd, her twixt her armēs twaine
 Shee straightly⁴ straynd, and colled⁵ tenderly;
 And every trembling ioynt and every vaine
 Shee softly felt, and rubbed busily,
 To doe the frosen cold away to fly;
 And her faire deawy eies with kisses deare
 Shee ofte did bathe, and ofte againe did dry:
 And ever her impörtund not to feare
 To let the secret of her hart to her appeare.

XXXV.

The Damzell pauzd; and then thus fearfully;
 “ Ah! nurse, what needeth thee to eke⁶ my payne?
 Is not enough that I alone doe dye,
 But it must doubled bee with death of twaine?”

¹ *Ryfe*, rife, full, abundant.² *Sead*, seed.³ *Liefest liefe*, dearest love.⁴ *Streightly*, closely.⁵ *Colled*, fondled.⁶ *Eke*, increase.

For nought for me but death there doth remaine !”
 “ O daughter deare,” said she, “ despeire no whit ;
 For never sore but might a salve obtaine :
 That blinded god, which hath ye blindly smit,
 Another arrow hath your Lovers hart to hit.”

XXXVI.

“ But mine is not,” quoth she, “ like other wownd ;
 For which no reason can finde remedy.”
 “ Was never such, but mote the like be fownd,”
 Said she ; “ and though no reason may apply
 Salve to your sore, yet Love can higher stye ¹
 Then ² Reasons reach, and oft hath wonders donne.”
 “ But neither god of love nor god of skye
 Can doe,” said she, “ that which cannot be donne.”
 “ Things oft impossible,” quoth she, “ seeme ere begonne.”

XXXVII.

“ These idle wordes,” said she, “ doe nought aswage
 My stubborne smart, but more annoiaunce breed :
 For no, no usuall fire, no usuall rage
 Yt is, O nourse, which on my life doth feed,
 And sucks the blood which from my hart doth bleed.
 But since thy faithfull zeale lets me not hyde
 My crime, (if crime it be,) I will it reed.³
 Nor prince nor pere it is, whose love hath gryde ⁴
 My feeble brest of late, and launched this wound wyde :

XXXVIII.

“ Nor man it is, nor other living wight ;
 For then some hope I might unto me draw ;

¹ *Stye*, mount.³ *Reed*, declare.² *Then*, than.⁴ *Gryde*, pierced.

XXXVI. 9.— *Things oft impossible, &c.*] Things often seem impossible before they are begun or attempted.

But th' only shade and semblant¹ of a Knight,
 Whose shape or person yet I never saw,
 Hath me subiected to Loves cruell law :
 The same one day, as me misfortune led,
 I in my fathers wondrous Mirrhour saw,
 And, pleased with that seeming goodlyhed,²
 Unwares the hidden hooke with baite I swallowed :

XXXIX.

“ Sithens³ it hath infixd faster hold
 Within my bleeding bowells, and so sore
 Now ranckleth in this same fraile fleshly mould,
 That all mine entrailles flow with poisonous gore,
 And th' ulcer groweth daily more and more ;
 Ne can my ronning sore finde remedee,
 Other than my hard fortune to deplore,
 And languish as the leafe faln from the tree,
 Till death make one end of my daies and miseree !”

XL.

“ Daughter,” said she, “ what need ye be dismayd ?
 Or why make ye such monster of your minde ?
 Of much more uncouth⁴ thing I was affrayd ;
 Of filthy lust, contráry unto kinde⁵ :
 But this affection nothing straunge I finde ;
 For who with reason can you aye reprove
 To love the semblaunt¹ pleasing most your minde,
 And yield your heart whence ye cannot remove ?
 No guilt in You, but in the tyranny of Love.

¹ *Semblant*, appearance. ² *Goodlyhed*, goodly appearance.

³ *Sithens*, since. ⁴ *Uncouth*, strange. ⁵ *Kinde*, nature.

XL. 2. — *Or why make, &c.*] Why speak of your passion as if it were monstrous or unnatural?

XLI.

" Not so th' Arabian Myrrhe did sett her mynd ;
 Nor so did Biblis spend her pining hart ;
 But lov'd their native flesh against al kynd,¹
 And to their purpose used wicked art :
 Yet playd Pasiphaë a more monstrous part,
 That lov'd a bull, and learn'd a beast to bee :
 Such shamefull lustes who loaths not, which depart
 From course of nature and of modestee ?
 Swete Love such lewdnes bands² from his faire companee.

XLII.

" But thine, my deare, (welfare thy heart, my deare !)
 Though straunge beginning had, yet fixed is
 On one that worthy may perhaps appeare ;
 And certes³ seemes bestowed not amis :
 Ioy thereof have thou and eternall blis !"
 With that, upleaning on her elbow weake,
 Her ablaste brest she soft did kis,
 Which all that while shée felt to pant and quake,
 As it an earth-quake wero : at last she thus bespake ;

XLIII.

" Beldame, your words doe worke me litle ease ;
 For though my love be not so lewdly bent
 As those ye blame, yet may it nought appease
 My raging smart, ne ought my flame relent,

¹ *Kynd*, nature. ² *Bands*, banishes. ³ *Certes*, truly.

XLI. 1. — *Th' Arabian Myrrhe, &c.*] Myrrha and Biblis are names associated with classical tales of incestuous passion. Alfieri has made the story of Myrrha the subject of a tragedy. The monstrous fable of Pasiphaë is well known.

XLIII. 1. — *Beldame.*] *Beldame* means literally 'fair dame,' (Fr. *Belle dame*.) and is used here, and generally in Spenser, as a respectful epithet.

But rather doth my helpelesse grieffe augment.
 For they, however shamefull and unkinde,¹
 Yet did possesse their horrible intent :
 Short end of sorrowes they therby did finde ;
 So was their fortune good, though wicked were their minde.

XLIV.

“ But wicked fortune mine, though minde be good,
 Can have no end nor hope of my desire,
 But feed on shadowes whiles I die for food,
 And like a shadow waxe, whiles with entire²
 Affection I doe languish and expire.
 I, fonder³ then⁴ Cephisus foolish chyld,
 Who, having vewed in a fountaine shere⁵
 His face, was with the love thereof beguyld ;
 I, fonder,³ love a shade, the body far exyld.”

XLV.

“ Nought like,” quoth shee ; “ for that same wretched boy
 Was of himselfe the ydle paramoure,
 Both Love and Lover, without hope of ioy ;
 For which he faded to a watry flowre.
 But better fortune thine, and better howre,⁶
 Which lov’st the shadow of a warlike Knight ;
 No shadow, but a body hath in powre :
 That body, wheresoever that it light,⁷
 May learned be by cyphers, or by magicke might.

¹ *Unkinde*, unnatural. ² *Entire*, inward. ³ *Fonder*, more foolish.
⁴ *Then*, than. ⁵ *Shere*, clear. ⁶ *Howre*, lot. ⁷ *Light*, happens to be.

XLIV. 6. — *Cephisus foolish chyld.*] Narcissus.

XLV. 1. — *Nought like.*] The cases are not similar.

XLV. 4. — *Watry flowre.*] The narcissus, or daffodil, called ‘watry,’ because thriving best in moist situations.

XLV. 7. — *No shadow, &c.*] ‘There is no shadow which has not a body belonging to it.’

XLVI.

“ But if thou may with reason yet repress
 The growing evill, ere it strength have gott,
 And thee abandond wholly do possesse ;
 Against it strongly strive, and yield thee nott
 Til thou in open fielde adowne be smott¹ :
 But if the passion mayster thy fraile might,
 So that needs love or death must be thy lott,
 Then I avow to thee, by wrong or right
 To compas thy desire, and find that loved Knight.”

XLVII.

Her chearefull words much cheard the feeble spright
 Of the sicke Virgin, that her downe she layd
 In her warme bed to sleepe, if that she might ;
 And the old-woman carefully displayd²
 The clothes about her round with busy ayd ;
 So that at last a litle creeping sleepe
 Surprizd her sence : Shee, therewith well apayd,³
 The dronken lamp down in the oyl did steepe,
 And sett her by to watch, and sett her by to weepe.

XLVIII.

Earely, the morrow next, before that Day
 His ioyous face did to the world revele,
 They both uprose and tooke their ready way
 Unto the church, their praiers to appele,⁴

¹ *Smott*, smitten.³ *Apayd*, satisfied.² *Displayd*, spread.⁴ *Appels*, offer.

XLVII. 8.— *The dronken lamp, &c.*] The lamp is called *dronken*, because it drinks or consumes the oil. Upton says that she does not blow out the lamp because that was ill ominous, but steeps it in the oil, and thus extinguishes it.

With great devotion, and with litle zele :
 For the faire Damzell from the holy herse¹
 Her love-sicke hart to other thoughts did steale ;
 And that old Dame said many an idle verse,
 Out of her daughters hart fond fancies to reverse.²

XLIX.

Retourned home, the royall Infant fell
 Into her former fitt ; for why ? no powre
 Nor guidaunce of herselfe in her did dwell.
 But th' aged nourse, her calling to her bowre,³
 Had gathered rew, and savine, and the flowre
 Of camphora, and calamint, and dill ;
 All which she in a earthen pot did poure,
 And to the brim with coltwood did it fill,
 And many drops of milk and blood through it did spill.

L.

Then, taking thrise three heares from off her head,
 Them trebly breaded in a threefold lace,
 And round about the pots mouth bound the thread ;
 And, after having whispered a space
 Certain sad words with hollow voice and bace,⁴
 Shee to the Virgin sayd, thrise sayd she itt ;
 " Come, daughter, come ; come, spit upon my face ;
 Spitt thrise upon me, thrise upon me spitt ;
 Th' uneven number for this busines is most fitt."

¹ *Herse*, ceremonial.³ *Bowre*, chamber.² *Reverse*, cause to return or depart.⁴ *Bace*, low.

XLVIII. 5. — *With great devotion, &c.*] With great apparent devotion, but little true zeal.

L. 1. — *Then, taking, &c.*] The classic poets, especially Theocritus and Virgil, have supplied Spenser with the various processes of Glauce's incantation.

LI.

That sayd, her rownd about she from her turnd,
 She turned her contráry to the sunne ;
 Thrise she her turnd contráry, and returnd
 All cóntrary ; for she the right did shunne ;
 And ever what she did was streight¹ undonne.
 So thought she to undoe her daughter's love :
 But love, that is in gentle brest begonne,
 No ydle charmes so lightly may remove ;
 That well can wisse, who by tryall it does prove.

LII.

Ne ought it mote the noble Mayd awayle,
 Ne slake the fury of her cruell flame,
 But that shee still did waste, and still did wayle,
 That, through long languour and hart-burning brame²
 She shortly like a pyned ghost became
 Which long hath waited by the Stygian strond :
 That when old Glauçè saw, for feare least blame
 Of her miscarriage should in her be fond,
 She wist³ not how t' amend, nor how it to withstond.

¹ *Streight*, immediately.² *Brame*, severe.³ *Wist*, knew.LII. 6. — *Hath wisted.*] Because the body had not been buried.

CANTO III.

Merlin bewrayes¹ to Britomart
 The state of Arthegall :
 And shewes the famous progeny,
 Which from them springen shall.

I.

Most sacred fyre, that burnest mightily
 In living brests, ykindled first above
 Emongst th' eternall spheres and lamping² sky,
 And thence pourd into men, which men call Love ;
 Not that same, which doth base affections³ move
 In brutish mindes, and filthy lust inflame ;
 But that sweete fit⁴ that doth true beautie love,
 And choseth Vertue for his dearest Dame,
 Whence spring all noble deedes and never-dying fame :

II.

Well did Antiquity a god thee deeme,
 That over mortall mindes hast so great might,
 To order them as best to thee doth seeme,
 And all their actions to direct aright :
 The fatall⁵ purpose of divine foresight
 Thou doest effect in destined descents,
 Through deepe impression of thy secret might,
 And stirredst up th' heroës high intents,
 Which the late world admyres for wondrous monuments.

¹ *Bewrayes*, reveals. ² *Lamping*, shining. ³ *Affections*, passions.

⁴ *Fît*, passion.

⁵ *Fatall*, ordained by fate.

III.

But thy dredd dartes in none doe triumph more,
 Ne braver proofe in any of thy powre
 Shewd'st thou, then¹ in this royall Maid of yore,
 Making her seeke an unknowne Paramoure,
 From the worlds end, through many a bitter stowre²:
 From whose two loynes thou afterwarde did rayse
 Most famous frutes of matrimoniall bowre,
 Which through the earth have spredd their living prayse,
 That fame in tromp of gold eternally displayes.

IV.

Begin then, O my dearest sacred Dame,
 Daughter of Phœbus and of Memorye,
 That doest ennoble with immortall name
 The warlike worthies, from antiquitye,
 In thy great volume of Eternitye;
 Begin, O Clio, and recount from hence
 My glorious Soveraines goodly Auncestrye,
 Till that by dew degrees, and long protense,³
 Thou have it lastly brought unto her Excellence.

V.

Full many wayes within her troubled mind
 Old Glaucè cast to cure this Ladies grieve;
 Full many wayes she sought, but none could find,
 Nor herbes, nor charmes, nor counsel that is chiefe
 And choicest med'cine for sick harts reliefe:
 Forthy⁴ great care she tooke, and greater feare,

¹ Then, than.³ Protense, extension.² Stowre, peril.⁴ Forthy, therefore.

IV. 2. — *Daughter of Phœbus, &c.*] This is the second time that Spenser has spoken of the Muses as being the daughters of Phœbus, instead of Jupiter. See book I. canto II. stanza V.

V. 6. — *Great care she took.*] She felt great concern.

Least that it should her turne to fowle reprieſe¹
 And ſore reproch, whenſo her father deare
 Should of his deareſt daughters hard miſfortune beare.

VI.

At laſt ſhe her auiſe,² that he which made
 That Mirrhour, wherein the ſicke Damoſell
 So ſtraungely vewed her ſtraunge lovers ſhade,
 To weet, the learned Merlin, well could tell
 Under what coaſt of heaven the Man did dwell,
 And by what means his love might beſt be wrought:
 For, though beyond the Africk Iſmaël
 Or th' Indian Peru he were, ſhe thought
 Him forth through infinite endeavour to have ſought.

VII.

Forthwith themſelves diſguiſing both in ſtraunge
 And baſe attyre, that none might them bewray,³
 To Maridunum, that is now by change
 Of name Cayr-Merdin cald, they tooke their way:
 There the wiſe Merlin whylome⁴ wont (they ſay)
 To make his wonne,⁵ low underneath the ground
 In a deepe delve,⁶ farre from the vew of day,
 That of no living wight he mote be found,
 Whenſo he counſeld with his ſprights encompaſt round.

VIII.

And, if thou ever happen that ſame way

¹ *Reprieſe*, reproof.

⁴ *Whylome*, formerly.

² *Auiſe*, bethought.

⁵ *Wonne*, dwelling.

³ *Bewray*, diſcover.

⁶ *Delve*, cave.

VI. 7.—*The Africk Iſmael.*] The Moors, Bedouin Arabs, &c., inhabiting the northern parts of Africa, are ſuppoſed to be deſcendants of Iſhmael.

VII. 4.—*Cayr-Merdin.*] Caermarthen, in Wales, the ſuppoſed reſidence of Merlin.

To travaill, go to see that dreadful place :
 It is an hideous hollow cave (they say)
 Under a rock that lyes a litle space
 From the swift Barry, tombling downe apace
 Amongst the woody hilles of Dyneuowre :
 But dare thou not, I charge, in any cace
 To enter into that same balefull bowre,¹
 For feare the cruell feendes should thee unwares devowre :

IX.

But standing high aloft low lay thine eare,
 And there such ghastly noyse of yron chaines
 And brasen caudrons thou shalt rombling heare,
 Which thousand sprights with long enduring paines
 Doe tosse, that it will stonn thy feeble braines ;
 And oftentimes great grones, and grievous stownds,²
 When too huge toile and labour them constraines ;
 And oftentimes loud strokes and ringing sowndes
 From under that deepe rock most horribly rebowndes.

X.

The cause, some say, is this : A litle whyle
 Before that Merlin dyde, he did intend
 A brasen wall in compas to compyle³
 About Cairmardin, and did it commend
 Unto these sprights to bring to perfect end :
 During which worke the Lady of the Lake,

¹ *Bowre*, chamber, dwelling.² *Stownds*, noises.³ *Compyle*, pile together, construct.

X. 6. — *The Lady of the Lake.*] The Lady of the Lake is a well-known personage in the romances relating to King Arthur. Lancelot du Lac, one of the Knights of the Round Table, was educated by her. The reader will recollect her appearance in Sir Walter Scott's "Kenilworth," in the description of the festivities in honor of Queen Elizabeth, at Kenilworth Castle. Merlin is represented as enamored of her; but

Whom long he lov'd, for him in hast did send ;
 Who, thereby forst his workemen to forsake,
 Them bownd, till his retourne, their labour not to slake.¹

XI.

In the meane time through that false Ladies traine²
 He was surprisd, and buried under beare,
 Ne ever to his worke returnd againe :
 Nath'lesse those feends may not their work forbear,
 So greatly his commandement they feare,
 But there doe toyle and traueile day and night,
 Untill that brasen wall they up doe reare :
 For Merlin had in magick more insight
 Then³ ever him before or after living wight :

XII.

For he by wordes could call out of the sky
 Both sunne and moone, and make them him obey ;
 The land to sea, and sea to maineland dry,
 And darksom night he eke could turne to day ;
 Huge hostes of men he could alone dismay,
 And hostes of men of meanest thinges could frame,
 Whenso him list⁴ his enemies to fray⁵ :
 That to this day, for terror of his fame,
 The feendes do quake when any him to them does name.

XIII.

And, sooth,⁶ men say that he was not the sonne

¹ *Slake*, slack. ² *Traine*, artifice. ³ *Then*, than.

⁴ *Him list*, he pleased. ⁵ *Fray*, terrify. ⁶ *Sooth*, indeed.

she did not return his passion, and made use of her power over him to enclose him in a rocky cavern. The story of the brazen wall, Warton says, was borrowed by Spenser from Giraldus Cambrensis, who, during his progress through Wales, in the twelfth century, picked it up among the other traditions propagated by the British bards.

XI. 2.—*Buried under bears.*] Buried under something which enclosed him like a coffin or bier.

Of mortall syre or other living wight,
 But wondrously begotten, and begonne
 By false illusion of a guilefull spright
 On a faire lady Nonne, that whilome ¹ hight ²
 Matilda, daughter to Pubidius
 Who was the lord of Mathtraval by right,
 And coosen unto king Ambrosius ;
 Whence he indued was with skill so merveilous.

XIV.

They, here arriving, staid awhile without,
 Ne durst adventure rashly in to wend,³
 But of their first intent gan make new dout
 For dread of daunger, which it might portend :
 Untill the hardy Mayd (with Love to frend)⁴
 First entering, the dreadful Mage⁵ there fownd
 Deepe busied 'bout worke of wondrous end,
 And writing straunge charácters in the grownd,
 With which the stubborne feendes he to his service bownd.

XV.

He nought was moved at their entraunce bold,
 For of their comming well he wist⁶ afore ;

¹ *Whiloms*, formerly.⁴ *To frend*, for a friend.² *Hight*, was named.⁵ *Mage*, magician.³ *Wend*, go.⁶ *Wist*, knew.

XIII. 3. — *Wondrously begotten*.] The father of Merlin was a demon, and his mother an English maiden of distinction, who afterwards became a nun. The reader will find a full account of his extraordinary origin and birth in the first volume of Ellis's *Specimens of Early English Metrical Romances*. See also Dunlop's *History of Fiction*, vol. I. p. 204.

XIII. 7. — *Mathtraval*.] "Roderic the Great (see stanza XLVIII.) divided Wales into three provinces, Aberffraw, Dinevowr, and Mathtraval." — CHURCH.

XIV. 3. — *Gan make new dout*.] Began to feel new apprehensions.

Yet list them bid their businesse to unfold,
 As if ought in this world in secrete store
 Were from him hidden, or unknowne of yore.
 Then Glaucè thus ; “ Let not it thee offend,
 That we thus rashly through thy darksom dore
 Unwares have prest ; for either fatall end,
 Or other mightie cause, us two did hether send.”

XVI.

He bad tell on : And then she thus began ;
 “ Now have three moones with borrowd brothers light
 Thrise shined faire, and thrise seemd dim and wan,
 Sith¹ a sore evill, which this Virgin bright
 Tormenteth and doth plunge in dolefull plight,
 First rooting tooke ; but what thing it mote bee,
 Or whence it sprong, I cannot read² aright :
 But this I read,³ that, but if³ remedee
 Thou her afford, full shortly I her dead shall see.”

XVII.

Therewith th' Enchaunter softly gan to smyle
 At her smooth speeches, weeting⁴ inly well
 That she to him dissembled womanish guyle,
 And to her said ; “ Beldame, by that ye tell
 More neede of leach-crafte⁵ hath your Damozell,
 Then⁶ of my skill : who helpe may have elsewhere,
 In vaine seekes wonders out of magick spell.”
 Th' old woman vox half blanck⁷ those wordes to heare ;
 And yet was loth to let her purpose plaine appeare ;

¹ *Sith*, since. ² *Read*, learn. ³ *But if*, unless.

⁴ *Weeting*, knowing. ⁵ *Leach-crafte*, medical skill. ⁶ *Then*, than

⁷ *Blanck*, confounded, or out of countenance.

XV. 8. — *Fatall end.*] Decree of the fates.

XVII. 3. — *Dissembled womanish guyle.*] Concealed the truth with
 womanish artifice

XVIII.

And to him sayd ; “ Yf any leaches skill,
 Or other learned meanes, could have redrest
 This my deare daughters deepe-engrafted ill,
 Certes ¹ I should be loth thee to molest :
 But this sad evill, which doth her infest,
 Doth course of naturall cause farre exceed,
 And housed is within her hollow brest,
 That either seemes some cursed witches deed,
 Or evill spright, that in her doth such torment breed.”

XIX.

The Wisard could no lenger beare her bord,²
 But, bursting forth in laughter, to her sayd ;
 “ Glauce, what needes this colourable word
 To cloke the cause that hath itselfe bewrayd ³ ?
 Ne ye, fayre Britomartis, thus arayd,
 More hidden are then ⁴ sunne in cloudy vele ;
 Whom thy good fortune, having fate obayd,
 Hath hether brought for succour to appele ;
 The which the Powres to thee are pleased to revele.”

XX.

The doubtfull Mayd, seeing herselfe descryde,
 Was all abasht, and her pure yvory
 Into a cleare carnation suddeine dyde ;
 As fayre Aurora, rysing hastily,
 Doth by her blushing tell that she did lye
 All night in old Tithonus frozen bed,
 Whereof she seemes ashamed inwardly :
 But her olde nurse was nought dishartened,
 But vauntage made of that which Merlin had ared ⁵ ;

¹ Certes, certainly. ² Bord, jest, or pretence.

³ Bewrayd, revealed. ⁴ Then, than. ⁵ Ared, explained.

XXI.

And sayd ; " Sith ¹ then thou knowest all our grieffe,
 (For what doest not thou knowe ?) of grace I pray,
 Pitty our playnt, and yield us meet reliefe !"
 With that the Prophet still awhile did stay,
 And then his spirite thus gan fourth display ;
 " Most noble Virgin, that by fatall ² lore
 Hast learn'd to love, let no whit thee dismay
 The hard beginne ³ that meetes thee in the dore,
 And with sharpe fits thy tender hart oppresseth sore :

XXII.

" For so must all things excellent begin ;
 And eke enrooted deepe must be that tree,
 Whose big embodied braunches shall not lin ⁴
 Till they to hevens hight forth stretched bee.
 For from thy wombe a famous progenee
 Shall spring out of the auncient Trojan blood,
 Which shall revive the sleeping memoree
 Of those same antique peres, the hevens brood,
 Which Greeke and Asian rivers stayned with their blood.

XXIII.

" Renowmed kings, and sacred emperours,
 Thy fruitfull ofspring, shall from thee descend ;
 Brave captaines, and most mighty warriors,
 That shall their conquests through all lands extend,
 And their decayed kingdomes shall amend :
 The feeble Britons, broken with long warre,
 They shall upreare, and mightily defend
 Against their forren foe that commes from farre,
 Till universall peace compound all civill iarre.

¹ *Sith*, since.

³ *Beginne*, beginning.

² *Fatall*, ordained by fate.

⁴ *Lin*, stop.

XXIV.

“ It was not, Britomart, thy wandring eye
 Glauncing unwares in charmed Looking-glas,
 But the streight course of heavenly destiny,
 Led with Eternall Providence, that has
 Guyded thy glaunce, to bring His Will to pas :
 Ne is thy fate, ne is thy fortune ill,
 To love the prowest ¹ Knight that ever was :
 Therefore submit thy wayes unto His Will,
 And doe, by all dew meanes, thy destiny fulfill.”

XXV.

“ But read,²” saide Glaucè, “ thou Magitian,
 What meanes shall she out-seeke, or what waies take ?
 How shall she know, how shall she finde the Man ?
 Or what needes her to toyle, sith ³ fates can make
 Way for themselves their purpose to pertake ?”
 Then Merlin thus ; “ Indeede the fates are firme,
 And may not shrinck, though all the world do shake :
 Yet ought mens good endeouers them confirme,
 And guyde the heavenly causes to their constant terme.

XXVI.

“ The Man, whom heavens have ordaynd to bee
 The spouse of Britomart, is Arthegall :
 He wonneth ⁴ in the land of Fayëree,
 Yet is no Fary borne, ne sib ⁵ at all
 To Elfes, but sprong of seed terrestriall,

¹ Prowest, bravest. ² Read, explain. ³ Sith, since.

⁴ Wonneth, dwelleth. ⁵ Sib, related to.

XXV. 5. — *Their purpose to pertake.*] To make her partake of their purposes, or include her in their plans.

XXVI. 1. — *The Man, &c.*] The fabulous chronicle of British kings is here resumed from the tenth canto of the second book. The narrative there ceases before the reign of Arthur, and commences here after it.

And whylome¹ by false Faries stolne away,
 Whyles yet in infant cradle he did crall ;
 Ne other to himselfe is knowne this day,
 But that he by an Elfe was gotten of a Fay :

XXVII.

“ But sooth² he is the sonne of Gorlois,
 And brother unto Cador, Cornish king ;
 And for his warlike feates renowned is,
 From where the day out of the sea doth spring,
 Untill the closure of the evening :
 From thence him, firmly bound with faithfull band,
 To this his native soyle thou backe shalt bring,
 Strongly to ayde his countrey to withstand
 The powre of forreine Paynims which invade thy land.

XXVIII.

“ Great ayd thereto his mighty puissaunce
 And dreaded name shall give in that sad day ;
 Where also prooffe of thy prow³ valiaunce⁴
 Thou then shalt make, t' increase thy Lover's pray :
 Long time ye both in armes shall beare great sway,
 Till thy wombes burden thee from them do call,
 And his last fate him from thee take away ;

Whylome, formerly.
Sooth, truly.

³ *Prow*, (*preux*, Fr.) brave and loyal.

⁴ *Valiaunce*, valor.

XXVII. 1. — *Gorlots*.] This Gorlois was the Duke of Cornwall Arthur Pendragon, the king of Britain, became enamored of his wife Igana, and having, by Merlin's help, assumed the person of Gorlois, he became by her the father of Arthur ; and after the death of Gorlois he married her. By Gorlois she had also a son Cador. So far the chronicles and romances. Spenser represents her as having another son by Gorlois, that is, Arthegall.

XXVII. 6. — *From them*.] From Fairy land.

Too rathe¹ cut off by practise criminall
Of secrete foes, that him shall make in mischiefe fall.

XXIX.

“With thee yet shall he leave, for memory
Of his late puissance, his ymage dead,
That living him in all activity
To thee shall represent: He, from the head
Of his coosen Constantius, without dread
Shall take the crowne that was his fathers right,
And therewith crowne himsele in th’ others stead:
Then shall he issew forth with dreadfull might
Against his Saxon foes in bloody field to fight.

XXX.

“Like as a lyon that in drowsie cave
Hath long time slept, himsele so shall he shake;
And, comming forth, shall spred his banner brave
Over the troubled South, that it shall make
The warlike Mertians for feare to quake:
Thise shall he fight with them, and wise shall win;
But the third time shall fayre accordaunce make:
And, if he then with victorie can lin,²
He shall his dayes with peace bring to his earthly In.

XXXI.

“His sonne, hight³ Vortipore, shall him succede
In kingdome, but not in felicity:
Yet shall he long time warre with happy speed,
And with great honour many batteills try;
But at the last to th’ importunity

¹ *Rathe*, early.² *Lin*, stop.³ *Hight*, called.

XXX. 5. — *Mertians*.] Mercia was one of the kingdoms of the Saxon Heptarchy.

XXX. 9. — *Earthly In*.] Death, or the grave.

Of froward fortune shall be forst to yield :
 But his sonne Malgo shall full mightily
 Avenge his fathers losse with speare and shield,
 And his proud foes discomfit in victorious field.

XXXII.

“ Behold the Man ! and tell me, Britomart,
 If ay more goodly creature thou didst see ?
 How like a gyaunt in each manly part
 Beares he himselfe with portly maiestee,
 That one of th’ old heroës seemes to bee !
 He the six Islands, comprovinciall ¹
 In auncient times unto great Britainee,
 Shall to the same reduce, and to him call
 Their sondry kings to do their homage severall.

XXXIII.

“ All which his sonne Careticus awhile
 Shall well defend, and Saxons powre suppress ;
 Untill a straunger king, from unknowne soyle
 Arriving, him with multitude oppresse ;
 Great Gormond, having with huge mightinesse
 Ireland subdewd, and therein fixt his throne,
 Like a swift otter, fell through emptinesse, ²
 Shall overswim the sea with many one
 Of his Norveyses, ³ to assist the Britons fone. ⁴

¹ *Comprovinciall to*, contained in the same province with.

² *Fell through emptinesse*, cruel through hunger.

³ *Norveyses*, Norwegians. ⁴ *Fone*, foes.

XXXII. 6. — *The six Islands.*] These islands are stated to be Ireland, Iceland, Gothland, the Orkneys, *Norway*, and *Dacia*.

XXXIII. 5. — *Great Gormond.*] This Gormond is called a king of the Africans, and yet, by a strange confusion of latitude, is represented as the captain of the Norwegian pirates.

XXXIV.

“ He in his furie all shall over-ronne,
 And holy church with faithlesse handes deface,
 That thy sad people, utterly fordonne,¹
 Shall to the utmost mountaines fly apace :
 Was never so great waste in any place,
 Nor so fowle outrage doen by living men ;
 For all thy citties they shall sacke and race,²
 And the greene grasse that groweth they shall bren,³
 That even the wilde beast shall dy in starved den.

XXXV.

“ Whiles thus thy Britons doe in languour pine,
 Proud Etheldred shall from the North arise,
 Serving th’ ambitious will of Augustine,
 And, passing Dee, with hardy enterprise
 Shall backe repulse the valiaunt Brockwell twice,
 And Bangor with massácred martyrs fill ;
 But the third time shall rew⁴ his fool-hardise :
 For Cadwan, pitying his peoples ill,
 Shall stoutly him defeat, and thousand Saxons kill.

XXXVI.

“ But, after him, Cadwallin mightily
 On his sonne Edwin all those wrongs shall wreake ;
 Ne shall availe the wicked sorcery

¹ *Fordonne*, undone. ² *Race*, raze. ³ *Bren*, burn. ⁴ *Rew*, pity.

XXXV. 2. — *Proud Etheldred.*] In this stanza we have a glimmering of authentic history. In the beginning of the seventh century, Ethel-frith, the king of Bernicia, defeated the Welsh under Broemail, near Bangor, with great slaughter. *Turner's ANGLLO-SAXONS*, vol. i. 333. — But this was not until after the death of St. Augustine, who introduced Christianity among the Anglo-Saxons.

XXXVI. 1. — *Cadwallin mightily.*] In 633, Edwin, the king of Northumbria, was defeated by Cadwallon, king of North Wales, and slain.

Of false Pellite his purposes to breake,
 But him shall slay, and on a gallowes bleak
 Shall give th' enchaunter his unhappy hire :
 Then shall the Britons, late dismayd and weake,
 From their long vassallage gin to respire,
 And on their Paynim foes avenge their ranckled ire.

XXXVII.

“ Ne shall he yet his wrath so mitigate,
 Till both the sonnes of Edwin he have slayne,
 Offricke and Osricke, twinnes unfortunate,
 Both slaine in battaile upon Layburne playne,
 Together with the king of Louthiane,
 Hight¹ Adin, and the king of Orkeny,
 Both ioynt partakers of their fatall payne :
 But Penda, fearefull of like desteney,
 Shall yield himselfe his liegeman, and sweare féalty :

XXXVIII.

“ Him shall he make his fatall instrument
 T' afflict the other Saxons unsubdewd :
 He marching forth with fury insolent
 Against the good king Oswald, who indewd
 With heavenly powre, and by angels reskewd,
 All holding crosses in their hands on hye,
 Shall him defeate withouten blood imbrewd :
 Of which that field for endlesse memory
 Shall Hevenfield be cald to all posterity.

XXXIX.

“ Whereat Cadwallin wroth shall forth issew,
 And an huge hoste into Northumber lead,

¹ *Hight*, called.

XXXVIII. 4. — *King Oswald.*] In 634, Cadwallon was totally defeated by Oswald, king of Bernicia, and slain in battle.

With which he godly Oswald shall subdew,
 And crowne with martiredome his sacred head :
 Whose brother Oswin, daunted with like dread,
 With price of silver shall his kingdome buy ;
 And Penda, seeking him adowne to tread,
 Shall tread adowne, and doe him fowly dye ;
 But shall with gifts his lord Cadwallin pacify.

XL.

“ Then shall Cadwallin die ; and then the raine
 Of Britons eke with him attonce shall dye ;
 Ne shall the good Cadwallader, with paine
 Or powre, be hable it to remedy,
 When the full time, prefixt by destiny,
 Shall be expird of Britons regiment¹ :
 For Heven itselfe shall their successe envý,
 And them with plagues and murrins pestilent
 Consume, till all their warlike puissaunce be spent.

XLI.

“ Yet after all these sorrowes, and huge hills
 Of dying people, during eight yeares space,
 Cadwallader, not yielding to his ills,
 From Armoricke, where long in wretched cace
 He liv'd, retourning to his native place,
 Shal be by vision staide from his intent :
 For th' Heavens have decreëd to displace
 The Britons for their sinnes dew punishment,
 And to the Saxons over-give² their government.

XLII.

“ Then woe, and woe, and everlasting woe,
 Be to the Briton babe that shal be borne
 To live in thraldome of his fathers foe !

¹ Regiment, government.² Over-give, give over.

Late king, now captive; late lord, now forlorne¹;
 The worlds reproch; the cruell victors scome;
 Banisht from princely bowre to wasteful wood!
 O! who shall helpe me to lament and mourne
 The royall seed, the antique Trojan blood,
 Whose empire lenger² here then ever any stood!"

XLIII.

The Damzell was full deepe empassioned
 Both for his grieffe, and for her peoples sake,
 Whose future woes so plaine he fashioned;
 And, sighing sore, at length him thus bespake;
 "Ah! but will Hevens fury never slake,
 Nor vengeaunce huge relent itselfe at last?
 Will not long misery late mercy make,
 But shall their name for ever be defaste,
 And quite from off the earth their memory be raste³?"

XLIV.

"Nay but the terme," sayd he, "is limited,
 That in this thraldome Britons shall abide;
 And the iust revolution measured
 That they as straungers shal be notifide:
 For twise fowre hundreth yeares shal be supplide,
 Ere they to former rule restor'd shal bee,
 And their impörtune⁴ fates all satisfide:
 Yet, during this their most obscuritee, [may see.
 Their beames shall ofts breake forth, that men them faire

XLV.

"For Rhodoricke, whose surname shal be Great,
 Shall of himselfe a brave ensample shew,
 That Saxon kings his friendship shall intreat;

¹ *Forlorne*, ruined.² *Lenger*, longer.³ *Raste*, erased.⁴ *Impörtune*, full of trouble.

And Howell Dha shall goodly well indew
 The salvage minds with skill of iust and trew :
 Then Griffyth Conan also shall upreare
 His dreaded head, and the old sparkes renew
 Of native corage, that his foes shall feare
 Least backe againe the kingdom he from them should beare.

XLVI.

“ Ne shall the Saxons selves all peaceably
 Enjoy the crowne, which they from Britons womne
 First ill, and after ruled wickedly :
 For, ere two hundred yeares be full outronne,
 There shall a Raven, far from rising sunne,
 With his wide wings upon them fiercely fly,
 And bid his faithlesse chickens¹ overronne
 The fruitfull plaines, and with fell cruelty
 In their avenge tread downe the victors surquedry.²”

XLVII.

“ Yet shall a Third both these and thine subdew :
 There shall a Lion from the sea-bord wood
 Of Neustria come roring, with a crew
 Of hungry whelpes, his battailous bold brood,
 Whose clawes were newly dipt in cruddy³ blood.
 That from the Daniske Tyrants head shall rend
 Th’ usurped crowne, as if that he were wood,⁴
 And the spoile of the countrey conquered
 Amongst his young ones shall divide with bountyhed.

¹ *Faithlesse chickens*, heathen brood.² *Surquedry*, insolence.³ *Cruddy*, curdled.⁴ *Wood*, mad.XLVI. 5. — *A Raven.*] This refers to the invasion of the Danes.XLVII. 2. — *A Lion.*] This is William of Normandy. *Neustria* was the ancient name of the north-west part of France.XLVII. 2. — *The sea-bord wood.*] The woods bordering on the sea.

XLVIII.

“Tho,¹ when the terme is full accomplishid,
 There shall a sparke of fire, which hath longwhile
 Bene in his ashes raked up and hid,
 Bee freshly kindled in the fruitfull Ile
 Of Mona, where it lurked in exile ;
 Which shall breake forth into bright burning flame,
 And reach into the house that beares the stile
 Of royall maiesty and soveraine name :
 So shall the Briton blood their crowne againe reclame.

XLIX.

“Thenceforth eternall union shall be made
 Betweene the nations different afore,
 And sacred Peace shall lovingly persuade
 The warlike minds to learne her goodly lore,
 And civile armes to exercise no more :
 Then shall a Royall Virgin raine, which shall
 Stretch her white rod over the Belgicke shore,
 And the great Castle smite so sore withall,
 That it shall make him shake, and shortly learn to fall :

L.

“But yet the end is not” — There Merlin stayd,
 As overcomen of the spirites powre,
 Or other ghastly spectacle dismayd,

¹ *Tho*, then.

XLVIII. 2. — *There shall, &c.*] Llewellyn, the last of the native Welsh princes, made an unsuccessful resistance to Edward I., and was defeated and killed. Edward soon after created his own infant son Prince of Wales.

XLIX. 6. — *A Royall Virgin.*] This is Queen Elizabeth, who assisted the Belgian provinces, and defeated the Armada.

That secretly he saw, yet note¹ discoure² :
 Which suddein fitt and halfe extaticke stoure³
 When the two fearefull wemen saw, they grew
 Greatly confused in behavoure :
 At last, the fury past, to former hew
 Hee turnd againe, and chearfull looks as earst⁴ did shew.

LI.

Then, when themselves they well instructed had
 Of all that needed them to be inquird,
 They both, conceiving hope of comfort glad,
 With lighter hearts unto their home retir'd ;
 Where they in secret counsell close conspird,
 How to effect so hard an enterprize,
 And to possesse⁵ the purpose they desird :
 Now this, now that, twixt them they did devise,
 And diverse plots did frame to maske in strange disguise.

LII.

At last the nourse in her fool-hardy wit
 Conceiv'd a bold devise, and thus bespake ;
 " Daughter, I deeme that counsel aye most fit,
 That of the time doth dew advauntage take :
 Ye see that good king Uther now doth make
 Strong warre upon the Paynim brethren, hight⁶
 Octa and Oza, whome hee lately brake
 Beside Cayr Verolame in victorious fight,
 That now all Britany doth burne in armës bright.

¹ *Note*, could not.⁴ *Earst*, before.² *Discoure*, discover.⁵ *Possesse*, accomplish.³ *Stoure*, paroxysm.⁶ *Hight*, called.

LII. 5. — *King Uther.*] He, it will be remembered, was the father
 of Prince Arthur. See *ante*, stanza XXVII.

LIII.

“ That therefore nought our passage may empeach,¹
 Let us in feigned armes ourselves disguise,
 And our weake hands (Need makes good schollers)
 teach
 The dreadful speare and shield to exercize :
 Ne certes,² daughter, that same warlike wize,
 I weene, would you misseeme ; for ye beene tall
 And large of limbe t’ atchieve an hard emprize ;
 Ne ought ye want but skil, which practize small
 Will bring, and shortly make you a Mayd martiall.

LIV.

“ And, sooth,³ it ought your corage much inflame
 To heare so often, in that royall hous,
 From whence to none inferior ye came,
 Bards tell of many wemen valorous,
 Which have full many feats adventurous
 Performd, in paragone⁴ of proudest men :
 The bold Bunduca, whose victorious
 Exploits made Rome to quake ; stout Guendolen ;
 Renowmed Martia ; and redoubted Emmilen ;

LV.

“ And, that which more then all the rest may sway,
 Late dayes ensample, which these eies beheld :
 In the last field before Menevia,
 Which Uther with those forrein Pagans held,

¹ *Empeach*, (*empacher*, Fr.,) prevent.

² *Certes*, certainly.

³ *Sooth*, truly.

⁴ *Paragone*, rivalry.

LIV. 7.—*Bold Bunduca*.] Or Boadicea, of whom see book II. canto X. stanza LIV. *Guendolen* is mentioned in the same canto, stanza XVII., and *Martia* in stanza XLII.

I saw a Saxon virgin, the which fald
 Great Ulfen thrise upon the bloody playne;
 And, had not Carados her hand withheld
 From rash revenge, she had him surely slayne;
 Yet Carados himselfe from her escapt with payne."

LVI.

"Ah! read,¹" quoth Britomart, "how is she hight²?"
 "Fayre Angela," quoth she, "men do her call,
 No whit lesse fayre then³ terrible in fight:
 She hath the leading of a martiall
 And mightie people, dreaded more then³ all
 The other Saxons, which doe, for her sake
 And love, themselves of her name *Angles* call.
 Therefore, faire Infant, her ensample make
 Unto thyselfe, and equall corage to thee take."

LVII.

Her hart⁴ wordes so deepe into the mynd
 Of the young Damzell sunke, that great desire
 Of warlike armes in her forthwith they tynd,⁵
 And generous stout courage did inspyre,
 That she resolv'd, unweeting⁶ to her syre,
 Advent'rous knighthood on herselfe to don⁷;
 And counseld with her nourse her maides attyre

¹ *Read*, explain.⁵ *Tynd*, kindled.² *Fight*, called.⁶ *Unweeting*, unknown.³ *Then*, than.⁷ *Don*, do on, put on.⁴ *Harty*, hearty, zealous.

LV. 5. — *A Saxon virgin.*] "This Saxon virgin is, I believe, entirely of Spenser's own feigning." — Upton.

LVI. 7. — *Angles.*] The *Angles* were a German tribe who aided the Saxons in subjugating Britain. Spenser's derivation of the name reminds us of that he gives of Germany, in book II. canto X. stanza XXII.

To turne into a massy habergeon¹ ;
 And bad her all things put in readines anon.

LVIII.

Th' old woman nought that needed did omit ;
 But all thinges did conveniently purvay.
 It fortun'd (so time their turne did fitt)
 A band of Britons, ryding on forray
 Few dayes before, had gotten a great pray
 Of Saxon goods ; emongst the which was scene
 A goodly armour, and full rich aray,
 Which long'd² to Angela, the Saxon queene,
 All fretted³ round with gold and goodly wel beseene.

LIX.

The same, with all the other ornaments,
 King Ryence caused to be hanged by
 In his chiefe church, for endlessse monuments
 Of his successe and gladfull victory :
 Of which herselfe avizing⁴ readily,
 In th' evening late old Glaucè thether led
 Faire Britomart, and, that same armory
 Downe taking, her therein appareled
 Well as she might, and with brave bauldrick⁵ garnished.

LX.

Beside those armes there stood a mightie speare,
 Which Bladud made by magick art of yore,
 And usd the same in batteill aye to beare ;
 Sith⁶ which it had beene here preserv'd in store,

¹ *Habergeon*, sleeveless coat of mail ; diminutive of *hauberk*.

² *Long'd*, belonged.

³ *Fretted*, wrought with fret-work.

⁴ *Avising*, bethinking.

⁵ *Bauldrick*, belt.

⁶ *Sith*, since.

For his great virtues proved long afore :
 For never wight so fast in sell¹ could sit,
 But him perforce unto the ground it bore :
 Both speare she tooke and shield which hong by it ;
 Both speare and shield of great powre, for her purpose fit.

LXI.

Thus when she had the Virgin all arayd,
 Another harnesse which did hang thereby
 About herselfe she dight,² that the yong Mayd
 She might in equall armes accompany,
 And as her Squyre attend her carefully :
 Tho³ to their ready steedes they clombe full light ;
 And through back waies, that none might them espy,
 Covered with secret cloud of silent night,
 Themselves they forth conuaid, and passed forward right.

LXII.

Ne rested they, till that to Faery Lond
 They came, as Merlin them directed late :
 Where, meeting with this Redcrosse Knight, she fond
 Of diuise things discourses to dilate,⁴
 But most of Arthegall and his estate.
 At last their wayes so fell, that they mote part :
 Then each to other, well⁵ affectionate,
 Friendship professed with unfained hart :
 The Redcrosse Knight diuerset⁶ ; but forth rode Britomart.

¹ *Sell*, saddle.² *Dight*, put, dispose.³ *Tho*, then.⁴ *Dilate*, enlarge upon.⁵ *Well*, very, like the French *bien*.⁶ *Diuerset*, diverged, turned off.

CANTO IV.

Bold Marinell of Britomart
 Is throwne on the Rich Strond:
 Faire Florimell of Arthur is
 Long followed, but not fond.

I.

WHERE is the antique glory now become,
 That whylome¹ wont in wemen to appeare?
 Where be the brave atchievements doen by some?
 Where be the batteilles, where the shield and speare,
 And all the conquests which them high did reare,
 That matter made for famous poets verse,
 And boastfull men so oft abasht to heare?
 Beene they all dead, and laide in dolefull herse?
 Or doen they onely sleepe, and shall againe reverse²?

II.

If they be dead, then woe is me therefore;
 But if they sleepe, O let them soone awake!
 For all too long I burne with envy sore
 To heare the warlike feates which Homere spake
 Of bold Penthesilee, which made a lake
 Of Greekish blood so ofte in Trojan plaine;

¹ *Whylome*, formerly.

² *Reverse*, return.

II. 5.—*Bold Penthesilee.*] Penthesilea is not mentioned by Homer. She came to the assistance of Priam during the latter years of the Trojan war.

But when I reade, how stout Debora strake
 Proud Sisera, and how Camill' hath slaine
 The huge Orsilochus, I swell with great disdain.

III.

Yet these, and all that els had puissance,
 Cannot with noble Britomart compare,
 Aswell for glorie of great valiaunce,
 As for pure chastitee and vertue rare,
 That all her goodly deedes doe well declare.
 Well worthie stock, from which the branches sprong
 That in late yeares so faire a blossome bare,
 As thee, O Queene, the matter of my song,
 Whose lignage from this Lady I derive along!

IV.

Who when, through speaches with the Redcrosse Knight,
 She learned had th' estate of Arthegall,
 And in each point herselfe informd aright,
 A friendly league of love perpetuall
 She with him bound, and congè¹ tooke withall.
 Then he forth on his iourney did proceede,
 To seeke adventures which mote him befall,
 And win him worship through his warlike deed,
 Which alwaies of his paines he made the chiefest meed.

V.

But Britomart kept on her former course,

¹ Congè, farewell.

II. 7.—*Stout Debora straks.*] This was done by Jacl, and not Deborah. See Judges iv. 21.

II. 9.—*Huge Orsilochus.*] He was killed by Camilla, as mentioned in the *Aeneid*, book VI., 690.

III. 8.—*O Queene.*] Queen Elizabeth.

IV. 9.—*Which alwaies, &c.*] Which (that is, worship or renown) he always esteemed the principal reward of his pains or perils.

Ne ever dofte¹ her armes ; but all the way
 Grew pensive through that amorous discourse,
 By which the Redcrosse Knight did earst² display
 Her Lovers shape and chevalrous aray :
 A thousand thoughts she fashiond in her mind ;
 And in her feigning fancie did pourtray
 Him, such as fittest she for love could find,
 Wise, warlike, personable, courteous, and kind.

VI.

With such selfe-pleasing thoughts her wound she fedd,
 And thought so to beguile her grievous smart ;
 But so her smart was much more grievous bredd,
 And the deepe wound more deep engord her hart,
 That nought but death her dolour³ mote depart.⁴
 So forth she rode, without repose or rest,
 Searching all lands and each remotest part,
 Following the guydance of her blinded guest,
 Till that to the sea-coast at length she her adress.⁵

VII.

There she alighted from her light-foot beast,
 And, sitting downe upon the rocky shore,
 Badd her old Squyre unlace her lofty creast :
 Tho,⁶ having vewd awhile the surges hore
 That gainst the craggy cliffs did loudly rore,
 And in their raging surquedry⁷ disdaynd
 That the fast earth affronted⁸ them so sore,
 And their devouring covetize restraynd ;
 Thereat she sighed deepe, and after thus complaynd :

¹ *Dofte*, put off.⁵ *Adress*, directed her course.² *Earst*, before.⁶ *Tho*, then.³ *Dolour*, grief.⁷ *Surquedry*, insolence.⁴ *Depart*, remove.⁸ *Affronted*, opposed.

VIII.

“Huge sea of sorrow and tempestuous grieffe,
 Wherein my feeble barke is tossed long
 Far from the hoped haven of reliefe,
 Why doe thy cruel billowes beat so strong,
 And thy moyst mountaines each on others throng,
 Threatning to swallow up my fearefull lyfe?
 O, doe thy cruell wrath and spightfull wrong
 At length allay, and stint¹ thy stormy strife,
 Which in these troubled bowels raignes and rageth ryfe!

IX.

“For els my feeble vessell, crazd and crackt
 Through thy strong buffets and outrageous blowes,
 Cannot endure, but needes it must be wrackt
 On the rough rocks, or on the sandy shallowes,
 The whiles that Love it steres, and Fortune rowes:
 Love, my lewd² pilott, hath a restlesse minde;
 And Fortune, boteswaine, no assuraunce knowes;
 But saile withouten starres gainst tyde and winde:
 How can they other doe, sith³ both are bold and blinde!

X.

“Thou god of windes, that raignest in the seas,
 That raignest also in the continent,
 At last blow up some gentle gale of ease,
 The which may bring my ship, ere it be rent,
 Unto the gladsome port of her intent!
 Then, when I shall myselfe in safety see,
 A table, for eternall monument.

¹ *Stint*, stop.² *Lewd*, ignorant.³ *Sith*, since.

X. 7. — *A table, &c.*] It was the custom among the Romans for any one who had escaped shipwreck to express his gratitude by hanging up,

Of thy great grace and my great ieopardie,
Great Neptune, I avow to hallow unto thee!"

XI.

Then sighing softly sore, and inly deepe,
She shut up all her plaint in privy grieve;
(For her great courage would not let her weepe;) ¹
Till that old Glaucè gan with sharpe reprove
Her to restraine, and give her good reliefe
Through hope of those, which Merlin had her told
Should of her name and nation be chiefe,
And fetch their being from the sacred mould
Of her immortal womb, to be in heven enroll.

XII.

Thus as she her recomforted, she spyde
Where far away one, all in armour bright,
With hasty gallop towards her did ryde:
Her dolour ² soone she ceast, and on her dight ³
Her helmet, to her courser mounting light:
Her former sorrow into sudden wrath
(Both coosen ⁴ passions of distroubled spright)
Converting, forth she beates the dusty path:
Love and despyght atonce her corage kindled hath.

XIII.

As, when a foggy mist hath overcast
The face of heven and the cleare ayre engroste, ⁵
The world in darknes dwels; till that at last
The watry southwinde from the seabord coste

¹ *Reprove*, reproof. ² *Dolour*, grief. ³ *Dight*, put.

⁴ *Coosen*, kindred. ⁵ *Engroste*, made thick.

in the temple of Neptune, a tablet or picture representing the circumstances of his danger and escape.

Upblowing doth disperse the vapour lo'ste,¹
 And poures itselfe forth in a stormy showre ;
 So the fayre Britomart, having discloste²
 Her cloudy care into a wrathfull stowre,³
 The mist of griefe dissolv'd did into vengeance powre.

XIV.

Eftsoones,⁴ her goodly shield addressing⁵ fayre,
 That mortall speare she in her hand did take,
 And unto battaill did herselfe prepayre.
 The Knight, approching, sternely her bespake ;
 " Sir Knight, that doest thy voyage rashly make
 By this forbidden way in my despight,
 Ne doest by others death ensample take ;
 I read⁶ thee soone retyre, whiles thou hast might,
 Least afterwards it be too late to take thy flight."

XV.

Ythrid⁷ with deepe disdain of his proud threat,
 She shortly thus ; " Fly they, that need to fly ;
 Wordes fearen⁸ babes : I meane not thee entreat
 To passe ; but maugre⁹ thee will passe or dy : "
 Ne lenger¹⁰ stayd for th' other to reply,
 But with sharpe speare the rest made dearly knowne.
 Strongly the straunge Knight ran, and sturdily
 Strooke her full on the brest, that made her downe
 Decline her head, and touch her crouper with her crown.

¹ *Lo'ste*, dissolved.⁶ *Read*, advise.² *Discloste*, unclosed, let loose.⁷ *Ythrid*, thrilled, pierced, moved.³ *Stowre*, passion.⁸ *Fearen*, frighten.⁴ *Eftsoones*, immediately.⁹ *Maugre*, in spite of.⁵ *Addressing*, adjusting.¹⁰ *Lenger*, longer.

XIV. 6. — *This forbidden way.*] In the romances of chivalry, it is not unfrequent for a knight to station himself at some particular spot, and to compel every one who passes to joust with him.

XVI.

But she againe him in the shield did smite
 With so fierce furie and great puissance,
 That, through his three-square scuchin¹ percing quite
 And through his mayled hauberque,² by mischaunce
 The wicked steele through his left side did glaunce:
 Him so transfixed she before her bore
 Beyond his croupe, the length of all her launce;
 Till, sadly soucing³ on the sandy shore,
 He tumbled on an heape, and wallowd in his gore.

XVII.

Like as the sacred oxe that carelesse stands
 With gilden hornes and flowry girlonds crownd,
 Proud of his dying honor and deare bandes,
 Whiles th' altars fume with frankincense arownd,
 All suddainly with mortall stroke astownd
 Doth groveling fall, and with his streaming gore
 Distaines the pillours and the holy grownd,
 And the faire flowres that decked him afore:
 So fell proud Marinell upon the Pretious Shore.

XVIII.

The martiall Mayd stayd not him to lament,
 But forward rode, and kept her ready way
 Along the Strond; which, as she over-went,
 She saw bestowed all with rich aray
 Of pearles and pretious stones of great assay,⁴
 And all the gravell mixt with golden owre:
 Whereat she wondred much, but would not stay
 For gold, or perles, or pretious stones, an howre,
 But them despised all; for⁵ all was in her powre.

¹ *Scuchin*, escutcheon on his shield.

² *Hauberque*, sleeveless coat of mail. ³ *Soucing*, falling.

⁴ *Assay*, value.

⁵ *For*, notwithstanding

XIX.

Whiles thus he lay in deadly stonishment,
 Tydings hereof came to his mothers eare ;
 His mother was the blacke-browd Cymoënt,
 The daughter of great Nereus, which did beare
 This warlike sonne unto an earthly peare,
 The famous Dumarin ; who on a day
 Finding the nymph asleepe in secret wheare,¹
 As he by chaunce did wander that same way,
 Was taken with her love, and by her closely lay.

XX.

There he this Knight of her begot, whom boræ
 She, of his father, Marinell did name ;
 And in a rocky cave as wight forlorne
 Long time she fostred up, till he became
 A mighty man at armes, and mickle² fame
 Did get through great adventures by him donne :
 For never man he suffred by that same
 Rich Strond to travell, whereas he did wonne,³
 But that he must do battail with the Sea-nymphes sonne.

XXI.

An hundred Knights of honorable name
 He had subdew'd, and them his vassals made :
 That through all Faerie Lond his noble fame
 Now blazed was, and feare did all invade,
 That none durst passen through that perilous glade :
 And, to advaunce his name and glory more,

¹ *Wheare*, retired place. ² *Mickle*, much. ³ *Wonne*, dwell.

XX. 2. — *Marinell*.] Upton conjectures that Lord Howard, the Lord High Admiral of England, is imaged under the character of Marinell, and that there is, in stanza XXII., an allusion to the rich prizes taken by him from the Spaniards.

Her sea-god syre she dearely did perswade
 T' endow her sonne with threasure and rich store
 Bove all the sonnes that were of earthly wombes ybore.¹

XXII.

The god did graunt his daughters deare demaund,
 To doen his nephew² in all riches flow :
 Eftsoones³ his heaped waves he did commaund
 Out of their hollow bosome forth to throw
 All the huge threasure, which the sea below
 Had in his greedy gulfe devoured deepe,
 And him enriched through the overthrow
 And wreckes of many wretches, which did weepe
 And often wayle their wealth which he from them did keepe.

XXIII.

Shortly upon that Shore there heaped was
 Exceeding riches and all pretious things,
 The spoyle of all the world ; that it did pas⁴
 The wealth of th' East, and pompe of Persian kings :
 Gold, amber, yvorie, perles, owches,⁵ rings,
 And all that els was pretious and deare,
 The sea unto him voluntary brings ;
 That shortly he a great Lord did appeare,
 As was in all the Lond of Faery, or elsewheare.

XXIV.

Thereto⁶ he was a doughty dreaded Knight,
 Tryde often to the scath of many deare,
 That none in equall arnes him matchen might :
 The which his mother seeing gan to feare

¹ *Ybore*, born.² *Nephew*, grandson.³ *Eftsoones*, immediately.⁴ *Pas*, surpass.⁵ *Owches*, jewels.⁶ *Thereto*, besides.

XXIV. 2. — *Tryde often, &c.*] Often dearily tried to the scath or hurt of many.

Least his too haughtie hardines¹ might reare
 Some hard mishap in hazard of his life :
 Forthy² she oft him counseld to forbear
 The bloody batteill, and to stirre up strife,
 But after all his warre to rest his wearie knife :

XXV.

And, for his more assuraunce, she inquir'd
 One day of Proteus by his mighty spell
 (For Proteus was with prophecy inspir'd)
 Her deare sonnes destiny to her to tell,
 And the sad end of her sweet Marinell :
 Who, through foresight of his eternall skill,
 Bad her from womankind to keepe him well ;
 For of a woman he should have much ill ;
 A Virgin straunge and stout him should dismay³ or kill.

XXVI.

Forthy¹ she gave him warning every day
 The love of women not to entertaine ;
 A lesson too, too hard for living clay,
 From love in course of nature to refraine !
 Yet he his mothers lore did well retaine,
 And ever from fayre Ladies love did fly ;
 Yet many Ladies fayre did oft complaine,
 That they for love of him would algates⁴ dy :
 Dy, whoso list for him, he was Loves enemy.

XXVII.

But ah ! who can deceive his destiny,
 Or weene by warning to avoyd his fate ?
 That, when he sleepes in most security
 And safest seemes, him soonest doth amate,⁵

¹ *Hardines*, boldness. ² *Forthy*, therefore. ³ *Dismay*, defeat.

⁴ *Algates*, at any rate. ⁵ *Amate*, subdue.

And findeth dew effect or soone or late ;
 So feeble is the powre of fleshly arme !
 His mother bad him womens love to hate,
 For she of womans force did feare no harme ;
 So weening to have arm'd him, she did quite disarme.

XXVIII.

This was that woman, this that deadly wovnd,
 That Proteus prophecide should him dismay ;
 The which his mother vainely did expownd
 To be hart-wounding love, which should assay
 To bring her sonne unto his last decay.
 So tickle¹ be the termes of mortall state
 And full of subtile sophismes, which doe play
 With double sences, and with false debate,
 T^r approve the unknowen purpose of eternall fate.

XXIX.

Too trew the famous Marinell it fownd ;
 Who, through late triall, on that Wealthy Strond
 Inglorious now lies in sencelesse swownd,
 Through heavy stroke of Britomartis hond.
 Which when his mother deare did understand,
 And heavy tidings heard, whereas she playd
 Amongst her watry sisters by a pond,
 Gathering sweete daffadillyes, to have made
 Gay girlonds from the sun their forheads fayr to shade ;

XXX.

Eftsoones² both flowres and girlonds far away
 She flong, and her faire deawy lockes yrent ;
 To sorrow huge she turnd her former play,

¹ *Tickle*, uncertain.² *Eftsoones*, immediately.

XXVIII. 8. — *False debate*.] Contest or uncertainty between two meanings.

And gamesom merth to grievous dreriment¹ :
 Shee threw herselfe downe on the continent,²
 Ne word did speake, but lay as in a swowne,
 Whiles all her sisters did for her lament
 With yelling outcries, and with shrieking sowne ;
 And every one did teare her girlond from her crowne.

XXXI.

Soone as she up out of her deadly fitt
 Arose, she bad her charett to be brought ;
 And all her sisters, that with her did sitt,
 Bad eke attonce their charets to be sought :
 Tho,³ full of bitter grieffe and pensive thought,
 She to her wagon clombe ; clombe all the rest,
 And forth together went, with sorow fraught :
 The waves obedient to theyre beheast
 Them yielded ready passage, and their rage surceast.⁴

XXXII.

Great Neptune stoode amazed at their sight,
 Whiles on his broad rownd backe they softly slid,
 And eke himselfe mournd at their mournful plight,
 Yet wist not what their wailing ment, yet did,
 For great compassion of their sorow, bid
 His mighty waters to them buxome⁵ bee :
 Eftesoones⁶ the roaring billowes still abid,⁷
 And all the griesly monsters of the see
 Stood gaping at their gate,⁸ and wondred them to see.

XXXIII.

A teme of dolphins raunged in aray
 Drew the smooth charett of sad Cymoënt ;
 They were all taught by Triton to obay

¹ *Dreriment*, sorrow.⁵ *Buxome*, yielding.² *Continent*, ground.⁶ *Eftesoones*, immediately.³ *Tho*, then.⁷ *Abid*, abode, or remained.⁴ *Surceast*, entirely ceased.⁸ *Gate*, procession, or passage.

To the long raynes at her commaundement:
 As swifte as swallowes on the waves they went,
 That their brode flaggy¹ finnes no fome did reare,
 Ne bubling rowndell² they behinde them sent;
 The rest, of other fishes drawn weare,
 Which with their finny oars the swelling sea did sheare.³

XXXIV.

Soone as they bene arriv'd upon the brim
 Of the Rich Strond, their charets they forlore,⁴
 And let their temed⁵ fishes softly swim
 Along the margent of the fomy shore,
 Least they their finnes should bruze, and surbate⁶
 sore
 Their tender feete upon the stony grownd:
 And comming to the place, where all in gore
 And cruddy⁷ blood enwallowed they fownd
 The lucklesse Marinell lying in deadly swownd,

XXXV.

His mother swowned thrise, and the third time
 Could scarce recovered bee out of her paine;
 Had she not beene devoide of mortall slime,⁸
 She should not then have bene relyv'd⁹ againe:
 But, soone as life recovered had the raine,
 Shee made so piteous mone and deare wayment,¹⁰
 That the hard rocks could scarce from tears refraine:
 And all her sister nymphes with one consent
 Supplide her sobbing breaches with sad complement.

¹ *Flaggy*, loose.⁶ *Surbate*, batter.² *Rowndell*, bubbles, or clusters of foam.⁷ *Cruddy*, curdled.³ *Sheare*, divide.⁸ *Slime*, clay.⁴ *Forlore*, left.⁹ *Relyv'd*, brought to life.⁵ *Temed*, yoked in a team.¹⁰ *Wayment*, lamentation.

XXXV. 8.—*And all her sister nymphes, &c.*] Her sister nymphes fill up the intervals of her sobbing with their own lamentations.

XXXVI.

“Deare image of myselfe,” she sayd, “that is
 The wretched sonne of wretched mother borne,
 Is this thine high advaancement? O! is this
 Th’immortall name, with which thee yet unborne
 Thy grandsire Nereus promist to adorne?
 Now lyst thou of life and honor reste¹;
 Now lyst thou a lumpe of earth forlorne;
 Ne of thy late life memory is lefte;
 Ne can thy irrevocable desteny bee wefte!²”

XXXVII.

“Fond³ Proteus, father of false prophecis!
 And they more fond³ that credit to thee give!
 Not this the worke of womans hand ywis,⁴
 That so deepe wound through these deare members
 drive.
 I feared love; but they that love doe live;
 But they that dye, doe nether love nor hate:
 Nath’lesse to thee thy folly I forgive;
 And to myselfe, and to accursed fate,
 The guilt I doe ascribe: deare wisdom bought too late!

XXXVIII.

“O! what availes it of immortall seed
 To beene ybredd⁵ and never borne to dye?
 Farre better I it deeme to die with speed
 Then⁶ waste in woe and wayfull misery:
 Who dyes, the utmost dolor⁷ doth aby⁸;
 But who that lives, is lefte to waile his losse:
 So life is losse, and death felicity:

¹ *Reste*, deprived. ² *Wefte*, waived, or avoided.

³ *Fond*, foolish. ⁴ *Ywis*, surely.

⁵ *To beene ybredd*, to have been bred, or created.

⁶ *Then*, than. ⁷ *Dolor*, grief. ⁸ *Abye*, abide, endure.

Sad life worse than glad death ; and greater crosse
To see frends grave, then dead the grave selfe to engrosse.¹

XXXIX.

“ But if the heavens did his days envie,
And my short blis maligne² ; yet mote they well
Thus much afford me, ere that he did die,
That the dim eies of my deare Marinell
I mote have closed, and him bed farewell,
Sith³ other offices for mother meet
They would not graunt ——
Yett ! maulgre⁴ them, farewell, my sweetest Sweet !
Farewell, my sweetest sonne, sith³ we no more shall meet ! ”

XL.

Thus when they all had sorowed their fill,
They softly gan to search his griesly wownd :
And, that they might him handle more at will,
They him disarmd ; and, spredding on the ground
Their watchet⁵ mantles frindgd with silver rownd,
They softly wipt away the gelly blood
From th' orifice ; which having well upbownd,
They poured in souveraine balme and nectar good,
Good both for ertly med'cine and for hevenly food.

XLI.

Tho,⁶ when the lilly-handed Liagore
(This Liagore whilome⁷ had learned skill
In leaches craft, by great Apolloes lore,
Sith³ her whilome⁷ upon high Pindus hill

¹ *Engrosse*, occupy.⁵ *Watchet*, blue.² *Maligne*, grudge.⁶ *Tho*, then.³ *Sith*, since.⁷ *Whilome*, formerly.⁴ *Maulgre*, in spite of.

He loved, and at last her wombe did fill
 With heavenly seed, whereof wise Pæon sprong,)
 Did feele his pulse, shee knew there staid still
 Some litle life his feeble sprites among ;
 Which to his mother told, despeyre she from her slong.

XLII.

Tho,¹ up him taking in their tender hands,
 They easely unto her charett beare :
 Her teme at her commaundement quiet stands,
 Whiles they the corse into her wagon reare,
 And strowe with flowres the lamentable beare :
 Then all the rest into their coches clim,
 And through the brackish waves their passage sheare² ;
 Upon great Neptunes necke they softly swim,
 And to her watry chamber swiftly carry him.

XLIII.

Deepe in the bottome of the sea, her bowre³
 Is built of hollow billowes heaped hye,
 Like to thicke clouds that threat a stormy showre,
 And vaulted⁴ all within like to the skye,
 In which the gods doe dwell eternally :
 There they him laide in easy couch well dight⁵ ;
 And sent in haste for Tryphon, to apply
 Salves to his wounds, and medicines of might :
 For Tryphon of sea-gods the souveraine leach is hight.⁶

¹ *Tho*, then.² *Sheare*, cut.³ *Bowre*, chamber, dwelling.⁴ *Vaulted*, vaulted.⁵ *Dight*, disposed.⁶ *Hight*, called.

fortune to see the grave of a friend, than, dead, to engross or occupy the grave itself.'

XLIII. 9.—*For Tryphon of sea-gods, &c.*] Tryphon's medical diploma is of Spenser's own conferring. There is no "leech of the sea-gods" in classical mythology.

XLIV.

The whiles the nymphes sitt all about him rownd,
 Lamenting his mishap and heavy plight ;
 And ofte his mother, vewing his wide wound,
 Cursed the hand that did so deadly smight
 Her dearest sonne, her dearest harts delight :
 But none of all those curses overtooke
 The warlike Maide, th' ensample of that might ;
 But fayrely well she thryvd, and well did brooke¹
 Her noble deedes, ne her right course for ought forsooke.

XLV.

Yet did false Archimage her still pursew,
 To bring to passe his mischievous intent,
 Now that he had her singled from the crew
 Of courteous Knights, the Prince and Fary gent,²
 Whom late in chace of Beauty excellent
 Shee lefte, pursewing that same foster³ strong ;
 Of whose fowle outrage they impatient,
 And full of firy zeale, him followed long,
 To reskew her from shame, and to revenge her wrong.

XLVI.

Through thick and thin, through mountains and through
 playns,

¹ *Brook*, bear. ² *Gent*, accomplished. ³ *Foster*, forester.

XLIV. 5.—*Her dearest harts delight.*] This portion of the narrative is resumed in the eleventh canto of the fourth book.

XLIV. 7.—*Th' ensample of that might.*] Who had given this specimen of her power.

XLIV. 8.— *Well did brooke*
Her noble deedes.] Found nothing to reproach herself with in her noble deeds.

XLV. 4.—*The Prince and Fary gent.*] Prince Arthur and Sir Guyon. The narrative is resumed from canto I. stanza XVIII.

Those two great Champions did attonce pursew
 The fearefull Damzell with incessant payrs ;
 Who from them fled, as light-foot hare from vew
 Of hunter swifte and sent¹ of howndës trew.
 At last they came unto a double way ;
 Where, doubtfull which to take, her to reskëw,
 Themselves they did dispart,² each to assay
 Whether more happy were to win so goodly pray.

XLVII.

But Timias, the Princes gentle Squyre,
 That Ladies love unto his Lord forlent,³
 And with proud envy and indignant yre
 After that wicked foster⁴ fiercely went :
 So beene they Three three sondry wayes ybent :
 But fayrest fortune to the Prince befell ;
 Whose chaunce it was, that soone he did repent,
 To take that way in which that Damozell
 Was fledd afore, affraid of him as feend of hell.

XLVIII.

At last of her far off he gained vew :
 Then gan he freshly pricke his fomy steed,
 And ever as he nigher to her drew,
 So evermore he did increase his speed,
 And of each turning still kept wary heed :

¹ *Sent, scent.*³ *Forlent, gave up.*² *Dispart, divide.*⁴ *Foster, forester.*

XLVII. 5. — *They Three.*] That is, Prince Arthur and Sir Guyon, who were both pursuing the lady, and Timias, who was in chase of the forester.

XLVII. 7. — *That soone he did repent.*] This is a parenthesis. It chanced to Prince Arthur to take the way the lady had gone, which, however, he had occasion to repent or regret, because (as will be seen directly) his hopes were raised only to be disappointed.

Alowd to her he oftentimes did call
 To doe away vaine doubt and needlesse dreed :
 Full myld to her he spake, and oft let fall
 Many meeke wordes to stay and comfort her withall.

XLIX.

But nothing might relent¹ her hasty flight ;
 So deepe the deadly feare of that foule swaine
 Was earst² impressed in her gentle spright :
 Like as a fearefull dove, which through the raine³
 Of the wide ayre her way does cut amaine,
 Having farre off espyde a tassell gent,
 Which after her his nimble winges doth straine,
 Doubleth her hast for feare to bee for-hent,⁴
 And with her pineons cleaves the liquid firmament.

L.

With no lesse hast, and eke with no lesse dreed,
 That fearefull Ladie fledd from him that ment
 To her no evill thought nor evill deed ;
 Yet former feare of being fowly shent⁵
 Carried her forward with her first intent :
 And though, oft looking backward, well she vewde
 Herselfe freed from that foster⁶ insolent,
 And that it was a Knight which now her sewde,⁷
 Yet she no lesse the Knight feard then⁸ that Villein rude.

¹ *Relent*, slacken.⁵ *Shent*, outraged.² *Earst*, before.⁶ *Foster*, forester.³ *Raine*, kingdom, realm.⁷ *Sewde*, pursued.⁴ *For-hent*, taken before she
can escape.⁸ *Then*, than.

XLIX. 6. — *Tassell gent.*] Or *tassel gentle*, as it is called in *Romeo and Juliet*, act II. scene II. — a kind of goshawk, called *gentle*, from the ease with which it is tamed, and its attachment to man.

LI.

His uncouth¹ shield and straunge armes her dismayd,
 Whose like in Faery Lond were seldom seene ;
 That fast she from him fledd, no lesse afrayd
 Then² of wilde beastes if she had chased beene :
 Yet he her followd still with corage keene
 So long, that now the golden Hesperus
 Was mounted high in top of heaven sheene,³
 And warnd his other brethren ioyeous
 To light their blessed lamps in Loves eternall hous.

LII.

All suddainly dim wox⁴ the dampish ayre,
 And griesly shadowes covered heaven bright,
 That now with thousand starres was decked fayre :
 Which when the Prince beheld, a lothfull⁵ sight,
 And that perforce, for want of lenger⁶ light,
 He mote⁷ surceasse⁸ his suit and lose the hope
 Of his long labour ; he gan fowly wyte⁹
 His wicked fortune that had turnd aslope,
 And cursed Night that reft from him so goodly scope.

LIII.

Tho,¹⁰ when her wayes he could no more descry,
 But to and fro at disaventure strайд ;
 Like as a ship, whose lodestar suddainly
 Covered with clouds her pilott hath dismayd ;

¹ *Uncouth*, unknown, strange.⁶ *Lenger*, longer.² *Then*, than.⁷ *Mote*, must.³ *Sheene*, shining.⁸ *Surceasse*, cease from.⁴ *Wox*, waxed.⁹ *Wyte*, reproach⁵ *Lothfull*, unpleasant.¹⁰ *Tho*, then.

LI. 1. — *His uncouth shield.*] Prince Arthur's shield, it will be recollected, was covered with a veil.

LII. 9. — *So goodly scope.*] So fair an object.

His wearisome pursuit perforce he stayd,
 And from his loftie steed dismounting low
 Did let him forage: downe himselfe he layd
 Upon the grassy ground to sleepe a throw¹;
 The cold earth was his couch, the hard steele his pillow.

LIV.

But gentle Sleepe envyde him any rest;
 Instead thereof sad sorow and disdaine
 Of his hard hap did vex his noble brest,
 And thousand Fancies bett his ydle brayne
 With their light wings, the sights of semblants² vaine:
 Oft did he wish that Lady faire mote bee
 His Faery Queene, for whom he did complaine;
 Or that his Faery Queene were such as shee:
 And ever hasty Night he blamed bitterlie:

LV.

“Night! thou foule mother of annoyaunce sad,
 Sister of heavie Death, and nourse of Woe,
 Which wast begot in heaven, but for thy bad
 And brutish shape thrust downe to hell below,
 Where, by the grim floud of Cocytus slow,
 Thy dwelling is in Herebus black hous,
 (Black Herebus, thy husband, is the foe
 Of all the gods,) where thou ungratious
 Halfe of thy dayes doest lead in horreur hideous;

LVI.

“What had th’ Eternall Maker need of thee
 The world in his continuall course to keepe,
 That doest all thinges deface, ne lettest see
 The beautie of his worke? Indeed in sleepe
 The slouthfull body that doth love to steepe

¹ *Throw, a while.*² *Semblants, phantoms.*

His lustlesse¹ limbes, and drowne his baser mind,
 Doth praise thee oft, and oft from Stygian deepe
 Calles thee his goddesse, in his errour blind,
 And great dame Natures handmaide chearing every kind.

LVII.

“But well I wote² that to an heavy hart
 Thou art the roote and nourse of bitter cares,
 Breeder of new, renewer of old smarts:
 Instead of rest thou lendest rayling³ teares;
 Instead of sleepe thou sendest troublous feares
 And dreadfull visions, in the which alive
 The dreary image of sad Death appears:
 So from the wearie spirit thou doest drive
 Desired rest, and men of happinesse deprive.

LVIII.

“Under thy mantle black there hidden lye
 Light-shonning Theft, and traiterous Intent,
 Abhorred Bloodshed, and vile Felony,
 Shamefull Deceit, and Daunger imminent,
 Fowle Horror, and eke hellish Dreriment⁴:
 All these I wote² in thy protection bee,
 And light doe shonne, for feare of being sheat⁵:
 For light ylike is loth'd of them and thee:
 And all, that lewdnesse⁶ love, doe hate the light to see.

LIX.

“For day discovers all dishonest wayes,
 And sheweth each thing as it is in deed:
 The prayes of High God he faire displayes,
 And His large bountie rightly doth areed⁷:

¹ *Lustlesse*, listless.⁵ *Sheat*, blamed, shamed.² *Wote*, know.⁶ *Lewdnesse*, evil generally.³ *Rayling*, rolling, flowing.⁷ *Areed*, teach.⁴ *Dreriment*, sorrow.

Dayes dearest children be the blessed seed
 Which Darknesse shall subdue and heaven win :
 Truth is his daughter ; he her first did breed
 Most sacred Virgin without spot of sinne :
 Our life is day ; but death with darknesse doth begin.

LX.

“ O, when will Day then turne to me againe,
 And bring with him his long-expected light !
 O Titan ! hast to reare thy ioyous waine ;
 Speed thee to spread abroad thy beamēs bright,
 And chace away this too long lingring Night ;
 Chace her away, from whence she came, to hell :
 She, she it is, that hath me done despight :
 There let her with the damned spirits dwell,
 And yield her rowme to Day, that can it governe well.”

LXI.

Thus did the Prince that wearie night outweare
 In restlesse anguish and unquiet paine ;
 And earely, ere the Morrow did upreare
 His deawy head out of the ocean maine,
 He up arose, as halfe in great disdaine,
 And clombe unto his steed : So forth he went
 With heavy looke and lumpish¹ pace, that plaine
 In him bewraid great grudge and maltalent² :
 His steed eke seemd t' apply his steps to his intent.

¹ *Lumpish*, slow.² *Maltalent*, ill-will.

LXI. 9.— *T'apply his steps to his intent.*] To accommodate his pace to his state of feeling.

CANTO V.

Prince Arthur hears of Florimell :
 Three fosters¹ Timias wound ;
 Belphœbe findes him almost dead,
 And reareth out of swownd.

I.

WONDER it is to see in diverse mindes
 How diversly Love doth his pageaunts play,
 And shewes his powre in variable kindes² :
 The baser wit, whose ydle thoughts alway
 Are wont to cleave unto the lowly clay,
 It stirreth up to sensuall desire,
 And in lewd slouth to wast his carelesse day ;
 But in brave sprite it kindles goodly fire,
 That to all high desert and honour doth aspire.

II.

Ne suffereth it uncomely Idlennesse
 In his free thought to build her sluggish nest ;
 Ne suffereth it thought of ungentlennesse
 Ever to creepe into his noble brest ;
 But to the highest and the worthiest
 Lifteth it up that els would lowly fall .
 It lettes not fall, it lettes it not to rest ;
 Il lettes not scarce this Prince to breath at all,
 But to his first poursuit him forward still doth call :

¹ *Fosters, foresters.*² *Variable kindes, various modes.*

III.

Who long time wandred through the forest wyde
 To finde some issue thence; till that at last
 He met a Dwarfe that seemed terrifyde
 With some late perill which he hardly past,
 Or other accident which him aghast¹;
 Of whom he asked, whence he lately came,
 And whether now he traueiled so fast:
 For sore he swat, and, ronning through that same
 Thicke forest, was bescracht, and both his feet nigh lame.

IV.

Panting for breath, and almost out of hart,
 The Dwarfe him answerd; "Sir, ill mote I stay
 To tell the same: I lately did depart
 From Faery Court, where I have many a day
 Served a gentle Lady of great sway
 And high accompt throughout all Elfin Land,
 Who lately left the same, and tooke this way:
 Her now I seeke; and if ye understand
 Which way she fared hath, good Sir, tell out of hand."²

V.

"What mister wight,³" saide he, "and how arayd?"
 "Royally clad," quoth he, "in cloth of gold,
 As meetest may beseeme a noble mayd;
 Her faire lockes in rich circlet be enrold,
 A fayrer wight did never sunne behold;
 And on a palfrey rydes more white then⁴ snow,
 Yet she herselfe is whiter manifold;

¹ *Aghast*, terrified.² *Mister wight*, sort of person.³ *Out of hand*, immediately.⁴ *Then*, than.

III. 3. — *He met a Dwarf.*] Who this dwarf was is told us in book
 V. canto II. stanza III.

The surest signe, whereby ye may her know,
Is, that she is the fairest wight alive, I trow."

VI.

"Now certes, Swaine," saide he, "such one, I weene,
Fast flying t'rough this forest from her fo,
A foule ill-favoured foster,¹ I have seene;
Herselfe, well as I might, I reskewd tho,²
But could not stay³; so fast she did foregoe,⁴
Carried away with wings of speedy feare."
"Ah! dearest God," quoth he, "that is great woe,
And wondrous ruth⁵ to all that shall it heare:
But can ye read,⁶ Sir, how I may her finde, or where?"

VII.

"Perdy me lever were to weeten that,"
Saide he, "then ransome of the richest Knight,
Or all the good that ever yet I gat:
But froward fortune, and too forward⁷ night,
Such happinesse did, maulgre, to me spight,
And fro me reft both life and light attone.⁸
But, Dwarfe, aread⁹ what is that Lady bright
That through this forrest wandreth thus alone;
For of her errour straunge I have great ruth⁵ and mone."

¹ Foster, forester.⁶ Read, inform.² Tho, then.⁷ Too forward, coming on too fast.³ Stay, stop, catch.⁸ Attone, at once.⁴ Forego, go forward.⁹ Aread, declare.⁵ Ruth, pity.

VII. 1. — *Perdy me lever, &c.*] 'Indeed I would prefer to know that, than to receive enough to ransom the richest knight.'

VII. 5. — *Maulgre.*] Todd considers this an adverb of imprecation — "Curse on it."

VII. 9. — *For of her errour, &c.*] 'I am greatly concerned that she should wander in such a manner.'—*Error* is used in the sense of the Latin word *error*, wandering.

VIII.

“That Ladie is,” quoth he, “whereso she bee,
 The bountiest Virgin and most debonaire¹
 That ever living eye, I weene, did see:
 Lives none this day that may with her compare
 In stedfast chastitie and vertue rare,
 The goodly ornaments of beauty bright;
 And is ycleped² Florimell the fayre,
 Faire Florimell belov’d of many a Knight,
 Yet she loves none but one, that Marinell is hight³;

IX.

“A Sea-nymphes sonne, that Marinell is hight,³
 Of my deare Dame is loved dearely well;
 In other none, but him, she sets delight;
 All her delight is set on Marinell;
 But he sets nought at all by Florimell:
 For Ladies love his mother long ygoe
 Did him, they say, forwarne through sacred spell:
 But fame now flies, that of a forreine foe
 He is ysleine, which is the ground of all our woe.

X.

“Five daies there be since he (they say) was slaine,
 And fowre since Florimell the court forwent,⁴
 And vowed never to returne againe
 Till him alive or dead she did invent.⁵
 Therefore, faire Sir, for love of knighthood gent⁶

¹ *Debonaire*, gracious.⁴ *Forwent*, left.² *Ycleped*, named.⁵ *Invent*, find.³ *Hight*, named.⁶ *Gent*, accomplished.

VIII. 8.—*Faire Florimell*.] This name is compounded of two Latin words, signifying *honey* and *flowers*, and is expressive of the sweetness and sensitive delicacy of her character.

And honour of trew Ladies, if ye may
 By your good counsell, or bold hardiment,¹
 Or succour her, or me direct the way,
 Do one or other good, I you most humbly pray :

XI.

“ So may ye gaine to you full great renownme
 Of all good Ladies through the worlde so wide,
 And haply in her hart finde highest rowme²
 Of whom ye seeke to be most magnifide !
 At least eternall meede shall you abide.”
 To whom the Prince ; “ Dwarfe, comfort to thee take ;
 For, till thou tidings learne what her betide,
 I here avow thee never to forsake :
 Ill weares he armes, that nill³ them use for Ladies sake.”

XII.

So with the Dwarfe he back retourn'd againe,
 To seeke his Lady, where he mote her finde ;
 But by the way he greatly gan complaine
 The want of his good Squire late left behinde,
 For whom he wondrous pensive grew in minde,
 For doubt⁴ of daunger which mote him betide ;
 For him he loved above all mankinde,
 Having him trew and faithfull ever tride,⁵
 And bold, as ever Squire that waited by Knights side :

XIII.

Who all this while full hardly was assayd⁶
 Of deadly daunger which to him betidd⁷ :
 For, whiles his Lord pursewd that noble Mayd,

¹ *Hardiment*, courage.² *Rowme*, place.³ *Nill*, will not.⁴ *Doubt*, fear.⁵ *Tride*, experienced.⁶ *Assayd*, assailed.⁷ *Betidd*, happened.

After that foster¹ fowle he fiercely ridd
 To bene avenged of the shame he did
 To that faire Damzell: Him he chaced long
 Throught the thicke woods wherein he would have hid
 His shamefull head from his avengement strong,
 And oft him threatned death for his outrageous wrong.

XIV.

Nathlesse the villein sped himselfe so well,
 Whether through swiftnesse of his speedie beast,
 Or knowledge of those woods where he did dwell,
 That shortly he from daunger was releast,
 And out of sight escaped at the least²;
 Yet not escaped from the dew reward
 Of his bad deedes, which daily he increast,
 Ne ceased not, till him oppressed hard
 The heavie plague that for such leachours is prepard.

XV.

For, soone as he was vanisht out of sight,
 His coward courage gan emboldned bee,
 And cast³ t' avenge him of that fowle despight
 Which he had borne of his bold enimee:
 Tho⁴ to his brethren came, (for they were three
 Ungratious children of one gracelesse syre,)
 And unto them complayned how that he
 Had used beene of that foole-hardie Squyre:
 So them with bitter words he stird to bloodie yre.

¹ *Foster*, forester.² *Cast*, purposed.³ *At the least*, at last.⁴ *Tho*, then.

XIV. 2. — *Swiftnesse of his speedie beast.*] The poet does not recollect that he had before represented him as riding on an exhausted steed. See canto I. stanza XVII.

XVI.

Forthwith themselves with their sad instruments
 Of spoyle and murder they gan arme bylive,¹
 And with him fourth into the forrest went
 To wreake the wrath, which he did earst² revive
 In there sterne brests, on him which late did drive
 Their brother to reproch and shamefull flight:
 For they had vow'd that never he alive
 Out of that forest should escape their might;
 Vile rancour their rude harts had filld with such despight.

XVII.

Within that wood there was a covert glade,
 Foreby³ a narrow foord, to them well knowne,
 Through which it was uneath⁴ for wight to wade;
 And now by fortune it was overflowne:
 By that same way they knew that Squyre unknowne
 Mote algates⁵ passe; forthy⁶ themselves they set
 There in await with thicke woods overgrowne,
 And all the while their malice they did whet
 With cruell threats his passage through the ford to let.⁷

XVIII.

It fortun'd, as they devized had,
 The gentle Squyre came ryding that same way,
 Unweeting⁸ of their wile and treason bad,
 And through the ford to passen did assay;
 But that fierce foster,⁹ which late fled away,
 Stoutly fourth stepping on the further shore,
 Him boldly bad his passage there to stay,

¹ *Bylive*, immediately.² *Earst*, just before.³ *Foreby*, near to.⁴ *Uneath*, hardly possible.⁵ *Algates*, at all events.⁶ *Forthy*, therefore.⁷ *Let*, hinder.⁸ *Unweeting*, unknowing.⁹ *Foster*, forester.

Till he had made amends, and full restore¹
 For all the damage which he had him doen afore.

XIX.

With that, at him a quiv'ring dart he threw
 With so fell force, and villenous despite,
 That through his haberieon² the forkehead flew,
 And through the linked mayles empierced quite,
 But had no powre in his soft flesh to bite:
 That stroke the hardy Squire did sore displease,
 But more that him he could not come to smite;
 For by no meanes the high banke he could sease,³
 But labour'd long in that deepe ford with vaine disease.⁴

XX.

And still the foster⁵ with his long bore-speare
 Him kept from landing at his wished will:
 Anone one sent out of the thicket neare
 A cruell shaft headed with deadly ill,
 And fethered with an unlucky quill;
 The wicked steele stayd not till it did light
 In his left thigh, and deepely did it thrill⁶;
 Exceeding grieffe that wound in him empight,⁷
 But more that with his foes he could not come to fight.

XXI.

At least, through wrath and vengeaunce, making way
 He on the bancke arryv'd with mickle⁸ payne;
 Where the third brother him did sore assay,
 And drove at him with all his might and mayne
 A forest-bill, which both his hands did strayne;

¹ *Restore*, restitution.⁵ *Foster*, forester.² *Haberieon*, coat of mail.⁶ *Thrill*, pierce.³ *Sease*, reach.⁷ *Empight*, excited.⁴ *Disease*, uneasiness.⁸ *Mickle*, much.

XXI. 5.—*A forest-bill.*] A *bill* is a kind of hatchet or axe, with a hooked point.

But warily he did avoide the blow,
 And with his speare requited him agayne,
 That both his sides were thrilled¹ with the throw,²
 And a large streame of bloud out of the wound did flow.

XXII.

He, tombling downe, with gnashing teeth did bite
 The bitter earth, and bad to lett him in
 Into the balefull house of endlesse night,
 Where wicked ghosts doe waile their former sin.
 Tho³ gan the battaile freshly to begin ;
 For nathemore⁴ for that spectacle bad
 Did th' other two their cruell vengeaunce blin,⁵
 But both attonce on both sides him bestad,⁶
 And load upon him layd, his life for to have had.

XXIII.

Tho³ when that villayn he aviz'd,⁷ which late
 Affrighted had the fairest Florimell,
 Full of fiers fury and indignat hate
 To him he turned, and with rigor fell
 Smote him so rudely on the pannikell,⁸
 That to the chin he cleft his head in twaine :
 Downe on the ground his carkas groveling fell ;
 His sinfull sowle with desperate disdaine
 Out of her fleshly ferme⁹ fled to the place of paine.

XXIV.

That seeing, now the only last of three

¹ *Thrilled*, pierced.

⁶ *Bestad*, beset.

² *Throw*, thrust.

⁷ *Aviz'd*, perceived.

³ *Tho*, then.

⁸ *Pannikell*, (*panicula*, Lat.) crest.

⁴ *Nathemore*, none the more.

⁹ *Ferme*, lodging.

⁵ *Blin*, cease.

XXII. 9. — *And load, &c.*] Laid a load or weight of blows upon him in order to take his life.

XXIV. 1. — *That seeing, &c.*] 'He who was now the only one of

Who with that wicked shafte him wounded had,
 Trembling with horror, (as that did foresee
 The fearefull end of his avengement sad,
 Through which he follow should his brethren bad,)
 His bootelesse bow in feeble hand upcaught,
 And therewith shott an arrow at the Lad¹;
 Which fayntly fluttring scarce his helmet raught,²
 And glauncing fel to ground, but him annoyed naught.

XXV.

With that, he would have fled into the wood;
 But Timias him lightly overhent,³
 Right as he entring was into the flood,
 And strooke at him with force so violent,
 That headlesse him into the foord he sent;
 The carcas with the streame was carried downe,
 But th' head fell backward on the continent⁴;
 So mischief fel upon the meaners crowne: [nowne:
 They three be dead with shame; the Squire lives with re-

XXVI.

He lives, but takes small ioy of his renowne;
 For of that cruell wound he bled so sore,
 That from his steed he fell in deadly swowne;
 Yet still the blood forth gusht in so great store,
 That he lay wallowd all in his owne gore.
 Now God thee keepe! thou gentlest Squire alive,
 Els shall thy loving Lord thee see no more;

¹ *Lad*, youth.³ *Overhent*, overtook.² *Raught*, reached.⁴ *Continent*, dry land.

the three left, and who had before wounded him with an arrow, trembling with horror,' &c.

XXV. 8.—*The meaners crowne.*] This may signify either the head of him who was mean or base, or the head of him who meant the mischief.

But both of comfort him thou shalt deprive,
And eke thyselſe of honor which thou didst atohive.

XXVII.

Providence heavenly passeth living thought,
And doth for wretched mens reliefe make way ;
For loe ! great grace or fortune thether brought
Comfort to him that comfortlesse now lay.
In those same woods ye well remember may
How that a noble hunteresse did wonne,¹
Shee, that base Braggadochio did affray,²
And made him fast out of the forest ronne ;
Belphœbe was her name, as faire as Phœbus sunne.

XXVIII.

Shee on a day, as shee pursewd the chace
Of some wilde beast, which with her arrowes keene
She wounded had, the same along did trace
By tract of blood, which she had freshly seene
To have besprinckled all the grassy greene ;
By the great persue which she there perceav'd,
Well hoped shee the beast engor'd³ had beene,
And made more haste the life to have bereav'd :
But ah ! her expectation greatly was deceav'd.

XXIX.

Shortly she came whereas that woefull Squire
With blood deformed lay in deadly swownd ;
In whose faire eyes, like lamps of quenched fire,
The christall humor stood congealed rownd ;

¹ *Wonne*, dwell. ² *Affray*, terrify. ³ *Engor'd*, wounded.

XXVII. 5. — *Ye well remember may.*] See book II. canto III. stanza XXI., &c.

XXVIII. 6. — *Persue.*] Church says that this word means *persuit* ; but it seems rather to signify the flow of blood.

His locks, like faded leaves fallen to grownd,
 Knotted with blood in bouches rudely ran ;
 And his sweete lips, on which before that stownd¹
 The bud of youth to blossome faire began,
 Spoild of their rosy red, were woxen² pale and wan.

XXX.

Saw never living eie more heavy sight,
 That could have made a rocke of stone to rew,³
 Or rive in twaine : which when that Lady bright,
 Besides all hope, with melting eies did vew,
 All suddainly abasht shee changed hew,
 And with sterne horror backward gan to start :
 But, when shee better him beheld, shee grew
 Full of soft passion and unwonted smart :
 The point of pittie perced through her tender hart.

XXXI.

Meekely shee bowed downe, to weete⁴ if life
 Yett in his frosen members did remaine ;
 And, feeling by his pulses beating rife⁵
 That the weake sowle her seat did yett retaine,
 Shee cast to comfort him with busy paine⁶ :
 His double-folded necke she reard upright,
 And rubd his temples and each trembling vaine ;
 His mayled haberieon⁷ she did undight,⁸
 And from his head his heavy burganet⁹ did light.¹⁰

XXXII.

Into the woods thenceforth in haste shee went,

¹ *Stownd*, misfortune.

² *Woxen*, waxed, or become.

³ *Rew*, pity.

⁴ *Weete*, know.

⁵ *Rife*, frequent.

⁶ *Paine*, eagerness, anxiety.

⁷ *Haberieon*, coat of mail.

⁸ *Undight*, remove.

⁹ *Burganet*, helmet.

¹⁰ *Light*, take off.

XXX. 4. — *Besides all hope.*] Having no hope that he was alive.

To seeke for hearbes that mote him remedy ;
 For shee of herbes had great intendiment,¹
 Taught of the nympe which from her infancy
 Her nourced had in trew nobility :
 There, whether yt divine tobacco were,
 Or panachæa, or polygony,
 She fownd, and brought it to her patient deare,
 Who al this while lay bleding out his hart-blood neare.

XXXIII.

The soveraine weede betwixt two marbles plaine²
 Shee powdered small, and did in peeces bruze ;
 And then atweene her lilly handës twaine
 Into his wound the juice thereof did scruze³ ;
 And round about, as she could well it uze,
 The flesh therewith she suppled⁴ and did steepe,
 T^o abate all spasme and soke the swelling bruze ;
 And, after having searcht the intuse⁵ deepe,
 She with her scarf did bind the wound, from cold to keepe.

XXXIV.

By this he had sweet life recur'd⁶ agayne,
 And, groning inly deepe, at last his eies,
 His watry eies drizling like deawy rayne,
 He up gan lifte toward the azure skies,
 From whence descend all hopelesse⁷ remedies :

¹ *Intendiment*, knowledge.⁵ *Intuse*, contusion.² *Plaine*, smooth.⁶ *Recur'd*, recovered.³ *Scruze*, squeeze.⁷ *Hopelesse*, unexpected.⁴ *Suppled*, made supple, moistened.

XXII. 6. — *Divine tobacco*.] Warton conjectures that this honorable mention of tobacco was intended as a compliment to Sir Walter Raleigh, by whom it had shortly before been introduced into England.

XXXIII. 5. — *As she could well it uze*.] As she well knew how to do.

Therewith he sigh'd ; and, turning him aside,
 The goodly Maide full of divinities
 And gifts of heavenly grace he by him spide,
 Her bow and gilden quiver lying him beside.

XXXV.

"Mercy ! deare Lord," said he, " what grace is this
 That thou hast shewed to me sinfull wight,
 To send thine Angell from her bowre of blis
 To comfort me in my distressed plight !
 Angell, or goddesse, doe I call thee right ?
 What service may I doe unto thee meete,
 That hast from darkenes me returnd to light,
 And with thy hevenly salves and med'cines sweets
 Hast drest my sinfull wounds ! I kisse thy blessed feete."

XXXVI.

Thereat she blushing said ; " Ah ! gentle Squire,
 Nor goddesse I, nor angell ; but the mayd
 And daughter of a woody nympe, desire
 No service but thy safëty and ayd ;
 Which if thou gaine, I shal be well apayd.¹
 Wee mortall wights, whose lives and fortunes bee
 To commun accidents stil open layd,
 Are bownd with commun bond of frailtee,
 To succor wretched wights whom we captiv'd see."

XXXVII.

By this her damzells, which the former chace
 Had undertaken after her, arryv'd,
 As did Belphebe, in the bloody place,
 And thereby deemd the beast had bene depriv'd
 Of life, whom late their Ladies arow ryv'd² :
 Forth³ the bloody tract they followd fast,

¹ *Apayd*, repaid. ² *Ryv'd*, pierced. ³ *Forthy*, therefore.

And every one to ronne the swiftest stryv'd ;
 But two of them the rest far overpast,
 And where their Lady was arrived at the last.

XXXVIII.

Where when they saw that goodly Boy¹ with blood
 Defowled, and their Lady dresse his wownd,
 They wondred much ; and shortly understood
 How him in deadly cace their Lady fownd,
 And reskewed out of the heavy stownd.²
 Eftsoones³ his warlike courser, which was strайд
 Farre in the woodes whiles that he lay in swownd,
 She made those damzels search ; which being stayd,
 They did him set thereon, and forth with them conveyd.

XXXIX.

Into that forest farre they thence him led
 Where was their dwelling ; in a pleasant glade
 With mountaines rownd about environed
 And mightie woodes, which did the valley shade,
 And like a stately theatre it made
 Spreading itselfe into a spatious plaine ;
 And in the midst a little river plaide
 Emongst the pumy⁴ stones, which seemd to plaine⁵
 With gentle murmure that his course they did restraine.

XL.

Beside the same a dainty place there lay,
 Planted with mirtle trees and laurells greene,
 In which the birds song many a lovely lay
 Of Gods high praise, and of their sweet loves teene,⁶
 As it an earthly paradize had beene :

¹ Boy, youth.² Stownd, affliction.³ Eftsoones, immediately.⁴ Pumy, porous.⁵ Plaine, complain.⁶ Teene, pain.

In whose enclosed shadow there was pight¹
 A faire pavilion, scarcely to be seene,
 The which was al within most richly dight,²
 That greatest princes living it mote well delight.

XLI.

Thether they brought that wounded Squyre, and layd
 In easie couch his feeble limbes to rest.
 He rested him awhile; and then the mayd
 His readie wound with better salves new drest:
 Daily she dressed him, and did the best,
 His grievous hurt to guarish,³ that she might;
 That shortly she his dolour⁴ hath redrest,
 And his foule sore reduced to faire plight:
 It she reduced, but himselfe destroyed quight.

XLII.

O foolish physick, and unfruitfull paine,⁵
 That heales up one, and makes another wound!
 She his hurt thigh to him recurd⁶ againe,
 But hurt his hart, the which before was sound,
 Through an unwary dart which did rebownd
 From her faire eyes and gracious countenance.
 What bootes it him from death to be unbownd,
 To be captived in endlesse duraunce⁷
 Of sorrow and despeyre without aleggeaunce⁸!

XLIII.

Still as his wound did gather, and grow hole,⁹
 So still his hart woxe¹⁰ sore, and health decayd:
 Madnesse to save a part, and lose the whole!

¹ *Pight*, placed.² *Dight*, ornamented.³ *Guarish*, (*guerir*, Fr.) heal.⁴ *Dolour*, pain.⁵ *Paine*, labor.⁶ *Recurd*, restored.⁷ *Duraunce*, bondage.⁸ *Alleggeaunce*, alleviation⁹ *Hole*, sound.¹⁰ *Woxe*, waxed.

Still whenas he beheld the heavenly Mayd,
 Whiles daily playsters to his wownd she layd,
 So still his malady the more increast,
 The whiles her matchlesse beautie him dismayd.¹
 Ah God! what other could he do at least,
 But love so fayre a Lady that his life releast!

XLIV.

Long while he strove in his corageous breast
 With reason dew the passion to subdew,
 And love for to dislodge out of his nest:
 Still when her excellencies he did vew,
 Her souveraine bountie² and celestial hew,
 The same to love he strongly was constraynd:
 But, when his meane estate he did rewev,
 He from such hardy boldnesse was restraynd,
 And of his lucklesse lott and cruell love thus playnd:

XLV.

“Unthankfull wretch,” said he, “is this the meed,
 With which her souverain mercy thou doest quight³?
 Thy life she saved by her gracious deed;
 But thou doest weene with villeanous despight
 To blott her honour and her heavenly light:
 Dye; rather dye then⁴ so disloyally
 Deeme of her high desert, or seeme so light:
 Fayre death it is, to shonne more shame, to dy:
 Dye; rather dye then⁴ ever love disloyally.

XLVI.

“But if, to love, disloyalty it bee,

¹ *Dismayd*, subdued.

³ *Quight*, requite.

² *Bountie*, goodness.

⁴ *Then*, than.

XLV. 8.—*Fayre death, &c.*] Fair death it is to die in order to avoid a greater disgrace.

Shall I then hate her that from deathës dore
 Me brought? ah! farre be such reproch fro mee!
 What can I lesse doe then ¹ her love therefore,
 Sith ² I her dew reward cannot restore?
 Dye; rather dye, and dying doe her serve;
 Dying her serve, and living her adore;
 Thy life she gave, thy life she doth deserve:
 Dye; rather dye then ¹ ever from her service swerve.

XLVII.

“ But, foolish boy, what bootes thy service bace
 To her, to whom the heavens doe serve and sew ³?
 Thou, a meane Squyre of meeke and lowly place;
 She, heavenly borne and of celestiall hew.
 How then? of all Love taketh equall vew:
 And doth not Highest God vouchsafe to take
 The love and service of the basest crew?
 If she will not, dye meekly for her sake:
 Dye; rather dye then ¹ ever so faire love forsake!”

XLVIII.

Thus warreid he long time against his will;
 Till that through weaknesse he was forst at last
 To yield himselfe unto the mightie ill,
 Which, as a victour proud, gan ransack fast
 His inward partes, and all his entrayles wast,
 That neither blood in face nor life in hart
 It left, but both did quite drye up and blast;
 As percing levin,⁴ which the inner part
 Of every thing consumes and calcineth by art.

¹ *Then*, than.³ *Sew*, follow, obey.² *Sith*, since.⁴ *Levin*, lightning.

XLVII. 8.—*If she will not.*] That is, ‘will not vouchsafe to take thy love and service.’

XLVIII. 9.—*Calcineth by art.*] This may mean either by its

XLIX.

Which seeing fayre Belphoebe gan to feare
 Least that his wound were inly well not heald,
 Or that the wicked steele empoysned were :
 Litle shee weend that love he close conceald.
 Yet still he wasted, as the snow congeald
 When the bright sunne his beams thereon doth beat :
 Yet never he his hart to her reveald ;
 But rather chose to dye for sorow great
 Then¹ with dishonourable termes her to entreat.

L.

She, gracious Lady, yet no paines did spare
 To doe him ease, or doe him remedy :
 Many restoratives of vertues rare
 And costly cordialles she did apply,
 To mitigate his stubborne malady :
 But that sweet cordiall, which can restore
 A love-sick hart, she did to him envy² ;
 To him, and to all th' unworthy world forlore,³
 She did envy² that souveraine salve in secret store.

LI.

That daintie rose, the daughter of her morne,
 More deare then¹ life she tendered, whose flowre
 The girlond of her honour did adorne :
 Ne suffred she the middayes scorching powre,
 Ne the sharp northerne wind thereon to showre ;
 But lapped up her silken leaves most chayre,⁴
 Whenso the froward skye began to lowre ;

¹ Then, than.³ Forlore, forlorn, forsaken.² Envy, grudge, deny.⁴ Chayre, chary.

nature or quality, or as completely as if it were done by an artificial process.

But, soone as calmed was the christall ayre,
She did it fayre dispred and let to florish fayre.

LII.

Eternall God, in his almightie powre,
To make ensample of his heavenly grace,
In paradize whylome¹ did plant this Flowre ;
Whence he it fetcht out of her native place,
And did in stocke of earthly flesh enrace,²
That mortall men her glory should admyre.
In gentle Ladies breste and bounteous race
Of woman-kind it fayrest Flowre doth spyre,³
And beareth fruit of honour and all chast desyre.

LIII.

Fayre ympes⁴ of beautie, whose bright shining beames
Adorne the world with like to heavenly light,
And to your willes both royalties and reames⁵
Subdew, through conquest of your wondrous might ;
With this fayre Flowre your goodly girlonds dight⁶
Of Chastity and Vertue virginall,
That shall embellish more your beautie bright,
And crowne your heades with heavenly coronall,
Such as the Angels weare before God's tribunall !

LIV.

To youre faire selves a faire ensample⁷ frame
Of this faire Virgin, this Belpheœbe fayre ;
To whom, in perfect love and spotlesse fame
Of Chastitie, none living may compayre :
Ne poysnous Envy iustly can empayre
The prayse of her fresh-flowring Maydenhead ;
Forthy⁸ she standeth on the highest stayre

¹ *Whylome*, formerly.² *Enrace*, implant.³ *Spyre*, shoot forth.⁴ *Ympes*, daughters.⁵ *Reames*, realms.⁶ *Dight*, adorn.⁷ *Ensample*, model.⁸ *Forthy*, therefore.

Of th' honorable stage of womanhead,
That Ladies all may follow her ensample dead.

LV.

In so great prayse of stedfast Chastity
Nathlesse she was so courteous and kynde,
Tempred with Grace and goodly Modesty,
That seemed those two vertues strove to fynd
The higher place in her heroick mynd:
So striving each did other more augment,
And both encreast the prayse of womankynde,
And both encreast her beautie excellent:
So all did make in her a perfect complement.¹

¹ *Complement*, complete character.

LIV. 9. — *Her ensample dead.*] The example of her dead.

LV. 9. — *A perfect complement.*] The affection of Timias for Belphoebe is supposed to allude to Sir Walter Raleigh's pretended admiration of Queen Elizabeth.

CANTO VI.

The Birth of fayre Belphebe and
Of Amorett is told :
The Gardins of Adonis fraught
With pleasures manifold.

I.

WELL may I weene, faire Ladies, all this while
Ye wonder how this noble Damozell
So great perfections did in her¹ compile,²
Sith³ that in salvage forests she did dwell,
So farre from Court and royall Citadell,
The great schoolmaistresse of all Courtesy :
Seemeth that such wilde woodes should far expell
All civile usage and gentility,
And gentle sprite deforme with rude rusticity.

II.

But to this faire Belphebe in her Berth
The hevens so favorable were and free,
Looking with myld aspect upon the earth
In th' horoscope of her nativitee,
That all the gifts of grace and chastitee
On her they poured forth of plenteous home :
Love laught on Venus from his soverayne see,⁴
And Phœbus with faire beames did her adorne,
And all the Graces rockt her cradle being borne.

¹ *Her*, herself.² *Compile*, combine.³ *Sith*, since.⁴ *See*, dwelling.

III.

Her Berth was of the wombe of morning dew,
 And her conception of the ioyous prime ;
 And all her whole creation did her shew
 Pure and unspotted from all loathly crime
 That is ingenerate in fleshly slime.
 So was this Virgin borne, so was she bred ;
 So was she trayned up from time to time
 In all chaste vertue and true bountihed,¹
 Till to her dew perfection she were ripened.

IV.

Her mother was the faire Chrysogonee,
 The daughter of Amphisa, who by race
 A Faerie was, yborne of high degree :
 She bore Belphœbe ; she bore in like cace
 Fayre Amoretta in the second place :
 These two were twinnes, and twixt them two did share
 The heritage of all celestiall grace ;
 That all the rest it seemd they robbed bare
 Of bounty, and of beautie, and all vertues rare.

V.

It were a goodly storie to declare
 By what straunge accident faire Chrysogone
 Conceiv'd these infants, and how them she bare
 In this wilde forrest wandring all alone,
 After she had nine moneths fulfilled and gone :
 For not as other wemens commune brood
 They were enwombed in the sacred throne

¹ *Bountihed, goodness.*

IV. 1. — *The faire Chrysogonee.*] This mythological pedigree is entirely fanciful, and though Belphœbe is Queen Elizabeth, Chrysogonee is not Anne Boleyn.

Of her chaste bodie ; nor with commune food,
As other wemens babes, they sucked vitall blood :

VI.

But wondrously they were begot and bred
Through influence of th' hevens fruitfull ray,
As it in antique bookes is mentioned.
It was upon a sommers shinie day,
When Titan faire his beamës did display,
In a fresh fountaine, far from all mens vew,
She bath'd her brest the boyling heat t' allay ;
She bath'd with roses red and violets blew,
And all the sweetest flowers that in the forrest grew :

VII.

Till faint through yrkesome wearines adowne
Upon the grassy ground herselfe she layd
To sleepe, the whiles a gentle slombring swowne
Upon her fell all naked bare displayd :
The sunbeames bright upon her body playd,
Being through former bathing mollifide,
And pierst into her wombe ; where they embayd¹
With so sweet sence and secret powre unspide,
That in her pregnant flesh they shortly fructifide.

VIII.

Miraculous may seeme to him that reades
So straunge ensample of conception ;
But reason teacheth that the fruitfull seades
Of all things living, through impression
Of the sunbeames in moyst complexion,
Doe life conceive and quickned are by kynd² :
So, after Nilus inundation,

¹ *Embayd*, bathed.² *Kynd*, nature.VIII. 7. — *So, after Nilus, &c.*] Egypt has always been the land of

Infinite shapes of creatures men doe fynd
 Informed¹ in the mud on which the sunne hath shynd.

IX.

Great father he of generation
 Is rightly cald, th' authour of life and light ;
 And his faire sister for creation
 Ministreth matter fit, which, tempred right
 With heate and humour, breeds the living wight.
 So sprong these twinnes in womb of Chrysgone ;
 Yet wist² she nought thereof, but sore affright
 Wondred to see her belly so upblone,
 Which still increast till she her terme had full outgone.

X.

Whereof conceiving shame and foule disgrace,
 Albe³ her guiltlesse conscience her cleard,
 She fled into the wilderness a space,
 Till that unweedy burden she had reard,⁴
 And shund dishonor which as death she feard :
 Where, wearie of long travaill, downe to rest
 Herselfe she set, and comfortably cheard ;
 There a sad cloud of sleepe her overkest,⁵
 And seized every sence with sorrow sore opprest.

XI.

It fortun'd, faire Venus having lost

¹ *Informed*, imperfectly formed. ² *Wist*, knew. ³ *Albe*, although.
⁴ *Reard*, brought to fulness or maturity. ⁵ *Overkest*, overcast.

wonders. Among the stories found in the classical writers is this which Spenser mentions, that animals of various kinds are generated by the rays of the sun falling upon the fertilizing deposit left by the Nile.

IX. 3. — *His faire sister*.] The moon.

XI. 1. — *Venus having lost, &c.*] This incident was suggested by a very pretty idyl of Moschus, called "Love a fugitive."

Her little sonne, the winged god of love,
 Who for some light displeasure, which him crost,
 Was from her fled as flit as ayery dove,
 And left her blisfull bowre of ioy above ;
 (So from her often he had fled away,
 When she for ought him sharpely did reprove,
 And wandred in the world in straunge aray,
 Disguiz'd in thousand shapes, that none might him bewray ;)

XII.

Him for to seeke, she left her heavenly hous,
 The house of goodly formes and faire aspécts,
 Whence all the world derives the glorious
 Features of beautie, and all shapes select,
 With which High God his workmanship hath deckt ;
 And searched everie way through which his wings
 Had borne him, or his tract she mote detect :
 She promist kisses sweet, and sweeter things,
 Unto the man that of him tydings to her brings.

XIII.

First she him sought in Court, where most he us'd
 Whylome¹ to haunt, but there she found him not ;
 But many there she found which sore accus'd
 His falshood, and with fowle infamous blot
 His cruell deedes and wicked wyles did spot² :
 Ladies and Lordes she every where mote heare
 Complayning, how with his empoysned shot
 Their wofull harts he wounded had whyleare,³
 And so had left them languishing twixt hope and feare.

XIV.

She then the Cities sought from gate to gate,
 And everie one did aske, Did he him see ?

¹ *Whylome*, formerly. ² *Spot*, blame. ³ *Whyleare*, a while ago.

And everie one her answerd, that too late
 He had him seene, and felt the crueltee
 Of his sharpe dartes and whot¹ artilleree:
 And every one threw forth reproches rife²
 Of his mischiévous deedes, and sayd that hee
 Was the disturber of all civill life,
 The enemy of peace, and authour of all strife.

XV.

Then in the Countrey she abroad him sought,
 And in the rurall cottages inquir'd;
 Where also many plaintes to her were brought,
 How he their heedelesse harts with love had fir'd,
 And his false venim through their veines inspir'd;
 And eke the gentle shepheard swaynes, which sat
 Keeping their fleecy flockes as they were hyr'd,
 She sweetly heard complaine both how and what
 Her sonne had to them doen; yet she did smile thereat.

XVI.

But, when in none of all these she him got,
 She gan avize³ where els he mote him hyde:
 At last she her bethought that she had not
 Yet sought the salvage Woods and Forests wyde,
 In which full many lovely Nymphes abyde;
 Mongst whom might be that he did closely⁴ lye,
 Or that the love of some of them him tyde:
 Forthy⁵ she thether cast her course t' apply,
 To search the secret haunts of Dianes company.

XVII.

Shortly unto the wastefull woods she came,
 Whereas she found the ooddesse with her crew,

¹ *Whot*, hot.⁴ *Closely*, secretly.² *Rife*, abundant.⁵ *Forthy*, therefore.³ *Avize*, consider.

After late chace of their embrewed¹ game,
 Sitting beside a fountaine in a rew²;
 Some of them washing with the liquid dew
 From off their dainty limbs the dusty sweat
 And soyle, which did deforme their lively hew;
 Others lay shaded from the scorching heat;
 The rest upon her person gave attendance great.

XVIII.

She, having hong upon a bough on high
 Her bow and painted quiver, had unlaste
 Her silver buskins from her nimble thigh,
 And her lanck loynes³ ungirt, and breasts unbraste,
 After her heat the breathing cold to taste;
 Her golden lockes, that late in tresses bright
 Embreaded⁴ were for hindring of her haste,
 Now loose about her shoulders hong undight,⁵
 And were with sweet Ambrosia all besprinkled light.

XIX.

Soone as she Venus saw behinde her backe,
 She was asham'd to be so loose surpriz'd;
 And woxe⁶ halfe wroth against her damzels slacke,
 That had not her thereof before aviz'd,
 But suffred her so carelesly disguiz'd
 Be overtaken: Soone her garments loose
 Upgath'ring, in her bosome she compriz'd
 Well as she might, and to the goddesse rose;
 Whiles all her nymphes did like a girlond her enclose.

XX.

Goodly she gan faire Cytherea greet,
 And shortly asked her what cause her brought,

¹ *Embrewed*, wet with blood.⁴ *Embreaded*, braided.² *Rew*, row.⁵ *Undight*, ungathered, undressed³ *Lanck loynes*, slender waist.⁶ *Wozze*, waxed.

Into that wilderness for her unmeet,
 From her sweete bowres and beds with pleasures fraught :
 That suddain chaung¹ she straung adventure thought.
 To whom halfe weeping she thus answered ;
 That she her dearest sonne Cupido sought,
 Who in his frowardnes from her was fled ;
 That she repented sore to have him angered.

XXI.

Thereat Diana gan to smile, in scorne
 Of her vaine playnt, and to her scoffing sayd ;
 "Great pittie sure that ye be so forlorne²
 Of your gay sonne, that gives you so good ayd
 To your disports ; ill mote ye bene apayd !" ³
 But she was more engrieved, and replide
 " Faire sister, ill beseemes it to upbrayd
 A dolefull heart with so disdainfull pride ;
 The like that mine may be your paine another tide.³

XXII.

" As you in woods and wanton⁴ wilderness
 Your glory sett to chace the salvage beasts ;
 So my delight is all in ioyfulnesse,
 In beds, in bowres, in banckets, and in feasts :
 And ill becomes you, with your lofty creasts,
 To scorne the ioye that Love is glad to seeke :
 We both are bownd to follow heavens beheasts,
 And tend our charges with obeisaunce meeke :
 Spare, gentle sister, with reproch my paine to eeke⁵ ;

¹ *Chaung*, change.⁴ *Wanton*, wild.² *Forlorne*, bereft.⁵ *Eeke*, increase.³ *Tide*, time.

XXI. 5. — *Ill mote ye bene apayd.*] You could hardly be compensated for this loss.

XXIII.

“ And tell me if that ye my sonne have heard
 To lurke emongst your nimphes in secret wize,
 Or keepe their cabins : much I am affeard
 Least he like one of them himselfe disguise,
 And turne his arrowes to their exercize :
 So may he long himselfe full easie hide ;
 For he is faire, and fresh in face and guize
 As any nimphe ; let not it be envide.”
 So saying every nimph full narrowly shee eide.

XXIV.

But Phœbe therewith sore was angered,
 And sharply saide ; “ Goe, dame ; goe, seeke your boy,
 Where you him lately lefte, in Mars his bed :
 He comes not here ; we scorne his foolish ioy,
 Ne lend we leisure to his idle toy :
 But, if I catch him in this company,
 By Stygian lake I vow, whose sad annoy
 The gods doe dread, he dearly shall aby¹ :
 He clip his wanton wings that he no more shall flye.”

XXV.

Whom whenas Venus saw so sore displeasd,
 Shee inly sory was, and gan relent²
 What shee had said : so her shee soone appeasd
 With sugred words and gentle blandishment,
 Which as a fountaine from her sweete lips went
 And welled goodly forth, that in short space
 She was well pleasd, and forth her damzells sent

¹ *Abye*, suffer.² *Relent*, soften, qualify.

XXIII. 8. — *Let not it be envide.*] An expression equivalent to ‘ With your leave,’ or ‘ Pardon me.’

XXIV. 3. — *Mars his.*] Mars’s.

Through all the woods, to search from place to place
If any tract of him or tidings they mote trace.

XXVI.

To search the god of love her nimphes she sent
Throughout the wandring forest every where:
And after them herselfe eke with her went
To seeke the fugitive both farre and nere.
So long they sought, till they arrived were
In that same shady covert whereas lay
Faire Crysogone in slombry traunce whilere¹;
Who in her sleepe (a wondrous thing to say)
Unwares had borne two Babes as faire as springing day.

XXVII.

Unwares she them conceivd, unwares she bore:
She bore withouten paine, that she conceiv'd
Withouten pleasure; ne her need implore
Lucinaes aide: Which when they both perceiv'd,
They were through wonder nigh of sence berev'd,
And gazing each on other nought bespake:
At last they both agreed her seeming griev'd
Out of her heavie swowne not to awake,
But from her loving side the tender Babes to take.

XXVIII.

Up they them tooke, each one a Babe uptooke,
And with them carried to be fostered:
Dame Phœbe to a nymphe her Babe betooke²
To be upbrought in perfect Maydenhed,
And, of herselfe, her name Belphœbe red³:

¹ *Whilere*, a little while before. ² *Betooks*, delivered.

³ *Red*, declared.

XXVI. 2. — *Throughout the wandring forest.*] Wandering throughout the forest.

But Venus hers thence far away conuayd,
 To be upbrought in goodly womanhed ;
 And, in her litle Loves stead which was strayd,
 Her Amoretta cald, to comfort her¹ dismayd.²

XXIX.

She brought her to her ioyous Paradize
 Wher most she wonnes,³ when she on earth does dwell,
 So faire a place as nature can devise :
 Whether in Paphos, or Cytheron hill,
 Or it in Gnidus bee, I wote⁴ not well ;
 But well I wote⁴ by triall, that this same
 All other pleasaunt places doth excell,
 And called is, by her lost lovers name,
 The Gardin of Adonis, far renowmd by fame.

XXX.

In that same Gardin all the goodly flowres,
 Wherewith dame Nature doth her beautify
 And decks the girlonds of her paramoures,
 Are fetcht : There is the first seminary
 Of all things that are borne to live and dye,
 According to their kynds.⁵ Long worke it were
 Here to account the endlesse progeny

¹ *Her*, herself.² *Wonnes*, dwells.³ *Dismayd*, grieved.⁴ *Wote*, know.⁵ *Kynds*, natures.

XXIX. 4. — *In Paphos, or Cytheron hill.*] Paphos was a town in the island of Cyprus. Cytheron is Cythera, an island near Laconia, now Cerigo. Gnidus, or Cnidus, was a town of Caria, in Asia Minor. All of these were favorite resorts of Venus.

XXX. 1. — *In that same Gardin, &c.*] In the fable of Venus and Adonis, Adonis has been generally supposed to represent the sun, and hence was regarded as the type of the procreative or productive principle; and this garden of Adonis is described to us by the poet as containing the seminal principles of all things.

Of all the weeds that bud and blossome there ;
But so much as doth need must needs be counted nere

XXXI.

It sited¹ was in fruitfull soyle of old,
And girt in with two walls on either side,
The one of yron, the other of bright gold,
That none might thorough breake, nor overstride :
And double gates it had which opened wide,
By which both in and out men moten² pas ;
Th' one faire and fresh, the other old and dride :
Old Genius the porter of them was,
Old Genius, the which a double nature has.

XXXII.

He letteth in, he letteth out to wend³
All that to come into the world desire :
A thousand thousand naked babes attend
About him day and night, which doe require
That he with fleshly weeds would them attire :
Such as him list, such as eternall fate
Ordained hath, he clothes with sinfull mire,⁴
And sendeth forth to live in mortall state,
Till they agayn returne backe by the hinder gate.

XXXIII.

After that they againe returned beene,

¹ *Sited*, situated. ² *Moten*, might. ³ *Wend*, go. ⁴ *Mire*, clay.

XXXI. 8. — *Old Genius*.] This is the same Genius — a being of a double sex — described under the name of *Agdistes*, in book II. canto XII. stanza XLVIII.

XXXIII. 1. — *After that, &c.*] In this and the following stanzas, the Pythagorean and Platonic doctrines of metempsychosis are expounded. The reader may compare with them the passage in the sixth book of the *Æneid* (line 724) beginning,

“ Principio, cœlum ac terras, camposque liquentes.”

They in that Gardin planted bee agayne,
 And grow afresh, as they had never seene
 Fleshly corruption nor mortall payne:
 Some thousand yeares so doen¹ they there remayne,
 And then of him are clad with other hew,
 Or sent into the chaungefull world agayne,
 Till thether they retourne where first they grew:
 So, like a wheele, arownd they ronne from old to new.

XXXIV.

Ne needs there gardiner to sett or sow,
 To plant or prune; for of their owne accord
 All things, as they created were, doe grow,
 And yet remember well the Mighty Word
 Which first was spoken by th' Almighty Lord,
 That bad them to *increase and multiply*:
 Ne doe they need, with water of the ford²
 Or of the clouds, to moysten their roots dry;
 For in themselves eternall moisture they imply.³

XXXV.

Infinite shapes of creatures there are bred,
 And uncouth formes, which none yet ever knew:
 And every sort is in a sondry bed
 Sett by itselfe, and ranckt in comely rew⁴;
 Some fitt for reasonable sowles t' indew;
 Some made for beasts, some made for birds to weare;
 And all the fruitfull spawnne of fishes hew
 In endlesse rancks along enraunged were,
 That seemd the ocean could not containe them there.

XXXVI.

Daily they grow, and daily forth are sent
 Into the world, it to replenish more;

¹ *Doen*, do, do remain.² *Imply*, contain.³ *Ford*, stream.⁴ *Rew*, row.

Yet is the stocke not lessened nor spent,
 But still remains in everlasting store
 As it at first created was of yore :
 For in the wide wombe of the world there lyes,
 In hatefull darknes and in deep horróre,
 An huge eternall Chaos, which supplies
 The substaunces of Natures fruitfull progenyes.

XXXVII.

All things from thence doe their first being fetch,
 And borrow matter whereof they are made ;
 Which, whenas forme and feature it does ketch,
 Becomes a body, and doth then invade ¹
 The state of life out of the griesly shade.
 That substaunce is eterne, and bideth so ;
 Ne, when the life decayes and forme does fade,
 Doth it consume and into nothing goe,
 But chaunged is and often altred to and froe.

XXXVIII.

The substaunce is not chaungd nor altered,
 But th' only forme and outward fashion ;
 For every substaunce is conditioned
 To chaunge her hew, and sondry formes to don,²
 Meet for her temper and complexion :
 For formes are variable, and decay
 By course of kinde ³ and by occasion ;
 And that faire flowre of beautie fades away,
 As doth the lilly fresh before the sunny ray.

XXXIX.

Great enimy to it, and to' all the rest
 That in the Gardin of Adonis springs,
 Is wicked Time ; who with his scyth address ⁴

¹ *Inva*de, come into.² *Kinde*, nature.³ *Don*, put on.⁴ *Address*, armed.

Does mow the flowring herbes and goodly things,
 And all their glory to the ground downe flings,
 Where they do wither and are fowly mard :
 He flyés about, and with his flaggy¹ wings
 Beates downe both leaves and buds without regard,
 Ne ever pittie may relent his malice hard.

XL.

Yet pittie often did the gods relent,²
 To see so faire things mard and spoiled quight :
 And their great mother Venus did lament
 The losse of her deare brood, her deare delight :
 Her hart was pierst with pittie at the sight,
 When walking through the Gardin them she spyde,
 Yet no'te³ she find redresse for such despight :
 For all that lives is subiect to that law :
 All things decay in time, and to their end doe draw.

XLI.

But were it not that Time their troubler is,
 All that in this delightfull Gardin growes
 Should happy bee, and have immortall blis :
 For here all plenty and all pleasure flowes ;
 And sweete Love gentle fitts⁴ emongst them throwes,
 Without fell rancor or fond gealosity :
 Franckly each paramour his leman knowes ;
 Each bird his mate ; ne any does envý
 Their goodly meriment and gay felicity.

XLII.

There is continuall spring, and harvest there

¹ *Flaggy*, loose-hanging.

² *No'te*, could not.

³ *Relent*, soften.

⁴ *Fitts*, emotions.

XL. 6. — *Spyde*.] “So in all the editions. The rhyme requires ‘them she saw.’” — CHURCH.

Continuall, both meeting at one tyme :
 For both the boughes doe laughing blossoms beare,
 And with fresh colours decke the wanton pryme,¹
 And eke attonce the heavy trees they clyme,
 Which seeme to labour under their fruites lode :
 The whiles the ioyous birdes make their pastyme
 Emongst the shady leaves, their sweet abode,
 And their trew loves without suspition tell abrode.

XLIII.

Right in the midst of that Paradise
 There stood a stately mount, on whose round top
 A gloomy grove of mirtle trees did rise,
 Whose shady boughes sharp steele did never lop,
 Nor wicked beastes their tender buds did crop,
 But like a girlond compassed the hight,
 And from their fruitfull sydes sweet gum did drop,
 That all the ground, with pretious dew bedight,²
 Threw forth most dainty odours and most sweet delight.

XLIV.

And in the thickest covert of that shade
 There was a pleasant arber, not by art
 But of the trees owne inclination made,
 Which knitting their rancke³ braunches part to part,
 With wanton yvie-twine entrayld⁴ athwart,
 And eglantine and caprifole⁵ emong,
 Fashiond above within their inmost part,
 That nether Phoebus beams could through them throng,
 Nor Aeolus sharp blast could worke them any wrong.

XLV.

And all about grew every sort of flowre,

¹ Pryme, spring.² Bedight, decked, covered.³ Rancke, luxuriant.⁴ Entrayld, twisted.⁵ Caprifole, woodbine.

To which sad lovers were transformde of yore ;
 Fresh Hyacinthus, Phoebus paramoure
 And dearest love ;
 Foolish Narcisse, that likes the watry shore ;
 Sad Amaranthus, made a flowre but late,
 Sad Amaranthus, in whose purple gore
 Me seemes I see Amintas wretched fate,
 To whom sweet poets verse hath given endlesse date.

XLVI.

There wont fayre Venus often to enjoy
 Her deare Adonis ioyous company,
 And reap sweet pleasure of the wanton boy :
 There yet, some say, in secret he does ly,
 Lapped in flowres and pretious spycery,
 By her hid from the world, and from the skill
 Of Stygian gods, which doe her love envý ;
 But she herselfe, whenever that she will,
 Possesseth him, and of his sweetnesse takes her fill :

XLVII.

And sooth,¹ it seemes, they say ; for he may not
 For ever dye, and ever buried bee
 In balefull night where all thinges are forgot ;
 All² be he subiect to mortalitie,
 Yet is eterne in mutabilitie,
 And by succession made perpetuall,
 Transformed oft, and chaunged diverslie :
 For him the father of all formes they call ;
 Therefore needs mote he live, that living gives to all.

¹ Sooth, truth.² All, although.

XLV. 8. — *Amintas wretched fate.*] This is supposed to allude to the untimely death of Sir Philip Sydney, upon which, volumes of poetry were written.

XLVIII.

There now he liveth in eternal blis,
 Ioying his goddesse, and of her enioyd ;
 Ne feareth he henceforth that foe of his,
 Which with his cruell tuske him deadly cloyd¹ :
 For that wild bore, the which him once annoyd,
 She firmly hath emprisoned for ay,
 (That her sweet Love his malice mote avoyd,)
 In a strong rocky cave, which is, they say,
 Hewen underneath that mount, that none him losen² may.

XLIX.

There now he lives in everlasting ioy,
 With many of the gods in company
 Which thether haunt, and with the winged boy,
 Sporting himselfe in safe felicity :
 Who when he hath with spoiles and cruelty
 Ransackt the world, and in the wofull harts
 Of many wretches set his triumphes hye,
 Thether resortes, and, laying his sad dartes
 Asyde, with faire Adonis playes his wanton partes.

L.

And his trew Love faire Psyche with him playes,
 Fayre Psyche to him lately reconcyld,
 After long troubles and unmeet upbrayes,³
 With which his mother Venus her revyld,
 And eke himselfe her cruelly exyld :
 But now in stedfast love and happy state
 She with him lives, and hath him borne a chyld,

¹ *Cloyd*, pierced.² *Losen*, loosen, set free.³ *Upbrayes*, upbraidings.

XLVIII. 5. — *For that wild bore.*] Adonis representing the productive energy of nature, the wild boar is a type of winter, during which that energy is suspended.

Pleasure, that doth both gods and men aggrate,¹
Pleasure, the daughter of Cupid and Psyche late.

LI.

Hether great Venus brought this Infant fayre,
The yonger daughter of Crysogonee,
And unto Psyche with great trust and care
Committed her, yfostered to bee
And trained up in trew feminitee²:
Who no lesse carefully her tendered
Then³ her owne daughter Pleasure, to whom shee
Made her companion, and her lessoned⁴
In all the lore of love and goodly womanhead.

LII.

In which when she to perfect ripenes grew,
Of grace and beautie noble paragone,
She brought her forth into the worldës vew,
To be th' ensample of true love alone,
And lodestarre of all chaste affectione
To all fayre Ladies that doe live on grownd.
To Faery Court she came; where many one
Admyrd her goodly haveour,⁵ and fownd
His feeble hart wide launched with loves cruel wovnd.

LIII.

But she to none of them her love did cast,
Save to the noble Knight, Sir Scudamore,
To whom her loving hart she linked fast
In faithfull love, t' abide for evermore;
And for his dearest sake endured sore
Sore trouble of an hainous enemy,
Who her would forced have to have forlore⁶

¹ *Aggrate*, charm.⁴ *Lessoned*, instructed.² *Feminitee*, womanhood.⁵ *Haveour*, manners, deportment.³ *Then*, than.⁶ *Forlore*, abandoned.

Her former love and stedfast loialty ;
As ye may elswhere reade that ruefull history.

LIV.

But well I weene ye first desire to learne
What end unto that fearefull Damozell,
Which fledd so fast from that same foster ¹ stearne
Whom with his brethren Timias slew, befell :
That was, to weet, the goodly Florimell ;
Who wandring for to seeke her lover deare,
Her lover deare, her dearest Marinell,
Into misfortune fell, as ye did heare,
And from Prince Arthure fled with wings of idle ² feare.

¹ *Foster*, forester.² *Idle*, causeless.

LIII. 9. — *As ye may elswhere.*] See the eleventh and twelfth cantos of this book.

LIV. 8. — *As ye did heare.*] See canto I. stanza XVI. and the conclusion of canto IV.

CANTO VII.

The Witches sonne loves Florimell :
 She flyes ; he faines to dy.
 Satyrane saves the Squire of Dames
 From Gyaunts tyranny.

I.

LIKE as an hynd forth singled from the heard,
 That hath escaped from a ravenous beast,
 Yet flyes away of her owne feete afeard ;
 And every leafe, that shaketh with the least
 Murmure of winde, her terror hath encreast :
 So fledd fayre Florimell from her vaine feare,
 Long after she from perill was releast :
 Each shade she saw, and each noyse she did heare,
 Did seeme to be the same which she escapt whileare.¹

II.

All that same evening she in flying spent,
 And all that night her course continewd :
 Ne did she let dull sleepe once to relent²
 Nor wearinesse to slack her hast, but fled
 Ever alike, as if her former dred
 Were hard behind, her ready to arrest :
 And her white palfrey, having conquered
 The maistring³ raines out of her weary wrest,⁴
 Perforce her carried where ever he thought best.

¹ *Whileare*, shortly before.

² *Maistring*, mastering, or controlling.

³ *Relent*, slacken.

⁴ *Wrest*, wrist.

III.

So long as breath and hable puissance
 Did native corage unto him supply,
 His pace he freshly forward did aduance,
 And carried her beyond all ieopardy;
 But nought that wanteth rest can long aby¹:
 He, having through incessant travaill spent
 His force, at last perforce adowne did ly,
 Ne foot could further move: The Lady gent²
 Thereat was suddein strook with great astonishment;

IV.

And, forst t' alight, on foot mote algates³ fare
 A traveler unwonted to such way;
 Need teacheth her this lesson hard and rare,
That Fortune all in equall launce⁴ doth sway,
And mortall miseries doth make her play.
 So long she traveild, till at length she came
 To an hilles side, which did to her bewray
 A litle valley subiect⁵ to the same,
 All covered with thick woodes that quite it overcame.⁶

V.

Through th' tops of the high trees she did descry
 A litle smoke, whose vapour thin and light
 Reeking aloft uprolled to the sky:
 Which chearefull signe did send unto her sight
 That in the same did wonne⁷ some living wight.
 Eftsoones⁸ her steps she thereunto applyd,
 And came at last in weary wretched plight

¹ *Aby*, abide.² *Gent*, gentle.³ *Algates*, at all events.⁴ *Launce*, balance.⁵ *Subiect to*, lying beneath.⁶ *Overcame*, came over.⁷ *Wonne*, dwell.⁸ *Eftsoones*, immediately.

Unto the place, to which her hope did guyde
To finde some refuge there, and rest her wearie syde.

VI.

There in a gloomy hollow glen she found
A litle cottage, built of stickes and reedes
In homely wize, and wald with sods around ;
In which a Witch did dwell, in loathly weedes ¹
And wilfull want, all carelesse of her needes ;
So choosing solitarie to abide
Far from all neighbours, that her divelish deedes
And hellish arts from people she might hide,
And hurt far off unknowne whomever she envide.

VII.

The Damzell there arriving entred in ;
Where sitting on the flore the Hag she found
Busie (as seem'd) about some wicked gin ² :
Who, soone as she beheld that suddein stound, ³
Lightly upstartd from the dustie ground,
And with fell looke and hollow deadly gaze
Stared on her awhile, as one astound,
Ne had one word to speake for great amaze ;
But shewd by outward signes that dread her sence did daze. ⁴

VIII.

At last, turning her feare to foolish wrath,
She askt, What devill had her thether brought,
And who she was, and what unwonted path
Had guided her, unwelcomed, unsought ?
To which the Damzell full of doubtfull thought
Her mildly answer'd ; " Beldame, be not wroth
With silly Virgin, by adventure brought

¹ *Weedes*, dress.

² *Gin*, contrivance.

³ *Stound*, startling appearance.

⁴ *Daze*, dazzle, confound.

Unto your dwelling, ignorant and loth,
That crave but rowme to rest while tempest overblo'th."

IX.

With that adowne out of her christall eyne
Few trickling teares she softly forth let fall,
That like two orient perles did purely shyne
Upon her snowy cheeke ; and therewithall
She sighed soft, that none so bestiall
Nor salvage hart but ruth¹ of her sad plight
Would make to melt, or pitteously appall ;
And that vile Hag, all² were her whole delight
As mischief, was much moved at so pitteous sight ;

X.

And gan recomfort her, in her rude wyse,
With womanish compassion of her plaint,
Wiping the teares from her suffused eyes,
And bidding her sit downe to rest her faint
And wearie limbs awhile : she nothing quaint³
Nor 'sdeignfull of so homely fashion,
Sith⁴ brought she was now to so hard constraint,
Sate downe upon the dusty ground anon ;
As glad of that small rest, as bird of tempest gon.⁵

XI.

Tho⁶ gan she gather up her garments rent,
And her loose lockes to dight⁷ in order dew
With golden wreath and gorgeous ornament ;
Whom such whenas the wicked Hag did vew,
She was astonisht at her heavenly hew,
And doubted her to deeme an earthly wight,

¹ *Ruth*, pity.² *All*, although.³ *Quaint*, nice.⁴ *Sith*, since.⁵ *Gon*, gone, past.⁶ *Tho*, then.⁷ *Dight*, dispose.

But or some goddesse, or of Dianes crew,
 And thought her to adore with humble spright :
 T^p adore thing so divine as beauty were but right.

XII.

This wicked woman had a wicked sonne,
 The comfort of her age and weary dayes,
 A lacy loord,¹ for nothing good to donne,²
 But stretched forth in ydlenesse alwayes,
 Ne ever cast his mind to covet prayse,
 Or ply himselfe to any honest trade ;
 But all the day before the sunny rayes
 He us'd to slug,³ or sleepe in slothfull shade :
 Such laesinesse both lewd⁴ and poore attonce him made.

XIII.

He, comming home at undertime,⁵ there found
 The fayrest creature that he ever saw
 Sitting beside his mother on the ground ;
 The sight whereof did greatly him adaw,⁶
 And his base thought with terrour and with aw
 So inly smot, that as one, which hath gaz'd
 On the bright sunne unwares, doth soone withdraw
 His feeble eyne with too much brightnes daz'd⁷ ;
 So stared he on her, and stood long while amaz'd.

XIV.

Softly at last he gan his mother aske,
 What mister wight that was, and whence deriv'd,
 That in so straunge disguizement there did maske,

¹ *Laesy loord*, idle fellow.⁵ *Undertime*, evening.² *Donne*, do.⁶ *Adaw*, fill with awe.³ *Slug*, lie idly.⁷ *Daz'd*, dazzled.⁴ *Lewd*, ignorant.

XIV. 2. — *What mister wight.*] What sort of creature. — *Mister*
 means trade, occupation, condition of life ; Fr. *metier*.

And by what accident she there arriv'd ?
 But she, as one nigh of her wits depriv'd,
 With nought but ghastly looks him answered ;
 Like to a ghost, that lately is reviv'd
 From Stygian shores where late it wandered :
 So both at her, and each at other wondered.

XV.

But the fayre Virgin was so meeke and myld,
 That she to them vouchsafed to embrace¹
 Her goodly port, and to their senses vyld²
 Her gentle speach applyde, that in short space
 She grew familiare in that desert place.
 During which time the Chorle, through her so kind
 And courtese use, conceiv'd affection bace,
 And cast to love her in his brutish mind ;
 No love, but brutish lust, that was so beastly tind.³

XVI.

Closely⁴ the wicked flame his bowels brent,⁵
 And shortly grew into outrageous fire ;
 Yet had he not the hart, nor hardiment,⁶
 As unto her to utter his desire ;
 His caytive⁷ thought durst not so high aspire :
 But with soft sighes and lovely semblaunces
 He ween'd that his affection entire⁸
 She should aread⁹ ; many resemblaunces¹⁰
 To her he made, and many kinde remembraunces.

XVII.

Oft from the Forrest wildings¹¹ he did bring,

¹ *Embrace*, bring down.⁷ *Caytive*, base.² *Vyld*, vile, low.⁸ *Entire*, inward.³ *Tind*, excited.⁹ *Aread*, perceive.⁴ *Closely*, secretly.¹⁰ *Resemblaunces*, attentions.⁵ *Brent*, burned.¹¹ *Wildings*, wild apples.⁶ *Hardiment*, courage.

Whose sides empurpled were with smyling red ;
 And oft young birds, which he had taught to sing
 His maistresse praises sweetly caroled :
 Girmonds of flowres sometimes for her faire hed
 He fine would dight ¹ ; sometimes the squirrel wild
 He brought to her in bands, as conquered
 To be her thrall, his fellow-servant vild ² :
 All which she of him tooke with countenance meeke and mild.

XVIII.

But, past a while, when she fit season saw
 To leave that desert mansion, she cast ³
 In secret wize herselfe thence to withdraw,
 For feare of mischief, which she did forecast
 Might by the witch or by her sonne compact ⁴ :
 Her wearie palfrey, closely ⁵ as she might,
 Now well recovered after long repast,
 In his proud furnitures she freshly dight, ⁶
 His late miswandred wayes now to remeasure right.

XIX.

And earely, ere the dawning day appear'd
 She forth issewd, and on her iourney went ;
 She went in perill, of each noyse affeard
 And of each shade that did itselfe present ;
 For still she feared to be overhent ⁷
 Of that vile Hag, or her uncivile Sonne ;
 Who when, too late awaking, well they kent ⁸
 That their fayre Guest was gone, they both begonne
 To make exceeding mone as they had beene undonne.

¹ *Dight*, prepare, arrange.⁵ *Closely*, secretly.² *Vild*, vile, low.⁶ *Dight*, dressed, decked.³ *Cast*, resolved.⁷ *Overhent*, overtaken.⁴ *Compact*, contrived.⁸ *Kent*, knew.XVIII. 1. — *Past a while.*] After some time had passed.

XX.

But that lewd lover did the most lament
 For her depart,¹ that ever man did heare ;
 He knockt his brest with desperate intent,
 And scratcht his face, and with his teeth did teare
 His rugged flesh, and rent his ragged heare :
 That his sad mother seeing his sore plight
 Was greatly woe-begon, and gan to feare
 Least his fraile senses were emperisht quight,
 And love to frenzy turnd ; sith² love is franticke hight.³

XXI.

All wayes shee sought him to restore to plight,
 With herbs, with charms, with counsel, and with teares ;
 But tears, nor charms, nor herbs, nor counsell, might
 Asswage the fury which his entrails teares :
 So strong is passion that no reason heares !
 Tho,⁴ when all other helpes she saw to faile,
 She turnd herselfe backe to her wicked leares⁵ ;
 And by her divelish arts thought to prevaile
 To bring her backe againe, or worke her finall bale.⁶

XXII.

Eftsoones⁷ out of her hidden cave she cald
 An hideous beast of horrible aspect,
 That could the stoutest corage have appald ;
 Monstrous, mishapt,⁸ and all his backe was spect
 With thousand spots of colours queint elect⁹ ;

¹ *Depart*, departure.⁶ *Bale*, destruction.² *Sith*, since.⁷ *Eftsoones*, immediately.³ *Hight*, called.⁸ *Mishapt*, misshaped.⁴ *Tho*, then.⁹ *Queint elect*, oddly chosen.⁵ *Leares*, lessons.

Thereto¹ so swifte that it all beasts did pas :
 Like never yet did living eie detect ;
 But likest it to an hyena was
 That feeds on wemens flesh, as others feede on gras.

XXIII.

It forth she cald, and gave it streight² in charge
 Through thicke and thin her to poursew apace,
 Ne once to stay to rest, or breath at large,
 Till her hee had attaind and brought in place,
 Or quite devourd her beauties scornfull grace.
 The monster, swifte as word that from her went,
 Went forth in haste, and did her footing trace
 So sure and swiftly, through his perfect sent³
 And passing speede, that shortly he her overhent.⁴

XXIV.

Whom when the fearefull Damzell nigh espide,
 No need to bid her fast away to flie ;
 That ugly shape so sore her terrifide,
 That it she shund no lesse then⁵ dread to die ;
 And her flitt palfrey did so well apply
 His nimble feet to her conceived feare,
 That whilest his breath did strength to him supply,
 From perill free he her away did beare ;
 But, when his force gan faile, his pace gan wex areare.⁶

¹ *Thereto*, besides.⁴ *Overhent*, overtook.² *Streight*, strictly.⁵ *Then*, than.³ *Sent*, scent.⁶ *Wex areare*, grow slow.

XXII. 9. — *That feeds on wemens flesh, &c.*] “The hyena is said to feed on human flesh. See Gesner, *Hist. Animal.* p. 555. But I do not find in the old naturalist, that the animal selects only *wemens* flesh.” — Todd.

XXIII. 4. — *Brought in place.*] Brought to that place.

XXV.

Which whenas she perceiv'd, she was dismayd
 At that same last extremity ful sore,
 And of her safety greatly grew afraid:
 And now she gan approach to the sea shore,
 As it befell, that she could flie no more,
 But yield herselfe to spoile of greedinesse:
 Lightly she leaped, as a wight forlore,¹
 From her dull horse, in desperate distresse,
 And to her feet betooke her doubtfull sicknesse.

XXVI.

Not halfe so fast the wicked Myrrha fled
 From dread of her revenging fathers hond;
 Nor halfe so fast to save her maydenhed
 Fled fearefull Daphne on th' Ægæan strond;
 As Florimell fled from that monster yond,²
 To reach the sea ere she of him were raught³:
 For in the sea to drowne herselfe she fond,
 Rather then⁴ of the tyrant to be caught:
 Thereto⁵ fear gave her wings, and need her corage taught.

XXVII.

It fortun'd (High God did so ordaine)
 As shee arrived on the roring shore,
 In minde to leape into the mighty maine,
 A little bote lay hoving⁶ her before,
 In which there slept a fisher old and pore,

¹ *Forlore*, forlorn, desperate.⁴ *Then*, than.² *Yond*, furious.⁵ *Thereto*, besides.³ *Raught*, reached.⁶ *Hoving*, heaving.

XXV. 9. — *And to her feet, &c.*] And committed her safety, then doubtful, to the charge of her feet. — *Sicknesse* means *safety*.

XXVI. 7. — *She fond.*] She found in her heart, or chose.

The whiles his nets were drying on the sand :
 Into the same shee leapt, and with the ore
 Did thrust the shallop from the floting strand :
 So safety fownd at sea, which she fownd not at land.

XXVIII.

The monster, ready on the pray to sease,
 Was of his forward hope deceived quight,
 Ne durst assay to wade the perlous¹ seas,
 But, greedily long gaping at the sight,
 At last in vaine was forst to turne his flight,
 And tell the idle tidings to his Dame :
 Yet, to avenge his divelish despight,
 He set upon her palfrey tired lame,
 And slew him cruelly ere any reskew came :

XXIX.

And, after having him embowelled
 To fill his hellish gorge, it chaunst a Knight
 To passe that way, as forth he traveiled :
 Yt was a goodly Swaine, and of great might,
 As ever man that bloody field did fight ;
 But in vain sheows, that wont yong Knights bewitch,
 And courtly services, tooke no delight ;
 But rather ioyd to bee than seemen sich² :
 For both to be and seeme to him was labor lich.³

XXX.

It was to weete the good Sir Satyrane

¹ *Perlous*, perilous.

² *Sich*, such.

³ *Lich*, light.

XXVII. 8. — *The shallop from the floting strand.*] The shallop floating from the strand.

XXVIII. 2. — *His forward hope.*] His confident expectation.

XXX. 1. — *Sir Satyrane.*] Sir Satyrane reappears from the sixth canto of the first book, where we left him fighting with Sanaloy.

That raungd abrode to seeke adventures wilde,
 As was his wont, in forest and in plaine :
 He was all armd in rugged steele unfile,¹
 As in the smoky forge it was compilde,²
 And in his scutchin³ bore a satyres hedd :
 He comming present, where the monster vilde
 Upon that milke-white palfreyes carcas fedd,
 Unto his reskew ran, and greedily him spedd.

XXXI.

There well perceivd he that it was the horse
 Whereon faire Florimell was wont to ride,
 That of that feend was rent without remorse :
 Much feared he least ought did ill betide
 To that faire Maide, the flowre of wemens pride ;
 For her he dearely loved, and in all
 His famous conquests highly magnifide :
 Besides, her golden girdle, which did fall
 From her in flight, he fownd, that did him sore apall.

XXXII.

Full of sad feare and doubtfull agony
 Fiercely he flew upon that wicked feend ;
 And with huge strokes and cruell battery
 Him forst to leave his pray, for to attend
 Himselfe from deadly daunger to defend :
 Full many wounds in his corrupted flesh
 He did engrave,⁴ and muchell⁵ blood did spend,
 Yet might not doe him die ; but aie more fresh
 And fierce he still appeard, the more he did him thresh.

¹ *Unfile*, unpolished. ² *Compilde*, wrought. ³ *Scutchin*, shield.

⁴ *Engrave*, cut, pierce.

⁵ *Muchell*, much.

XXXIII.

He wist¹ not how him to despoile of life,
 Ne how to win the wished victory,
 Sith² hi he saw still strouger grow through strife,
 And himselfe weaker through infirmity :
 Greatly he grew enrag'd, and furiously
 Hurling his sword away he lightly lept
 Upon the beast, that with great cruelty
 Rored and raged to be underkept ;
 Yet he perforce him held, and strokes upon him hept.

XXXIV.

As he that strives to stop a suddein flood,
 And in strong bancks his violence restraine,
 Forceth it swell above his wonted mood,
 And largely overflow the fruitfull plaine,
 That all the cuntry seemes to be a maine,³
 And the rich furrowes flote, all quite fordonne⁴ :
 The wofull husbandman doth lowd complaine
 To see his whole yeares labor lost so soone,
 For which to God he made so many an idle boone⁵

XXXV.

So him he held, and did through might amate⁶ :
 So long he held him, and him bett so long,
 That at the last his fiercenes gan abate,
 And meekely stoup unto the victor strong :
 Who, to avenge the implacable wrong
 Which he supposed donne to Florimell,
 Sought by all meanes his dolor⁷ to prolong,

¹ *Wist*, knew.² *Sith*, since.³ *Maine*, sea.⁴ *Fordonne*, ruined.⁵ *Boone*, prayer.⁶ *Amats*, subdue.⁷ *Dolor*, pain.

Sith¹ dint of steele his carcas could not quell ;
His maker with her charmes had framed him so well.

XXXVI.

The golden ribband, which that Virgin wore
About her sclender waste, he tooke in hand,
And with it bownd the beast that lowd did rore
For great despight of that unwonted band,
Yet dared not his victor to withstand,
But trembled like a lambe fled from the pray ;
And all the way him followd on the strand,
As² he had long bene learned to obey ;
Yet never learned he such service till that day.

XXXVII.

Thus as he led the beast along the way,
He spide far off a mighty Giauntesse
Fast flying, on a courser dapled gray,
From a bold Knight that with great hardinesse³
Her hard pursewd, and sought for to suppressse :
She bore before her lap a dolefull Squire,
Lying athwart her horse in great distresse,
Fast bounden hand and foote with cords of wire,
Whome she did meane to make the thrall of her desire.

XXXVIII.

Which whenas Satyrane beheld, in haste
He leste his captive beast at liberty,
And crost the nearest way, by which he cast⁴
Her to encounter ere she passed by ;
But she the way shund nathemore⁵ forthy,⁶

¹ *Sith*, since.⁴ *Cast*, purposed, resolved.² *As*, as if.⁵ *Nathemore*, none the more.³ *Hardinesse*, boldness.⁶ *Forthy*, therefore.XXXVI. 6. — *Fled from the pray.*] From the prey, or spoiler.

But forward gallopt fast ; which when he spyde,
 His mighty speare he couched warily,
 And at her ran ; she, having him descryde,
 Herselfe to fight address, and threw her lode aside.

XXXIX.

Like as a goshauke, that in foote doth beare
 A trembling culver,¹ having spide on hight
 An eagle that with plumy wings doth sheare²
 The subtile ayre stouping with all his might,
 The quarrey³ throwes to ground with fell despight,
 And to the batteill doth herselfe prepare :
 So ran the Geauntesse unto the fight ;
 Her fyrie eyes with furious sparkes did stare,
 And with blasphemous bannes⁴ High God in peeces tare.

XL.

She caught in hand an huge great yron mace,
 Wherewith she many had of life depriv'd ;
 But, ere the stroke could seize his aymed place,
 His speare amidst her sun-brode shield arriv'd ;
 Yet nathemore⁵ the steele asonder riv'd,
 All⁶ were the beame in bignes like a mast,
 Ne her out of the stedfast saddle driv'd ;
 But, glauncing on the tempred metall, brast⁷
 In thousand shivers, and so forth beside her past.

XLI.

Her steed did stagger with that puissaunt strooke ;

¹ *Culver*, (*culfra*, Saxon,) dove.

² *Sheare*, cut.

³ *Quarrey*, prey.

⁴ *Bannes*, curses.

⁵ *Nathemore*, none the more.

⁶ *All*, although.

⁷ *Brast*, broke.

XL. 3. — *Could seize his aymed place.*] Could reach the place at which it was aimed or directed.

But she no more was moved with that might
 Then ¹ it had lighted on an aged oke,
 Or on the marble pillour that is pight ²
 Upon the top of mount Olympus hight,
 For the brave youthly champions to assay
 With burning charet wheelles it nigh to smite ;
 But who that smites it mars his ioyous play,
 And is the spectacle of ruinous decay.³

XLII.

Yet, therewith sore enrag'd, with sterne regard
 Her dreadfull weapon she to him address,
 Which on his helmet martelled so hard
 That made him low incline his lofty crest,
 And bowd his battred visour to his brest :

¹ Then, than if.² Pight, placed.³ Decay, defeat.

XLII. 5.—*Of mount Olympus hight.*] The chariot races of antiquity are here described. At the end of the circus, a pillar was erected, round which the chariots turned; and it was a contest of skill to pass as near as possible without touching. The classical reader will recollect the expression in the first ode of the first book of Horace —

..... "Metaque fervidis
 Evitata rotis."

Spenser makes a singular mistake in supposing that the Olympic games were celebrated on Mount Olympus, besides the absurdity of laying the scene of a chariot race on the top of a mountain. On this account, Church would transfer the blame to the printer, who, as he conjectures, transposed the fourth and fifth lines, and that Spenser wrote the passage thus —

..... 'an aged oke,
 Upon the top of mount Olympus hight,
 Or on the marble pillour that is pight,'

&c., which seems not improbable.

XLII. 3.—*Martelled.*] Hammered.—*Martel* is a French word, meaning *hammer*, derived from the Latin *malleus*.

Wherewith he was so stund that he n'ote¹ ryde,
 But reeled to and fro from east to west :
 Which when his cruell enemy espyde,
 She lightly unto him adioyned² syde to syde ;

XLIII.

And, on his collar laying puisaunt hand,
 Out of his wavering seat him pluckt perforce,
 Perforce him pluckt unable to withstand
 Or helpe himselfe ; and laying thwart her horse,
 In loathly wise like to a carrion corse,
 She bore him fast away : which when the Knight
 That her pursewed saw, with great remorse³
 He neare was touched in his noble spright,
 And gan encrease his speed as she encreast her flight.

XLIV.

Whom whenas nigh approaching she espyde,
 She threw away her burden angrily ;
 For she list not the batteill to abide,
 But made herselfe more light away to fly :
 Yet her the hardy Knight pursewd so nye
 That almost in the backe he oft her strake :
 But still, when him at hand she did espy,
 She turnd, and semblaunce of faire fight did make ;
 But, when he stayd, to flight againe she did her take.

XLV.

By this the good Sir Satyrane gan wake
 Out of his dreame that did him long entraunce,
 And, seeing none in place, he gan to make
 Exceeding mone, and curst that cruell chaunce

¹ *N'ote*, could not.² *Adioyned*, approached, or joined herself.³ *Remorse*, pity.

Which reft from him so faire a chevisaunce¹:
 At length he spyde whereas that wofull Squyre,
 Whom he had reskewed from captivaunce²
 Of his strong foe, lay tumbled in the myre,
 Unable to arise, or foot or hand to styre.³

XLVI.

To whom approching, well he mote perceive
 In that fowle plight a comely personage
 And lovely face, made fit for to deceive
 Fraile Ladies hart with loves consuming rage,
 Now in the blossome of his freshest age:
 He reard him up, and loosd his yron bands,
 And after gan inquire his parentage,
 And how he fell into that Gyaunts hands,
 And who that was which chaced her along the lands.

XLVII.

Then trembling yet through feare the Squire bespake;
 "That Geauntesse Argantè is behight,⁴
 A daughter of the Titans which did make
 Warre against heven, and heaped hils on hight
 To scale the skyes and put love from his right:
 Her syre Typhœus was; who, mad through merth,
 And dronke with blood of men slaine by his might,
 Through incest her of his owne mother Earth
 Whylome⁵ begot, being but halfe twin of that berth:

XLVIII.

"For at that berth another babe she bore;
 To weet, the mightie Ollyphant, that wrought
 Great wreake⁶ to many errant Knights of yore,
 And many hath to foule confusion brought.

¹ *Chevisaunce*, adventure.⁴ *Behight*, called.² *Captivaunce*, captivity.⁵ *Whylome*, formerly.³ *Styre*, move.⁶ *Wreake*, ruin.

These twinnes, men say, (a thing far passing thought,)
 Whiles in their mothers wombe enclosed they were,
 Ere they into the lightsom world were brought,
 In fleshly lust were mingled both yfere,¹
 And in that monstrous wise did to the world appere.

XLIX.

“ So liv'd they ever after in like sin,
 Gainst natures law and good behaveoure :
 But greatest shame was to that maiden twin ;
 Who, not content so fowly to devoure
 Her native flesh and staine her brothers bowre,²
 Did wallow in all other fleshly myre,
 And suffred beastes her body to deflowre ;
 So whot³ she burned in that lustfull fyre :
 Yet all that might not slake her sensuall desyre :

L.

“ But over all the countrie she did raunge,
 To seeke young men to quench her flaming thrust,⁴
 And feed her fancy with delightfull chaunge :
 Whom so she fittest findes to serve her lust,
 Through her maine strength, in which she most doth trust,
 She with her bringes into a secret ile,
 Where in eternall bondage dye he must,
 Or be the vassall of her pleasures vile,
 And in all shamefull sort himselfe with her defile.

LI.

“ Me seely⁵ wretch she so at vantage caught,
 After she long in waite for me did lye,
 And meant unto her prison to have brought,
 Her lothsom pleasure there to satisfye ;

¹ *Yfere*, together.⁴ *Thrust*, thirst.² *Bowre*, chamber.⁵ *Seely*, silly, simple.³ *Whot*, hot.

That thousand deathes me lever¹ were to dye
 Then breake the vow that to faire Columbello
 I plighted have, and yet keepe stedfastly :
 As for my name, it mistreth² not to tell ;
 Call me the Squire of Dames ; that me beseemeth well.

LII.

“ But that bold Knight, whom ye pursuing saw
 That Geantesse, is not such as she seemd,
 But a faire Virgin that in martiall law
 And deedes of armes above all Dames is deemd,
 And above many Knightes is eke esteemd
 For her great worth ; she Palladine is hight³ :
 She you from death, you me from dread, redeemd :
 Ne any may that monster match in fight,
 But she, or such as she, that is so chaste a wight.”

LIII.

“ Her well beseemes that quest,⁴” quoth Satyrane :
 “ But read,⁵ thou Squire of Dames, what vow is this,
 Which thou upon thyselfe hast lately ta’ne ?”
 “ That shall I you recount,” quoth he, “ ywis,⁶
 So be ye pleasd to pardon all amis.
 That gentle Lady whom I love and serve,
 After long suit and wearie servicis,
 Did aske me how I could her love deserve,
 And how she might be sure that I would never swerve.

LIV.

“ I, glad by any meanes her grace to gaine.

¹ *Me lever*, I would rather.

² *Mistreth*, signifieth.

³ *Hight*, called.

⁴ *Quest*, expedition.

⁵ *Read*, explain.

⁶ *Ywis*, certainly.

LIII. 4. — *That shall I you recount, quoth he.*] “The tale of the Squire of Dames is a copy of the Host’s tale in Ariosto, canto XXVIII.” — WARTON.

Badd her commaund my life to save or spill¹ :
 Eftsoones² she badd me with incessaunt paine
 To wander through the world abroad at will,
 And every where, where with my power or skill
 I might doe service unto gentle Dames,
 That I the same should faithfully fulfill ;
 And at the twelve monethes end should bring their names
 And pledges, as the spoiles of my victorious games.

LV.

“ So well I to faire Ladies service did,
 And found such favour in their loving hartes,
 That, ere the yeare his course had compassid,
 Three hundred pledges for my good desartes,
 And thrice three hundred thanks for my good partes,
 I with me brought and did to her present :
 Which when she saw, more bent to eke³ my smartes
 Then⁴ to reward my trusty true intent,
 She gan for me devise a grievous punishment ;

LVI.

“ To weet, that I my travaill should resume,
 And with like labour walke the world arownd,
 Ne ever to her presence should presume,
 Till I so many other Dames had fownd,
 The which, for all the suit I could propownd,
 Would me refuse their pledges to afford,
 But did abide for ever chaste and sownd.”
 “ Ah! gentle Squyre,” quoth he, “ tell at one word,
 How many fownd’st thou such to put in thy record ? ”

LVII.

“ Indeed, Sir Knight,” said he, “ one word may tell
 All that I ever fownd so wisely stayd,⁵

¹ *Spill*, spoil, destroy. ² *Eftsoones*, immediately. ³ *Eke*, increase.

⁴ *Then*, than. ⁵ *Stayd*, staid, or discreet.

For onely three they were disposd so well ;
 And yet three yeares I now abrode have strayd,
 To find them out." "Mote I," then laughing sayd
 The Knight, "inquire of thee what were those three,
 The which thy proffred curtesie denayd¹ ?
 Or ill they seemed sure avizd² to bee,
 Or brutishly brought up, that nev'r did fashions see."

LVIII.

"The first which then refused me," said hee,
 "Certes³ was but a common courtesane ;
 Yet flat refusd to have adoe with mee,
 Because I could not give her many a jane."
 (Thereat full hartely laughed Satyrane.)
 "The second was an holy nunne to chose,
 Which would not let me be her chappellane,
 Because she knew, she sayd, I would disclose
 Her counsell, if she should her trust in me repose.

LIX.

"The third a damzell was of low degree,
 Whom I in countrey cottage fownd by chaunce :
 Full litle weened I that chastitee
 Had lodging in so meane a maintenaunce⁴ ;
 Yet was she fayre, and in her countenaunce
 Dwelt simple truth in seemely fashion :
 Long thus I woo'd her with due observaunce,
 In hope unto my pleasure to have won ;
 But was as far at last, as when I first begon.

¹ *Denayd*, denied.² *Certes*, truly.³ *Avizd*, disposed.⁴ *Maintenaunce*, condition.

LVIII. 4. — *Many a jane*.] Much money. — *Jane*, according to Tyrwhitt, was a small coin of Genoa, or Janua.

LX.

“ Safe¹ her, I never any woman found
 That chastity did for itselfe embrace,
 But were for other causes firme and sound ;
 Either for want of handsome time and place,
 Or else for feare of shame and fowle disgrace.
 Thus am I hopelesse ever to attaine
 My Ladies love, in such a desperate case,
 But all my dayes am like to waste in vaine,
 Seeking to match the chaste with th’ unchaste Ladies traine.”

LXI.

“ Perdy,”² sayd Satyrane, “ thou Squire of Dames,
 Great labour fondly³ hast thou hent⁴ in hand,
 To get small thankes, and therewith many blames ;
 That may emongst Alcides labours stand.”
 Thence backe returning to the former land,⁵
 Where late he left the beast he overcame,
 He found him not ; for he had broke his band,
 And was returnd againe unto his Dame,
 To tell what tydings of fayre Florimell became.

¹ *Safe*, save. ² *Perdy*, truly. ³ *Fondly*, foolishly.

⁴ *Hent*, taken. ⁵ *Land*, place.

LX. 1. — *Safe her, &c.*] Let it be remembered that these sentiments are put by Spenser into the mouth of a light and vain profligate, and that they are no more to be regarded as his own, than the language of the fallen angels, in *Paradise Lost*, is to be deemed as expressive of Milton's own opinions. No poet ever had a truer respect for woman than Spenser.

LX. 9. — *Seeking to match, &c.*] Seeking to make up the number of three hundred of each.

LXI. 6. — *Where late he left, &c.*] See stanzas XXXVI. and XXXVIII.

CANTO VIII.

The Witch creates a snowy La-
 dy like to Florimell ;
 Who wrong'd by Carle, by Proteus sav'd,
 Is sought by Paridell.

I.

So oft as I this history record,
 My hart doth melt with meere compassion,
 To thinke how causelesse of her owne accord
 This gentle Damzell, whom I write upon,
 Should plonged be in such affliction,
 Without all hope of comfort or reliefe ;
 That sure I weene the hardest hart of stone
 Would hardly finde¹ to aggravate her grieft:
 For misery craves rather mercy then² repriefe.³

II.

But that accursed Hag, her hostesse late,
 Had so enranckled her malicious hart,
 That she desyrd th' abridgement of her fate,⁴
 Or long enlargement of her painefull smart.
 Now when the beast, which by her wicked art
 Late fourth she sent, she backe retourning spyde
 Tyde with her golden girdle ; it a part

¹ *Finde*, choose.² *Repriefe*, reproof.³ *Then*, than.⁴ *Fate*, fated term of life.

I. 3. — *Causelesse of her owne accord.*] Without any act or consent
 of her own.

Of Her rich spoyles whom he had earst¹ destroyd
She weend, and wondrous gladnes to her hart applyde :

III.

And, with it ronning hast'ly to her sonne,
Thought with that sight him much to have reliv'd² ;
Who, thereby deeming sure the thing as donne,
His former grieffe with furie fresh reviv'd
Much more than earst,¹ and would have algates³ riv'd
The hart out of his brest : for sith⁴ her dedd
He surely dempt,⁵ himselfe he thought depriv'd
Quite of all hope wherewith he long had fedd
His foolish malady, and long time had misledd.

IV.

With thought whereof exceeding mad he grew,
And in his rage his mother would have slaine,
Had she not fled into a secret mew,⁶
Where she was wont her sprightes to entertaine,
The maisters of her art : there was she faine⁷
To call them all in order to her ayde,
And them conjure, upon eternall paine,
To counsell her so carefully⁸ dismayd
How she might heale her sonne whose senses were decayd.⁹

V.

By their advice, and her owne wicked wit,
She there deviz'd a wondrous worke to frame,
Whose like on earth was never framed yit ;
That even Nature selfe envide the same,
And grudg'd to see the counterfet should shame

¹ *Earst*, before.² *Reliv'd*, reanimated.³ *Algates*, at any rate.⁴ *Sith*, since.⁵ *Dempt*, deemed.⁶ *Mew*, hiding-place.⁷ *Faine*, glad.⁸ *Carefully*, sorrowfully.⁹ *Decayd*, impaired.

The thing itselfe: In hand she boldly tooke
 To make another like the former Dame,
 Another Florimell, in shape and looke
 So lively,¹ and so like, that many it mistooke.

VI.

The substance, whereof she the body made,
 Was purest snow in massy mould congeald,
 Which she had gathered in a shady glade
 Of the Riphœan hills, to her reveald
 By errant² sprights, but from all men conceald:
 The same she tempred with fine mercury
 And virgin wax³ that never yet was seald,
 And mingled them with perfect vermily⁴;
 That like a lively sanguine it seemd to the eye.

VII.

Instead of eyes two burning lampes she set
 In silver sockets, shyning like the skyes,
 And a quicke moving spirit did arret⁵
 To stirre and roll them like to womens eyes:
 Instead of yellow lockes she did devyse
 With golden wyre to weave her curled head:
 Yet golden wyre was not so yellow thryse
 As Florimells fayre heare: and, in the stead
 Of life, she put a spright to rule the carcas dead;

VIII.

A wicked spright, yfraught⁶ with fawning guyle

¹ *Lively*, life-like.² *Errant*, wandering.³ *Wax*, wax.⁴ *Vermily*, vermilion.⁵ *Arret*, appoint.⁶ *Yfraught*, filled.

VI. 4. — *Riphœan hills*.] These were mountains (probably imaginary) in the north of Scythia. The name was applied to any cold mountains.

VII. 7. — *Was not so yellow thryse*.] Was not a third part so yellow.

And fayre resemblance above all the rest,
 Which with the Prince of Darkenes fell somewhyle ¹
 From hevens blis and everlasting rest :
 Him needed not instruct which way were best
 Himselfe to fashion likest Florimell,
 Ne how to speake, ne how to use his gest ² ;
 For he in counterfesaunce ³ did excell,
 And all the wyles of wemens wits knew passing well.

IX.

Him shaped thus she deckt in garments gay,
 Which Florimell had left behind her late ;
 That whoso then her saw, would surely say
 It was herselfe whom it did imitate,
 Or fayrer then herselfe, if ought algate ⁴
 Might fayrer be. And then she forth her brought
 Unto her sonne that lay in feeble state ;
 Who seeing her gan streight upstart, and thought
 She was the Lady selfe whom he so long had sought.

X.

Tho, ⁵ fast her clipping ⁶ twixt his armēs twayne,
 Extremely ioyed in so happy sight,
 And soone forgot his former sickely payne :
 But she, the more to seeme such as she hight, ⁷
 Coyly rebutted ⁸ his embracement light ;
 Yet still, with gentle countenance, retain'd
 Enough to hold a foole in vaine delight :
 Him long she so with shadowes entertain'd,
 As her creatresse had in charge to her ordain'd :

¹ *Somewhyle*, formerly.² *Gest*, deportment.³ *Counterfesaunce*, counterfeiting.⁴ *Algate*, by any means.⁵ *Tho*, then.⁶ *Clipping*, embracing⁷ *Hight*, was called.⁸ *Rebutted*, repelled.

XI.

Till on a day, as he disposed was
 To walke the woodes with that his idole¹ faire,
 Her to disport and idle time to pas
 In th' open freshnes of the gentle aire,
 A Knight that way there chaunced to repaire;
 Yet Knight he was not, but a boastfull swaine
 That deedes of armes had ever in despaire,
 Proud Braggadocchio, that in vaunting vaine
 His glory did repose and credit did maintaine.

XII.

He, seeing with that Chorle² so faire a wight
 Decked with many a costly ornament,
 Much merveiled thereat, as well he might,
 And thought that match a fowle disparagement:
 His bloody speare eftesoones³ he boldly bent
 Against the silly Clowne, who dead through feare
 Fell streight to ground in great astonishment:
 "Vilain," sayd he, "this Lady is my deare;
 Dy, if thou it gainesay: I will away her beare."

XIII.

The fearefull Chorle² durst not gainesay nor dooe,
 But trembling stood, and yielded him the pray;
 Who, finding litle leasure her to wooe,
 On Tromparts steed her mounted without stay,
 And without reskew led her quite away.
 Proud man himselfe then Braggadocchio deem'd,
 And next to none, after that happy day,

¹ *Idole*, image. ² *Chorle*, churl. ³ *Eftesoones*, immediately.

XI. 8. — *Proud Braggadocchio*.] Braggadocchio appears from the third canto of the second book.

XII. 5. — *His bloody speare*.] This is ironical.

XIII. 7. — *And next to none*.] That is, second to none.

Being possessed of that spoyle, which seem'd
The fairest wight on ground and most of men esteem'd.

XIV.

But, when he saw himselfe free from poursute,
He gan make gentle purpose¹ to his Dame
With termes of love and lewdnesse dissolute;
For he could well his glozing² speaches frame
To such vaine uses that him best became:
But she thereto would lend but light regard,
As seeming sory that she ever came
Into his powre, that used her so hard
To reave³ her honor which she more then⁴ life prefard.

XV.

Thus as they two of kindnes treated long,
There them by chaunce encountred on the way
An armed Knight upon a courser strong,
Whose trampling feete upon the hollow lay⁵
Seemed to thunder, and did nigh affray
That Capons corage; yet he looked grim,
And faynd to cheare his Lady in dismay,
Who seemd for feare to quake in every lim,
And her to save from outrage meekely prayed him.

XVI.

Fiercely that Straunger forward came; and, nigh
Approching, with bold words and bitter threat
Bad that same Boaster, as he mote on high,
To leave to him that Lady for excheat,

¹ Purpose, conversation.² Glozing, deceiving.³ Reave, take away.⁴ Then, than.⁵ Lay, lea.

XV. 3. — *An armed Knight.*] The name of this knight is Sir Ferrag, as we learn in the second canto of the fourth book.

XVI. 3. — *As he mote on high.*] In as peremptory a manner as he could.

XVI. 4. — *Excheat.*] *Escheat.* — Lands which are forfeited, or to

Or bide¹ him batteill without further treat.²
 That challenge did too peremptory seeme,
 And filld his senses with abashment great;
 Yet, seeing nigh him ieopardy extreme,
 He it dissembled well, and light seemd to esteeme;

XVII.

Saying, "Thou foolish Knight, that weenst with words
 To steale away that I with blowes have wonne,
 And brought through points of many perilous swords!
 But if thee list to see thy courser ronne,
 Or prove thyselfe; this sad encounter shonne,
 And seeke els without hazard of thy hedd."
 At those prowde words that other Knight begonne
 To wax exceeding wroth, and him aredd³
 To turne his steede about, or sure he should be dedd.

XVIII.

"Sith⁴ then," said Braggadochio, "needes thou wilt
 Thy daies abridge, through proofs of puissance;
 Turne we our steeds; that both in equall tilt
 May meete againe, and each take happy chaunce."
 This said, they both a furlongs mountenaunce⁵
 Retird their steeds, to ronne in even race:
 But Braggadochio with his bloody launce
 Once having turnd, no more returnd his face,
 But lefte his Love to losse, and fled himselfe apace.

XIX.

The Knight, him seeing flie, had no regard

¹ *Bide*, bid, offer.² *Treat*, parley.³ *Arredd*, told.⁴ *Sith*, since.⁵ *Mountenaunce*, distance.

which there is no heir, *escheat* or revert to the lord of whom they are held.

Him to poursew, but to the Lady rode ;
 And, having her from Trompart lightly reard,¹
 Upon his courser sett the lovly lode,
 And with her fled away without abode² :
 Well weened he, that fairest Florimell
 It was with whom in company he yode,³
 And so herselfe did alwaies to him tell ;
 So made him thinke himselfe in heven that was in hell.

XX.

But Florimell herselfe was far away,
 Driven to great distresse by fortune straunge,
 And taught the carefull mariner to play,⁴
 Sith⁵ late mischaunce had her compeld to chaunge
 The land for sea, at randon there to raunge :
 Yett there that cruell queene avengeresse,
 Not satisfyde so far her to estraunge
 From courtly blis and wonted happinesse,
 Did heape on her new waves of weary wretchednesse.

XXI.

For, being fled into the fishers bote
 For refuge from the monsters cruelty,
 Long so she on the mighty maine did flote,
 And with the tide drove forward carelesly ;
 For th' ayre was milde and cleared was the skie,
 And all his windes dan Aeolus did keepe

¹ *Reard*, taken. ² *Abode*, delay. ³ *Yode*, went.
Play, act the part of. ⁵ *Sith*, since.

XX. 1. — *But Florimell herselfe.*] See the twenty-seventh stanza of the preceding canto.

XX. 6. — *Cruell queene avengeresse.*] *Queene* here is a personification of Fate, or Destiny, which pursued Florimel with a sort of revengeful cruelty.

From stirring up their stormy enmity,
 As pittying to see her waile and weepe;
 But all the while the fisher did securely sleepe.

XXII.

At last when droncke with drowsinesse he woke,
 And saw his drover¹ drive along the streame,
 He was dismayd; and thrise his brest he stroke,
 For marveill of that accident extreame:
 But when he saw that blazing beauties beame,
 Which with rare light his bote did beautifye,
 He marveild more, and thought he yet did dreame,
 Not well awakte; or that some extasye
 Assotted² had his sence, or dazed³ was his eye.

XXIII.

But, when her well avizing⁴ hee perceiv'd
 To be no vision nor fantasticke sight,
 Great comfort of her presence he conceiv'd,
 And felt in his old corage⁵ new delight
 To gin awake, and stir his frozen spright:
 Tho⁶ rudely askte her, how she thether came?
 "Ah!" sayd she, "father, I note read⁷ aright
 What hard misfortune brought me to this same;
 Yet am I glad that here I now in safety ame.

XXIV.

"But thou, good man, sith⁸ far in sea we bee,
 And the great waters gin apace to swell,
 That now no more we can the mayn-land see,

¹ *Drover*, boat.⁵ *Corage*, heart, mind.² *Assotted*, bewildered, bewitched.⁶ *Tho*, then.³ *Dazed*, dimmed, dazzled.⁷ *Note read*, cannot explain.⁴ *Avizing*, looking at.⁸ *Sith*, since.

 XXII. 1. — *Droncke with drowsiness.*] Tired with sleeping.

Have care, I pray, to guide the cock-bote well,
 Least¹ worse on sea then² us on land befell."
 Thereat th' old man did nought but fondly grin,
 And saide, his boat the way could wisely tell :
 But his deceitfull eyes did never lin³
 To looke on her faire face and marke her snowy skin.

XXV.

The sight whereof in his congealed flesh
 Infixt such secrete sting of greedy lust,
 That the drie withered stocke it gan refresh,
 And kindled heat, that soone in flame forth brust :
 The driest wood is soonest burnt to dust.
 Rudely to her he lept, and his rough hand,
 Where ill became him, rashly would have thrust ;
 But she with angry scorne him did withstood,
 And shamefully reprov'd for his rudenes fond.⁴

XXVI.

But he, that never good nor maners knew,
 Her sharpe rebuke full litle did esteeme ;
 Hard is to teach an old horse amble trew :
 The inward smoke, that did before but steeme,
 Broke into open fire and rage extreme ;
 And now he strength gan adde unto his will,
 Forcyng to doe that did him fowle misseeme :
 Beastly he threwe her downe, ne car'd to spill
 Her garments gay with scales of fish, that all did fill.

XXVII.

The silly⁵ Virgin strove him to withstand

¹ *Least, lest.*² *Then, than.*³ *Lin, cease.*⁴ *Fond, foolish.*⁵ *Silly, innocent.*

XXVI. 7.—*Forcyng to doe, &c.*] Using force to do that which
 foully misbecame him.

All that she might, and him in vaine revild ;
 Shee struggled strongly both with foote and hand
 To save her honor from that villaine vilde,
 And cride to heven, from humane help exild.
 O ! ye brave Knights, that boast this Ladies love,
 Where be ye now, when she is nigh defild
 Of filthy wretch ! well may she you reprove
 Of falsehood or of slouth, when most it may behove !

XXVIII.

But if that thou, Sir Satyran, didst weete,¹
 Or thou, Sir Peridure, her sory state,
 How soone would yee assemble many a fleets,
 To fetch from sea that ye at land lost late !
 Towres, citties, kingdomes, ye would ruinate
 In your avengement and despiteous rage,
 Ne ought your burning fury mote abate :
 But, if Sir Calidore could it presage,
 No living creature could his cruelty asswage.

XXIX.

But, sith² that none of all her Knights is nye,
 See how the heavens, of voluntary grace
 And soveraine favor towards chastity,
 Doe succor send to her distressed cace :
 So much High God doth innocence embrace³ !
 It fortun'd, whilest thus she stilly strove,
 And the wide sea impörtuned long space
 With shrilling shriekes, Proteus abrode did rove,
 Along the fomy waves driving his finny drove.

¹ *Weete*, know.² *Sith*, since.³ *Embrace*, protect.

XXVIII. 1.—*But if that thou, Sir Satyran, &c.*] Of the three knights, mentioned in this stanza, we are already acquainted with one, Sir Satyrane; Sir Calidore we meet hereafter; but of Sir Peridure we hear no more.

XXX.

Proteus is shepheard of the seas of yore,
 And hath the charge of Neptune's mighty heard ;
 An aged sure with head all frowy hore,¹
 And sprinckled frost upon his deawy beard :
 Who when those pittifull outcries he heard
 Through all the seas so ruefully resownd,
 His charett swifte in hast he thether steard,
 Which with a teeme of scaly Phocas bownd
 Was drawne upon the waves, that fomed him arownd ;

XXXI.

And comming to that fishers wandring bote,
 That went at will withouten card or sayle,
 He therein saw that yrkesome sight, which smote
 Deepe indignation and compassion frayle²
 Into his hart attonce : streight did he hayle³
 The greedy villein from his hoped pray,
 Of which he now did very little fayle ;
 And with his staffe, that drives his heard astray,
 Him bett so sore, that life and sence did much dismay.

XXXII.

The whiles the pitteous lady up did ryse,
 Ruffled and fowly raid⁴ with filthy soyle,
 And blubbred⁵ face with teares of her faire eyes ;
 Her heart nigh broken was with weary toyle,
 To save herselfe from that outrageous spoyle :
 But when she looked up, to weet⁶ what wight
 Had her from so infamous fact assoyld,⁷
 For shame, but more for feare of his grim sight,
 Downe in her lap she hid her face, and lowdly shrigh⁸.

¹ *Frowy hore*, mossy hoar.² *Frayle*, tender.³ *Hayle*, hale, drag.⁴ *Raid*, disfigured.⁵ *Blubbred*, disfigured with weeping.⁶ *Weet*, learn.⁷ *Assoyld*, rescued.⁸ *Skright*, shrieked.

XXXIII.

Herselfe not saved yet from daunger dredd
 She thought, but chaung'd from one to other feare :
 Like as a fearefull partridge, that is fledd
 From the sharpe hauke which her attached ¹ neare,
 And fals to ground to seekt, for succor theare,
 Whereas the hungry spaniells she does spye
 With greedy iawes her ready for to teare :
 In such distresse and sad perplexity
 Was Florimell, when Proteus she did see her by.

XXXIV.

But he endeavored with speaches milde
 Her to recomfort, and accourage bold,
 Bidding her feare no more her foeman vilde,
 Nor doubt himselfe ; and who he was her told :
 Yet all that could not from affright her hold,
 Ne to recomfort her at all prevayld ;
 For her faint hart was with the frosen cold
 Benumbd so inly that her wits nigh fayld,
 And all her senses with abashment quite were quayld.

XXXV.

Her up betwixt his rugged hands he reard,
 And with his frory ² lips full softly kist,
 Whiles the cold ysickles from his rough beard
 Dropped adowne upon her yvory brest :
 Yet he himselfe so busily addrest,³
 That her out of astonishment he wrought ;
 And, out of that same fishers filthy nest
 Removing her, into his charet brought,
 And there with many gentle termes her faire besought.

¹ *Attached*, attacked. ² *Frory*, frozen. ³ *Addrest*, busied, employed.

XXXIV. 2. — *Accourage bold*.] Encourage so that she might feel secure.

XXXVI.

But that old leachour, which with bold assault
 That beautie durst presume to violate,
 He cast¹ to punish for his hainous fault:
 Then tooke he him yet trembling sith² of late
 And tyde behind his charet, to aggrate³
 The Virgin whom he had abusde so sore;
 So drag'd him through the waves in scornful state,
 And after cast him up upon the shore;
 But Florimell with him unto his bowre⁴ he bore.

XXXVII.

His bowre⁴ is in the bottom of the maine,
 Under a mightie rocke gainst which doe rave
 The roring billowes in their proud disdainne,
 That with the angry working of the wave
 Therein is eaten out an hollow cave,
 That seemes rough masons hand with engines keene
 Had long while laboured it to engrave⁵:
 There was his wonne⁶; ne living wight was seene
 Save one old nymph, hight⁷ Panopè, to keepe it cleane.

XXXVIII.

Thether he brought the sory Florimell,
 And entertained her the best he might,
 (And Panopè her entertaind eke well,)
 As an immortall mote a mortall wight,
 To winne her liking unto his delight:
 With flattering wordes he sweetly wooed her,
 And offered faire guiftes t' allure her sight;
 But she both offers and the offerer
 Despysde, and all the fawning of the flatterer.

¹ *Cast*, resolved.² *Sith*, since.³ *Aggrate*, please.⁴ *Bowre*, residence.⁵ *Engrave*, cut out.⁶ *Wonne*, dwelling.⁷ *Hight*, called.

XXXIX.

Dayly he tempted her with this or that,
 And never suffred her to be at rest :
 But evermore she him refused flat,
 And all his fained kindnes did detest ;
 So firmly she had sealed up her brest.
 Sometimes he boasted that a god he hight¹ ;
 But she a mortall creature loved best :
 Then he would make himselfe a mortall wight ;
 But then she said she lov'd none but a Faery Knight.

XL.

Then like a Faerie Knight himselfe he drest ;
 For every shape on him he could endew :
 Then like a king he was to her exprest,
 And offred kingdoms unto her in vew
 To be his Leman and his Lady trew :
 But, when all this he nothing saw prevaile,
 With harder meanes he cast² her to subdew,
 And with sharpe threates her often did assaile ;
 So thinking for to make her stubborne corage quayle.

XLI.

To dreadfull shapes he did himselfe transforme :
 Now like a gyaunt ; now like to a feend ;
 Then like a centaure ; then like to a storme
 Raging within the waves : Thereby he weend
 Her will to win unto his wished eend :
 But when with feare, nor favour, nor with all
 He els could doe, he saw himselfe esteemd,
 Downe in a dongeon deepe he let her fall,
 And threatned there to make her his eternall thrall.

¹ *Hight*, was called.² *Cast*, endeavored.

XLII.

Eternall thraldome was to her more lief¹
 Then² losse of chastitie, or change of love:
 Dye had she rather in tormenting grieffe
 Then² any should of falsenesse her reprove,
 Or loosenes, that she lightly did remove.³
 Most vertuous Virgin! glory be thy meed,
 And crowne of heavenly prayse with saintes above,
 Where most sweet hymnes of this thy famous deed
 Are still emongst them song, that far my rymes exceed:

XLIII.

Fit song of⁴ angels caroled to bee!
 But yet whatso my feeble Muse can frame,
 Shal be t' advance thy goodly chastitee,
 And to enroll thy memorable name
 In th' heart of every honourable Dame,
 That they thy vertuous deedes may imitate,
 And be partakers of thy endlesse fame.
 Yt yrkes me leave thee in this wofull state,
 To tell of Satyrane where I him left of late:

XLIV.

Who having ended with that Squyre of Dames
 A long discourse of his adventures vayne,⁵
 The which himselfe then² Ladies more defames,
 And finding not th' hyena to be slayne,
 With that same Squyre retourned backe againe
 To his first way: And, as they forward went,
 They spyde a Knight fayre pricking on the playne,

¹ *More liefse*, preferable. ² *Then*, than. ³ *Remove*, change.

⁴ *Of by*.

⁵ *Vayne*, fruitless.

As if he were on some adventure bent,
And in his port appeared manly hardiment.¹

XLV.

Sir Satyrane him towardes did addresse,
To weet² what wight he was, and what his quest³:
And, comming nigh, eftsoones⁴ he gan to gesse
Both by the burning hart which on his brest
He bare, and by the colours in his crest,
That Paridell it was: Tho⁵ to him yode,⁶
And, him saluting as beseemed best,
Gan first inquire of tydinges farre abrode;
And afterwarde on what adventure now he rode.

XLVI.

Who thereto answering said; "The tydinges bad,
Which now in Faery Court all men doe tell,
Which turned hath great mirth to mourning sad,
Is the late ruine of proud Marinell,
And suddein parture⁷ of faire Florimell
To find him forth: and after her are gone
All the brave Knightes, that doen in armes excell,
To savegard⁸ her ywandred⁹ all alone;
Amongst the rest my lott (unworthy) is to be one."

XLVII.

"Ah! gentle Knight," said then Sir Satyrane,

¹ *Hardiment*, courage.

⁶ *Yode*, went.

² *Weet*, learn.

⁷ *Parture*, departure

³ *Quest*, object of pursuit.

⁸ *Savegard*, safeguard, protect.

⁴ *Eftsoones*, immediately.

⁹ *Ywandred*, wandering.

⁵ *Tho*, then.

XLV. 6.—*That Paridell it was.*] This is the first appearance of Paridell. We are nowhere informed how he and Satyrane became acquainted. Paridell is an agreeable and accomplished libertine. The "burning hart" is also a part of the description of Lechery in the fourth canto of the first book. *Paridell*, according to Upton, represents the earl of Westmoreland.

"Thy labour all is lost, I greatly dread,
 That hast a thanklesse service on thee ta'ne,
 And offrest sacrifice unto the dead:
 For dead, I surely doubt,¹ thou maist aread²
 Henceforth for ever Florimell to bee;
 That all the noble Knights of Maydenhead,
 Which her ador'd, may sore repent³ with mee,
 And all faire Ladies may for ever sory bee."

XLVIII.

Which wordes when Paridell had heard, his hew
 Gan greatly chaung, and seemd dismaid to bee;
 Then sayd; "Fayre Sir, how may I weene it trew,
 That ye doe tell in such uncerteintee?
 Or speake ye of report, or did ye see
 Iust cause of dread, that makes ye doubt¹ so sore?
 For perdie⁴ elles⁵ how mote it ever bee,
 That ever hand should dare for to engore⁶
 Her noble blood! The hevens such crueltie abhore."

XLIX.

"These eyes did see that they will ever rew⁷
 T^e have seene," quoth he, "whenas a monstrous beast
 The palfrey whereon she did travell slew,
 And of his bowels made his bloody feast:
 Which speaking token sheweth at the least
 Her certain losse, if not her sure decay⁸:
 Besides, that more suspicion encreast,
 I found her golden girdle cast astray,
 Distaynd with durt and blood, as relique of the pray."

¹ *Doubt*, fear.⁵ *Elles*, else.² *Aread*, deem.⁶ *Engore*, shed.³ *Repent*, grieve.⁷ *Rew*, pity.⁴ *Perdie*, truly.⁸ *Decay*, destruction, death.

 XLIX. 8. — *I found her golden girdle cast astray.*] In the second

L.

“ Ah me ! ” said Paridell, “ the signes be sadd ;
 And, but God turne the same to good soothsay,¹
 That Ladies safetie is sore to be dradd² :
 Yet will I not forsake my forward way,
 Till triall doe more certeine truth bewray.”
 “ Faire Sir,” quoth he, “ well may it you succeed !
 Ne long shall Satyrane behind you stay ;
 But to the rest, which in this quest³ proceed,
 My labour adde, and be partaker of their speed.”

LI.

“ Ye noble Knights,” said then the Squire of Dames,
 “ Well may yee speede in so praiseworthy payne !
 But sith⁴ the sunne now ginnes⁵ to slake his beames
 In dewy vapours of the westerne mayne,
 And lose the teme out of his weary wayne,
 Mote not mislike you also to abate
 Your zealous hast, till morrow next againe
 Both light of heven and strength of men relate⁶ :
 Which if ye please, to yonder Castle turne your gate.”

LII.

That counsell pleased well ; so all yfere⁷
 Forth marched to a Castle them before ;
 Where soone arriving they restrained were
 Of ready entraunce, which ought evermore
 To errant Knights be commune : Wondrous sore

¹ *Soothsay*, omen.⁵ *Ginnes*, begins.² *Dradd*, dreaded.⁶ *Relate*, bring back.³ *Quest*, pursuit.⁷ *Yfere*, together.⁴ *Sith*, since.

stanza of this book, we are told that the beast went back with the girdle to the witch.

Thereat displeasd they were, till that young Squyre
Gan them informe the cause why that same dore
Was shut to all which lodging did desyre :
The which to let you weet¹ will further time requyre.

¹ *West, learn.*

CANTO IX.

Malbecco will no straunge Knights host,¹
 For peevisch gealosity:
 Paridell giusts with Britomart:
 Both shew their auncestry.

I.

REDOUBTED Knights, and honorable Dames,
 To whom I leuell² all my labours end,
 Right sore I feare least³ with unworthy blames
 This odious argument⁴ my rymes should shend,⁵
 Or ought your goodly patience offend,
 Whiles of a wanton Lady I doe write,
 Which with her loose incontinence doth blend⁶
 The shyning glory of your souveraine light;
 And knighthood fowle defaced by a faithlesse Knight.

II.

But never let th' ensample of the bad
 Offend the good: for good, by paragone⁷
 Of evill, may more notably be rad⁸;
 As white seemes fayrer matcht with blacke attone⁹:
 Ne all are shamed by the fault of one:

¹ *Host*, entertain.² *Levell*, aim, direct.³ *Least*, lest.⁴ *Argument*, subject.⁵ *Shend*, disgrace.⁶ *Blend*, blind, dim.⁷ *Paragone*, contrast.⁸ *Rad*, perceived.⁹ *Attone*, at one, together.

I. 9. — *And knighthood, &c.*] And of knighthood, &c.

For lo! in heven, whereas all goodnes is
 Emongst the angels, a whole legione
 Of wicked sprights did fall from happy blis ;
 What wonder then if one, of women all, did mis¹?

III.

Then listen, Lordings, if ye list to weet²
 The cause why Satyrane and Paridell
 Mote not be entertaynd, as seemed meet,
 Into that Castle, as that Squyre does tell.
 "Therein a cancred crabbed Carle³ does dwell,
 That has no skill of court nor courtesie,
 Ne cares what men say of him ill or well :
 For all his dayes he drownes in privitie,
 Yet has full large to live and spend at libertie.

IV.

"But all his mind is set on mucky⁴ pelfe,
 To hoord up heapes of evill-gotten masse,⁵
 For which he others wrongs, and wreckes himselfe :
 Yet he is lincked⁶ to a lovely Lasse,
 Whose beauty doth her bounty⁷ far surpasse :
 The which to him both far unequall yeares
 And also far unlike conditions⁸ has ;
 For she does ioy to play emongst her peares,
 And to be free from hard restraynt and gealous feares.

V.

"But he is old, and withered like hay,

¹ *Mis*, err.

² *Weet*, learn.

³ *Cancred crabbed Carle*, ill-natured old man.

⁴ *Mucky*, vile.

⁵ *Masse*, wealth.

⁶ *Lincked*, married.

⁷ *Bounty*, goodness.

⁸ *Conditions*, tastes.

III. 5. — *Therein, &c.*] The Squire of Dames here begins his narrative.

IV. 6. — *The which.*] Who; that is, his wife.

Unfit faire Ladies service to supply ;
 The privie guilt whereof makes him alway
 Suspect her truth, and keepe continuall spy
 Upon her with his other blinkt¹ eye ;
 Ne suffreth he resort of living wight
 Approch to her, ne keep her company,
 But in close bowre² her mewes³ from all mens sight,
 Depriv'd of kindly ioy and naturall delight.

VI.

“ Malbecco he, and Hellenore she hight⁴ ;
 Unfitly yokt together in one teeme.
 That is the cause why never any Knight
 Is suffred here to enter, but⁵ he seeme
 Such as no doubt of him he need misdeeme.”
 Thereat Sir Satyrane gan smyle, and say ;
 “ Extremely mad the man I surely deeme
 That weenes, with watch and hard restraynt, to stay
 A womans will which is disposd to go astray.

VII.

“ In vaine he feares that which he cannot shonne :
 For who wotes⁶ not, that womans subtiltyes
 Can guylen⁷ Argus, when she list misdonne ?
 It is not yron bandes, nor hundred eyes,
 Nor brasen walls, nor many wakefull spyes,

¹ *Blinkt*, dim.⁵ *But*, unless.² *Bowre*, chamber, room.⁶ *Wotes*, knows.³ *Mewes*, secludes.⁷ *Guylen*, deceive.⁴ *Hight*, is called.

V. 5.—*His other blinkt eye.*] *Other*, according to Upton, means *left*.

VI. 4.—*But he seems, &c.*] Unless he seems to be such as can afford no occasion for doubt or suspicion.

VII. 3.—*When she list misdonne.*] When she wishes to do wrong.

That can withhold her wilfull-wandering feet ;
 But fast goodwill, with gentle courtesyes,
 And timely service to her pleasures meet,
 May her perhaps containe ¹ that else would algates ² fleet.³"

VIII.

"Then is he not more mad," sayd Paridell,
 "That hath himselfe unto such service sold,
 In dolefull thraldome all his dayes to dwell ?
 For sure a foole I doe him firmly hold,
 That loves his fetters, though they were of gold.
 But why doe wee devise of others ill,
 Whyles thus we suffer this same Dotard old
 To keepe us out in scorne, of his owne will,
 And rather do not ransack all, and himselfe kill ?"

IX.

"Nay, let us first," sayd Satyrane, "entreat
 The man by gentle meanes, to let us in ;
 And afterwarde affray with cruell threat,
 Ere that we to efforce it doe begin :
 Then, if all fayle, we will by force it win,
 And eke reward the wretch for his mesprise,⁴
 As may be worthy of his haynous sin."
 That counsell pleasd : Then Paridell did rise,
 And to the Castle-gate approcht in quiet wise :

X.

Whereat soft knocking, entrance he desyrd.
 The good man ⁵ selfe, which then the porter playd,
 Him answered, that all were now retyrd
 Unto their rest, and all the keyes conveyd

¹ *Containe*, detain. ² *Algates*, at all events. ³ *Fleet*, flit, flee
⁴ *Mesprise*, insolence. ⁵ *Good man*, master of the house.

VIII. 8. — *Of his owne will.*] Thus gratifying his own will.

Unto their Maister who in bed was layd,
 That none him durst awake out of his dreame;
 And therefore them of patience gently prayd.
 Then Paridell began to chaunge his theme,
 And threatned him with force and punishment extreme.

XI.

But all in vaine; for nought mote him relent:
 And now so long before the wicket fast
 They wayted, that the night was forward spent,
 And the faire welkin¹ fowly overcast
 Gan blowen up a bitter stormy blast,
 With showre and hayle so horrible and dred,
 That this faire many² were compeld at last
 To fly for succour to a little shed,
 The which beside the gate for swyne was ordered.

XII.

It fortun'd, soone after they were gone,
 Another Knight, whom tempest thether brought,
 Came to that Castle, and with earnest mone,
 Like as the rest, late entrance deare³ besought;
 But, like so as the rest, he prayd for nought;
 For flatly he of entrance was refusd:
 Sorely thereat he was displeas'd, and thought
 How to avenge himselfe so sore abus'd,
 And evermore the Carle of courtesie accus'd.

¹ *Welkin, sky.* ² *Many, company.* ³ *Deare, earnestly.*

X. 7.—*And therefore them, &c.*] And therefore appealed to their patience or forbearance to excuse his denying them admittance. .

XII. 2.—*Another Knight.*] This is Britomart.

XII 9 — *Of courtesie accus'd.*] Accused him as being without courtesy.

XIII.

But, to avoyde th' intollerable stowre,¹
 He was compeld to seeke some refuge neare,
 And to that shed, to shrowd him from the showre,
 He came, which full of guests he found whyleare,²
 So as he was not let to enter there :
 Whereat he gan to wex exceeding wroth,
 And swore that he would lodge with them yfere³
 Or them dislodg, all⁴ were they liefse⁵ or loth ;
 And so defyde them each, and so defyde them both.

XIV.

Both were full loth to leave that needfull tent,⁶
 And both full loth in darkenesse to debate⁷ ;
 Yet both full liefse⁵ him lodging to have lent,
 And both full liefse⁵ his boasting to abate :
 But chiefly Paridell his hart did grate⁸
 To heare him threaten so despightfully,
 As if he did a dogge in kenell rate
 That durst not barke ; and rather had he dy
 Then,⁹ when he was defyde, in coward corner ly.

XV.

Tho,¹⁰ hastily remounting to his steed,
 He forth issew'd ; like as a boystrous winde,
 Which in th' earthes hollow caves bath long ben hid
 And shut up fast within her prisons blind,
 Makes the huge element, against her kinde,¹¹
 To move and tremble as it were aghast,

¹ *Stowre*, storm.² *Whyleare*, before.³ *Yfere*, together.⁴ *All*, although, whether.⁵ *Liefse*, willing.⁶ *Tent*, shelter.⁷ *Debate*, fight.⁸ *His hart did grate*, felt indignant.⁹ *Then*, than.¹⁰ *Tho*, then.¹¹ *Kinde*, nature.

Untill that it an issew forth may finde ;
 Then forth it breakes, and with his furious blast
 Confounds both land and seas, and skyes doth overcast.

XVI.

Their steel-hed speares they strongly coucht, and met
 Together with impetuous rage and forse,
 That with the terrour of their fierce affret¹
 They rudely drove to ground both man and horse,
 That each awhile lay like a sencelesse corse.
 But Paridell sore brused with the blow
 Could not arise, the counterchaunge to scorse ;
 Till that young Squyre him reared from below ;
 Then drew he his bright sword, and gan about him throw.

XVII.

But Satyrane forth stepping did them stay,
 And with faire treaty pacifide their yre :
 Then, when they were accorded² from the fray,
 Against that Castles Lord they gan conspire,
 To heape on him dew vengeance for his hire.
 They beene agreed, and to the gates they goe
 To burn the same with únquenchable fire,
 And that uncurteous Carle, their commune foe,
 To doe fowle death to die, or wrap in grievous woe.

¹ *Affret*, encounter.² *Accorded*, made to agree.

XVI. 7. — *The counterchaunge to scorse.*] To make a fair exchange ;
 i. e. of blows on foot.

XVII. 7. — *With únquenchable fire.*] Todd asks how they could pro-
 cure fire on so stormy a night ; a question reminding one much more
 of an advocate arguing against a statement in a deposition than of a
 true critic.

XVII. 9. — *To doe fowle death to die.*] To make or cause to die a
 foul death.

XVIII.

Malbecco seeing them resolv'd in deed
 To flame the gates, and hearing them to call
 For fire in earnest, ran with fearfull speed,
 And, to them calling from the castle wall,
 Besought them humbly him to beare withall,
 As ignorant of servants bad abuse
 And slacke attendaunce unto straungers call.
 The Knights were willing all things to excuse,
 Though nought belev'd, and entraunce late did not refuse.

XIX.

They beene ybrought into a comely bowre,¹
 And serv'd of all things that mote needfull bee ;
 Yet secretly their hoste did on them lowre,
 And welcomde more for feare then ² charitee ;
 But they dissembled what they did not see,
 And welcomed themselves. Each gan undight
 Their garments wett, and weary armour free,
 To dry themselves by Vulcanes flaming light,
 And eke their lately bruized parts to bring in plight.³

XX.

And eke that straunger Knight emongst the rest
 Was for like need enforst to disaray :
 Tho,⁴ whenas vailed ⁵ was her lofty crest,⁶
 Her golden locks, that were in tramells gay

¹ *Bowre*, chamber.² *Then*, than.³ *Bring in plight*, restore, heal.⁴ *Tho*, then.⁵ *Vailed*, laid down.⁶ *Crest*, helmet.

XIX. 5. — *But they dissembled, &c.*] They took no notice of Malbecco's want of hospitality, but welcomed themselves. "What they did not see" was Malbecco's hospitality, which was not tendered.

XX. 4. — *in tramells gay*

Upbounden.] Braided and twined round the head.

Upbounden, did themselves adowne display
 And raught¹ unto her heeles; like sunny beames,
 That in a cloud their light did long time stay,
 Their vapour vaded,² shewe their golden gleames,
 And through the persant aire shoote forth their azure streames.

XXI.

Shee also dofte³ her heavy haberieon,⁴
 Which the faire feature of her limbes did hyde;
 And her well-plighted⁵ frock, which she did won⁶
 To tucke about her short when she did ryde,
 Shee low let fall, that flowd from her lanck⁷ syde
 Downe to her foot with carelesse modestee.
 Then of them all she plainly was espyde
 To be a woman-wight, unwist to bee,
 The fairest woman-wight that ever eie did see.

XXII.

Like as Bellona (being late returnd
 From slaughter of the giaunts conquered;
 Where proud Encelade, whose wide nosethrils burnd
 With breathed flames like to a furnace redd,
 Transfixed with her speare downe tombled dedd
 From top of Hemus by him heaped hye;)
 Hath loosd her helmet from her lofty hedd,
 And her Gorgonian shield gins to untye
 From her lefte arme, to rest in glorious victorye.

¹ Raught, reached. ² Vaded, evaded, dispersed. ³ Dofte, took off.

⁴ Haberieon, coat of mail. ⁵ Well-plighted, well-folded.

⁶ Did won, was wont. ⁷ Lanck, slender.

XX. 9. — *Through the persant aire.*] Piercing through the air.

XXI. 8. — *Unwist to bee.*] Unknown to be so; that is, till then.

XXII. 3. — *Proud Encelade.*] Enceladus was a giant, killed, however, by Jupiter, and buried under Mount Ætna.

XXII. 8. — *Her Gorgonian shield.*] Bellona is often confounded with Minerva, as in the present stanza.

XXIII.

Which whenas they beheld, they smitten were
 With great amazement of so wondrous sight ;
 And each on other, and they all on her,
 Stood gazing ; as if suddein great affright
 Had them surprizd : At last avising¹ right
 Her goodly personage and glorious hew,
 Which they so much mistooke, they tooke delight
 In their first error, and yett still anew
 With wonder of her beauty fed their hongry vew :

XXIV.

Yet n'ote² their hongry vew be satisfide,
 But, seeing, still the more desir'd to see,
 And ever firmly fixed did abide
 In contemplation of divinitee :
 But most they mervaild at her chevalree
 And noble prowesse which they had approv'd,
 That much they faynd³ to know who she mote bee ;
 Yet none of all them her thereof amov'd ;
 Yet every one her likte, and every ona her lov'd.

XXV.

And Paridell, though partly discontent
 With his late fall and fowle indignity,
 Yet was soone wonne his malice to relent,
 Through gracious regard of her faire eye,
 And knightly worth which he too late did try,
 Yet tried did adore. Supper was dight⁴ ;
 Then they Malbecco prayd of courtesy,

¹ *Avising*, discerning.³ *Faynd*, desired.² *N'ote*, could not.⁴ *Dight*, prepared.

XXIV. 8. — *Her thereof amov'd.*] Prevailed upon her to tell who she was.

That of his Lady they might have the sight
And company at meat, to doe them more delight.

XXVI.

But he, to shifte¹ their curious request,
Gan causen² why she could not come in place;
Her crased³ helth, her late recourse to rest,
And humid evening ill for sicke folkes cace:
But none of those excuses could take place⁴;
Ne would they eate, till she in presence came:
Shee came in presence with right comely grace,
And fairely them saluted, as became,
And shewd herselfe in all a gentle courteous Dame.

XXVII.

They sate to meat; and Satyrane his chaunce
Was her before, and Paridell beside;
But he himselfe sate looking still askaunce
Gainst Britomart, and ever closely eide
Sir Satyrane, that glaunces might not glide:
But his blinde eie, that sided⁵ Paridell,
All his demeanure⁶ from his sight did hide:
On her faire face so did he feede his fill,
And sent close⁷ messages of love to her at will:

XXVIII.

And ever and anone, when none was ware,⁸
With speaking lookes, that close embassage⁹ bore,
He rov'd¹⁰ at her, and told his secret care;

¹ *Shifts, evade.*² *Causen, assign reasons.*³ *Crased, impaired.*⁴ *Take place, have effect.*⁵ *Sided, was on the side towards.*⁶ *Demeanure, demeanor, conduct.*⁷ *Close, secret.*⁸ *Ware, observing.*⁹ *Close embassage, secret meaning.*¹⁰ *Rov'd, shot.*

XXVII. 3. — *He himselfe.] Malbecco.*

For all that art he learned had of yore :
 Ne was she ignoraunt of that leud lore,
 But in his eye his meaning wisely redd,
 And with the like him aunswerd evermore :
 Shee sent at him one fyrie dart, whose hedd
 Empoised was with privy lust and gealous dredd.

XXIX.

He from that deadly throw made no defence,
 But to the wound his weake heart opened wyde :
 The wicked engine through false influence
 Past through his eies, and secretly did glyde
 Into his heart, which it did sorely gryde.¹
 But nothing new to him was that same paine,
 Ne paine at all ; for he so ofte had tryde
 The powre thereof, and lov'd so oft in vaine,
 That thing of course he counted, love to entertaine.

XXX.

Thenceforth to her he sought to intimate
 His inward grieffe, by meanes to him well knowne :
 Now Bacchus fruit out of the silver plate
 He on the table dasht, as overthrowne,
 Or of the fruitfull liquor overflowne ;
 And by the dauncing bubbles did divine,
 Or therein write to lett his love be showne ;
 Which well she redd out of the learned line :
 A sacrament prophane in mistery of wine.

XXXI.

And, whenso of his hand the pledge she raught,²
 The guilty cup she fained to mistake,
 And in her lap did shed her idle draught,
 Shewing desire her inward flame to slake.

¹ *Gryde*, pierce.² *Raught*, reached.

By such close signes they secret way did make
 Unto their wils, and one eies watch escape :
 Two eies him needeth, for to watch and wake,
 Who lovers will deceive. Thus was the ape,
 By their faire handling, put into Malbeccoes cape.

XXXII.

Now, when of meats and drinks they had their fill,
 Purpose was moved by that gentle Dame
 Unto those Knights adventurous, to tell
 Of deeds of armes which unto them became,¹
 And every one his Kindred and his Name.
 Then Paridell, in whom a kindly² pride
 Of gracious speach and skill his words to frame
 Abounded, being glad of so fitte tide³
 Him to commend to her, thus spake, of al well eide :

XXXIII.

“Troy, that art now nought but an idle name,
 And in thine ashes buried low dost lie,
 Though whilome⁴ far much greater then⁵ thy fame,
 Before that angry Gods and cruell skie
 Upon thee heapt a direfull destinie ;
 What boots it boast thy glorious descent,

¹ *Became*, happened.⁴ *Whilome*, formerly.² *Kindly*, natural.⁵ *Then*, than.³ *Tide*, opportunity.

XXXI. 8. — *Thus was the ape, &c.*] *Cape* is cap. To put the ape into one's cap, is, according to Upton, a proverbial expression for making a fool of him. Thus Chaucer has —

“The monke put in the mannes hode [hood] an ape
 And in his wife's eke.”

PRIORESSES PROLOGUE.

XXXII. 9. — *Of al well eide.*] Attentively observed by all.

XXXIII. 6. — *What boots it boast, &c.*] ‘What use is it to boast of

And fetch from heven thy great genealogie,
 Sith ¹ all thy worthie prayse being blent
 Their offspring hath embaste, and later glory sheent !

XXXIV.

“ Most famous Worthy of the world, by whome
 That warre was kindled which did Troy inflame,
 And stately towres of Ilion whilóme ²
 Brought unto balefull ruine, was by name
 Sir Paris far renownd through noble fame ;
 Who, through great prowesse and bold hardinesse,
 From Lacedaemon fetcht the fayrest Dame
 That ever Greece did boast, or Knight possesse,
 Whom Venus to him gave for meed of worthinesse ;

XXXV.

“ Fayre Helene, flowre of beautie excellent,
 And girlond of the mighty conquerours,
 That madest many ladies deare ³ lament
 The heavie losse of their brave paramours,
 Which they far off beheld from Trojan toures,
 And saw the fieldes of faire Scamander strowne
 With carcasses of noble warrioures,
 Whose fruitlesse lives were under furrow sowne,
 And Xanthus sandy bankes with blood all overflowne !

¹ *Sith*, since. ² *Whilóme*, formerly. ³ *Deare*, dearly.

thy glorious descent, and fetch thy great genealogy from heaven, since, all thy formerly deserved glories being blemished or spoiled, the descendants of those former great men (that is, the present generation) have become base, and thy glory has been tarnished in later times?’

XXXV. 8. — *Whose fruitlesse lives, &c.*] These warriors lost their lives to no purpose, and therefore are compared to seeds which are thrown into the furrow, but do not come up and bear fruit.

XXXV. 9. — *Xanthus.*] Scamander and Xanthus are different names of the same river.

XXXVI.

“From him my linage I derive aright,
 Who long before the ten yeares siege of Troy,
 Whiles yet on Ida he a shepeheard hight,¹
 On faire Oenone go: a lovely boy,
 Whom, for remembrance of her passed ioy,
 She, of his father, Parius did name;
 Who, after Greekes did Priams realme destroy,
 Gathred the Trojan reliques sav’d from flame,
 And, with them sayling thence, to th’ isle of Paros came.

XXXVII.

“That was by him cald Paros, which before
 Hight¹ Nausa; there he many yeares did raine,
 And built Nausicle by the Pontick shore;
 The which he dying leste next in remaine
 To Paridas his sonne,
 From whom I Paridell by kin descend:
 But, for faire ladies love and glories gaine,
 My native soile have leste, my dayes to spend
 In sewing² deeds of arnes, my lives and labors end.”

XXXVIII.

Whenas the noble Britomart heard tell
 Of Trojan warres and Priams citie sackt,
 (The ruefull story of Sir Paridell,
 She was empassiond³ at that piteous act,⁴
 With zelous envy⁵ of Greekes cruell fact⁶
 Against that Nation, from whose race of old

¹ *Hight*, was called. ² *Secwing*, pursuing. ³ *Empassiond*, moved.

⁴ *Act*, narrative. ⁵ *Envy*, indignation. ⁶ *Fact*, deed.

XXXVI. 4. — *On faire Oenone, &c.*] Paris had a son by Oenone, a nymph of Mount Ida, before he went to Sparta. The rest of this narrative is the poet's own invention.

XXXVII. 4. — *Next in remains.*] Next in remainder.

She heard that she was lineally extract :
 For noble Britons sprong from Trojans bold,
 And Troynovant was built of old Troyes ashes cold.

XXXIX.

Then, sighing soft awhile, at last she thus :
 " O lamentable fall of famous towne,
 Which raignd so many yeares victorious,
 And of all Asie bore the soveraine crowne,
 In one sad night consumd and throwen downe !
 What stony hart, that heares thy haplesse fate,
 Is not empierst with deepe compassiowne,
 And makes ensample of mans wretched state,
 That floures so fresh at morne, and fades at evening late !

XL.

" Behold, Sir, how your pitifull complaint
 Hath fownd another partner of your payne :
 For nothing may impresse so deare constraint
 As countries cause, and commune foes disdayne.
 But, if it should not grieve you backe agayne
 To turne your course, I would to heare desyre
 What to Aeneas fell¹ ; sith² that men sayne³
 He was not in the cities wofull fyre
 Consum'd, but did himselfe to safëty retyre."

XLI.

" Anchyses sonne begott of Venus fayre,"
 Said he, " out of the flames for safëgard fled,
 And with a remnant did to sea repayre ;

¹ *Fell*, befell.² *Sith*, since.³ *Sayne*, say.XXXVIII. 9.—*Troynovant*.] This is London.XXXIX. 8.—*And makes ensample of*.] And does [not] consider it as emblematic of.

Where he, through fatall¹ errour² long was led
 Full many yeares, and weettlesse³ wandered
 From shore to shore emongst the Lybick sandes,
 Ere rest he fownd : Much there he suffered,
 And many perilles past in forreine landes,
 To save his people sad from victours vengefull handes :

XLII.

“ At last in Latium he did arryve,
 Where he with cruell warre was entertaind⁴
 Of th’ inland folke which sought him backe to drive,
 Till he with old Latinus was constraind
 To contract wedlock, so the fates ordaind ;
 Wedlocke contract in blood, and eke in blood
 Accomplished ; that many deare complaind :
 The rivall slaine, the victour (through the flood
 Escaped hardly) hardly praisd his wedlock good.

XLIII.

“ Yet, after all, he victour did survive,
 And with Latinus did the kingdom part⁵ :
 But after, when both nations gan to strive
 Into their names the title to conuart,
 His sonne Iulus did from thence depart
 With all the warlike youth of Troians bloud,
 And in Long Alba plast his throne apart ;
 Where faire it florished and long time stoud,
 Till Romulus, renewing it, to Rome removd.”

¹ *Fatall*, destined by fate. ² *Errour*, wandering.

³ *Weettlesse*, unknowing. ⁴ *Entertaind*, received. ⁵ *Part*, divide.

XLII. 3. — *Of th’ inland folke.*] These were the Rutulians, under the command of Turnus.

XLII. 4. — *With old Latinus.*] He married Lavinia, the daughter of Latinus.

XLIV.

“There ; there,” said Britomart, “afresh appeared
 The glory of the later world to spring,
 And Troy againe out of her dust was reard
 To sitt in second seat of soveraine king
 Of all the world, under her governing.
 But a third kingdom yet is to arise
 Out of the Troians scattered ofspring,
 That, in all glory and great enterprise,
 Both first and second Troy shall dare to equalise.

XLV.

“It Troynovant is hight,¹ that with the waves
 Of wealthy Thamis washed is along,
 Upon whose stubborne neck (whereat he raves
 With roxing rage, and sore himselfe does throng,
 That all men feare to tempt his billowes strong,)
 She fastned hath her foot ; which stands so hy,
 That it a wonder of the world is song
 In forreine landes ; and all, which passen by,
 Beholding it from farre doe think it threates the skye.

XLVI.

“The Troian Brute did first that citie fownd,
 And Hygate made the meare² thereof by West,
 And Overt-gate by North : that is the bownd
 Toward the land ; two rivers bownd the rest.
 So huge a scope³ at first him seemed best,
 To be the compasse⁴ of his kingdomes seat :
 So huge a mind could not in lesser rest,
 Ne in small meares² containe his glory great,
 That Albion had conquered first by warlike feat.”

¹ *Hight*, is called.³ *Scope*, dimension.² *Meare*, boundary.⁴ *Compassse*, circumference, extent.

XLVII.

“ Ah! fairest Lady-Knight,” said Paridell,
 “ Pardon I pray my heedlesse oversight,
 Who had forgot that whylome¹ I heard tell
 From aged Mnemon; for my wits beene light.
 Indeed he said, if I remember right,
 That of the antique Trojan stocke there grew
 Another plant, that raught² to wondrous height,
 And far abroad his mighty braunches threw
 Into the utmost angle³ of the world he knew.

XLVIII.

“ For that same Brute, whom much he did advaunee
 In all his speach, was Sylvius his sonne,
 Whom having slain through luckles arrowes glaunce,
 He fled for feare of that he had misdonne,⁴
 Or els for shame, so fowle reproch to shonne,
 And with him ledd to sea an youthly trayne;
 Where wearie wandring they long time did wonne,⁵
 And many fortunes prov'd in th' ocean mayne,
 And great adventures found, that now were long to sayne.⁶

XLIX.

“ At last by fatall⁷ course they driven were
 Into an Island spacious and brode,
 The furthest North that did to them appeare:
 Which, after rest, they, seeking farre abroad,
 Found it the fittest soyle for their abode,

¹ *Whylome*, formerly.⁵ *Wonne*, continue.² *Raught*, reached.⁶ *Sayne*, say, tell.³ *Angle*, corner.⁷ *Fatall*, destined.⁴ *Misdonne*, done wrongly.

XLVII. 4. — *Aged Mnemon*.] This word is derived from the Greek, and means one who calls to mind or refreshes the recollection.

XLVIII. 2. — *Sylvius his*.] Sylvius's.

Fruitfull of all thinges fitt for living foode,
 But wholly waste and void of peoples trode,¹
 Save an huge nation of the geaunts broode
 That fed on living flesh, and dronck mens vitall blood.

L.

“ Whom he, through wearie wars and labours long,
 Subdewd with losse of many Britons bold :
 In which the great Goëmagot of strong
 Corineus, and Coulin of Debon old,
 Were overthrowne and laide on th’ earth full cold,
 Which quaked under their so hideous masse :
 A famous history to bee enrold
 In everlasting monuments of brasse,
 That all the antique Worthies merits far did passe.

LI.

“ His worke great Troynovant, his worke is eke
 Faire Lincolne, both renoumed far away ;
 That who from East to West will endlong² seeke,
 Cannot two fairer cities find this day,
 Except Cleopolis ; so heard I say
 Old Mnemon : Therefore, Sir, I greet you well
 Your countrey kin ; and you entyrelly pray
 Of pardon for the strife, which late befell
 Betwixt us both unknowne.” So ended Paridell.

LII.

But all the while, that he these speeches spent
 Upon his lips hong faire Dame Hellenore
 With vigilant regard and dew attent,³
 Fashioning worldes of fancies evermore
 In her fraile witt, that now her quite forlore⁴ :

¹ *Trode*, treading, or footsteps.³ *Attent*, attention.² *Endlong*, in a line, continuously.⁴ *Forlore*, utterly deserted.

The whiles unwares away her wondring eye
 And greedy eares her weake hart from her bore :
 Which he perceiving, ever privily,
 In speaking, many false belgardes ¹ at her let fly.

LIII.

So long these Knightes discoursed diversly
 Of straunge affaires, and noble hardiment,²
 Which they had past with mickle³ ieopardy,
 That now the humid night was farforth spent,
 And hevenly lampes were halfendeale⁴ ybrent⁵ :
 Which th' old man seeing wel, who too long thought
 Every discourse, and every argument,
 Which by the houres he measured, besought
 Them go to rest. So all unto their bowres⁶ were brought.

¹ *Belgardes*, (*belles regards*, Fr.) beautiful looks.

² *Hardiment*, courage. ³ *Mickle*, much. ⁴ *Halfendeale*, half.

⁵ *Ybrent*, burned. ⁶ *Bowres*, chambers.

CANTO X.

Paridell rapeth Hellenore ;
 Malbecco her poursewes ;
 Fynds amongst Satyres, whence with him
 To turne ¹ she doth refuse.

I.

THE morrow next, so soone as Phœbus lamp
 Bewrayed had the world with early light,
 And fresh Aurora had the shady damp
 Out of the goodly heven amoved quight,
 Faire Britomart and that same Faery Knight
 Uprose, forth on their journey for to wend ².
 But Paridell complaynd, that his late fight
 With Britomart so sore did him offend,
 That ryde he could not till his hurts he did amend.

II.

So forth they far'd ; but he behind them stayd,
 Maulgre ³ his host, who grudged grivously
 To house a guest that would be needes obayd,
 And of his owne him lefte not liberty :
 Might wanting measure moveth surquedry.
 Two things he feared, but the third was death ;

¹ Turne, return. ² Wend, go. ³ Maulgre, in spite of.

II. 5.—*Might wanting measure, &c.*] Power without measure or limits—unbounded power—produces insolence.

II. 6.—*Two things he feared, &c.*] The meaning of the passage appears to be this: He feared to let him remain for two reasons—on

That fiers Youngmans unruly maystery ;
 His Money, which he lov'd as living breath ;
 And his faire Wife, whom honest long he kept uneach.¹

III.

But patience perforce ; he must abide²
 What fortune and his fate on him will lay :
 Fond³ is the feare that findes no remedie.
 Yet warily he watcheth every way,
 By which he feareth evill happen may ;
 So th' evill thinkes by watching to prevent :
 Ne doth he suffer her, nor night nor day,
 Out of his sight herselfe once to absent :
 So doth he punish her, and eke himself torment.

IV.

But Paridell kept better watch then⁴ hee,
 A fit occasion for his turne to finde.
 False Love ! why do men say thou canst not see,
 And in their foolish fancy feigne thee blinde,
 That with thy charmes the sharpest sight doest binde,
 And to thy will abuse ? Thou walkest free,
 And seest every secret of the minde ;
 Thou seest all, yet none at all sees thee :
 All that is by the working of thy deitee.

V.

So perfect in that art was Paridell,
 That he Malbeccoes halfen eye⁵ did wyle ;
 His halfen eye he wiled wondrous well,

¹ *Uneach*, hardly. ² *Abie*, abide. ³ *Fond*, foolish.

⁴ *Then*, than. ⁵ *Halfen eye*, one eye.

account of his money and his wife ; but he more feared to refuse his request, since the impetuous young man might have slain him in his indignation.

And Hellenors both eyes did eke beguyle,
 Both eyes and hart attonce, during the whyle
 That he there soiourned his woundes to heale;
 That Cupid selfe, it seeing, close¹ did smyle
 To weet² how he her love away did steale,
 And bad that none their ioyous treason should reveale.

VI.

The learned³ Lover lost no time nor tyde
 That least avantage mote to him afford,
 Yet bore so faire a sayle, that none espyde
 His secret drift till he her layd aboard.
 Whenso in open place and commune bord⁴
 He fortun'd her to meet, with commune speach
 He courted her; yet bayted every word,
 That his ungentle hoste n'ote⁵ him appeach⁶
 Of vile ungentlenesse or hospitages breach.⁷

VII.

But when apart (if ever her apart
 He found) then his false engins fast he plyde,
 And all the sleights⁸ unbosomd⁹ in his hart:
 He sigh'd, he sobd, he swownd, he perdy¹⁰ dyde,
 And cast himselfe on ground her fast besyde:
 Tho,¹¹ when againe he him bethought to live,
 He wept, and wayld, and false laments belyde,¹²
 Saying, but if¹³ she mercie would him give,
 That he mote algates¹⁴ dye, yet did his death forgive.

¹ *Close*, secretly.

² *Weet*, learn.

³ *Learned*, skilful.

⁴ *Bord*, table.

⁵ *N'ote*, could not.

⁶ *Appeach*, accuse.

⁷ *Hospitages breach*, breach of
 hospitality.

⁸ *Sleights*, devices.

⁹ *Unbosomd*, displayed.

¹⁰ *Perdy*, truly.

¹¹ *Tho*, then.

¹² *Belyde*, counterfeited.

¹³ *But if*, unless.

¹⁴ *Algates*, at all events.

VIII.

And otherwhyles with amorous delights
 And pleasing toyes he would her entertaine ;
 Now singing sweetly to surprize her sprights,
 Now making layes of love and lovers paine,
 Bransles, ballads, virelayes, and verses vaine ;
 Oft purposes, oft riddles, he devysd,
 And thousands like which flowed in his braine,
 With which he fed her fancy, and entysd
 To take to his new love, and leave her old despyd.

IX.

And every where he might and everie while
 He did her service dewtifull, and sewd
 At hand with humble pride and pleasing guile ;
 So closely¹ yet, that none but she it vewd,
 Who well perceived all, and all indewd.²
 Thus finely did he his false nets dispred,
 With which he many weake harts had subdewd
 Of yore, and many had ylike misled :
 What wonder then if she were likewise carried ?

X.

No fort so fensible,³ no wals so strong,

¹ *Closely*, secretly. ² *Indewd*, received. ³ *Fensible*, defensible.

VIII. 5.— *Bransles, ballads, virelayes, &c.*] ‘*Bransles*,’ or *brawls*, were a kind of dance. Thus Gray has—

“My grave lord-keeper led the *brawls*.”

‘*Virelays*’ were a species of song or short poem. ‘*Purposes*,’ in the next line, means the game of cross-purposes. A knowledge of riddles was one of the accomplishments of a lover in Spenser’s time. The reader will recall the ludicrous distress with which Slender, in the *Merry Wives of Windsor*, asks his servant for his “*Book of Riddles*,” when he is about to be introduced to Anne Page.

But that continuall battery will rive,¹
 Or daily siege, through dispurvayaunce² long
 And lacke of reskewes, will to parley drive ;
 And peece,³ that unto parley eare will give,
 Will shortly yield itselfe, and will be made
 The vassall of the victors will bylive⁴ :
 That stratageme had oftentimes assayd⁵
 This crafty paramoure, and now it plaine displayd :

XI.

For through his traines⁶ he her intrapped hath,
 That she her love and hart hath wholly sold
 To him without regard of gaine, or scath,⁷
 Or care of credite, or of husband old,
 Whom she hath vow'd to dub a fayre cucquold.
 Nought wants but time and place, which shortly shee
 Devized hath, and to her Lover told.
 It pleased well : So well they both agree ;
 So readie rype to ill, ill wemens counsels bee !

XII.

Darke was the evening, fit for lovers stealth,
 When chaunst Malbecco busie be elsewhere,
 She to his closet went, where all his wealth
 Lay hid ; thereof she countlesse summes did reare,⁸
 The which she meant away with her to beare ;
 The rest she fyr'd, for sport or for despight :
 As Hellene, when she saw aloft appeare
 The Troiane flames and reach to hevens hight,
 Did clap her hands, and ioyed at that doleful sight ;

¹ *Rive*, beat down.² *Dispurvayaunce*, want of provisions.³ *Peece*, castle.⁴ *Bylive*, immediately.⁵ *Assayd*, tried.⁶ *Traines*, arts.⁷ *Scath*, injury.⁸ *Reare*, take.

XIII.

The second Hellene, sayre Dame Hellenore,
 The whiles her husband ran with sory haste
 To quench the flames which she had tyn'd¹ before,
 Laught at his foolish labour spent in waste,²
 And ran into her Lovers armes right fast ;
 Where streight embraced she to him did cry
 And call aloud for helpe, ere helpe were past ;
 For lo ! that Guest did beare her forcibly,
 And meant to ravish her, that rather had to dy !

XIV.

The wretched man hearing her call for ayd,
 And ready seeing him with her to fly,
 In his disquiet mind was much dismayd :
 But when againe he backward cast his eye,
 And saw the wicked fire so furiously
 Consume his hart, and scorch his idoles face,
 He was therewith distressed diversely,
 Ne wist³ he how to turne, nor to what place :
 Was never wretched man in such a wofull cace.

XV.

Ay when to him she cryde, to her he turnd,
 And left the fire ; Love, Money overcame :
 But, when he marked how his money burnd,
 He left his wife ; Money did Love disclame⁴ :
 Both was he loth to loose his loved dame,
 And loth to leave his liefest⁵ pelfe behinde ;
 Yet, sith⁶ he no'te⁷ save both, he sav'd that same
 Which was the dearest to his dounghill minde,
 The god of his desire, the ioy of misers blinde.

¹ Tyn'd, kindled. ² In waste, in vain. ³ Wist, know.

⁴ Disclame, expel. ⁵ Liefest, dearest.

⁶ Sith, since. ⁷ No'te, could not.

XVI.

Thus whilst all things in troublous uprore were,
 And all men busie to suppress the flame,
 The loving couple neede no reskew feare,
 But leasure had and liberty to frame
 Their purpost flight, free from all mens reclame ;
 And Night, the patronesse of love-stealth fayre,
 Gave them safe conduct till to end they came :
 So beene they gone yfere,¹ a wanton payre
 Of lovers loosely knit, where list them to repayre.

XVII.

Soone as the cruell flames yslaked² were,
 Malbecco, seeing how his losse did lye,
 Out of the flames which he had quencht whylere,³
 Into huge waves of grieffe and gealosye
 Full deepe emplonged was, and drowned nye
 Twixt inward doole⁴ and felonous despight⁵ :
 He rav'd, he wept, he stampt, he lowd did cry ;
 And all the passions, that in man may light,
 Did him attonce oppresse, and vex his caytive spright.

XVIII.

Long thus he chawd the cud of inward grieffe,
 And did consume his gall with anguish sore :
 Still when he mused on his late mischiefe,
 Then still the smart thereof increased more,
 And seemd more grievous then it was before :
 At last when sorrow he saw booted nought,
 Ne grieffe might not his Love to him restore,
 He gan devise how her he reskew mought ;
 Ten thousand wayes he cast in his confused thought.

¹ *Yfere*, together.² *Yslaked*, quenched.³ *Whylers*, before.⁴ *Doole*, grief.⁵ *Felonous despight*, malignant passion.

XIX.

At last resolving, like a pilgrim pore,
 To search her forth whereso she might be fond,
 And bearing with him treasure in close store,
 The rest he leaves in ground : So takes in hond
 To seeke her endlong¹ both by sea and lond.
 Long he her sought, he sought her far and nere,
 And every where that he mote understand
 Of Knights and Ladies any meetings were ;
 And of each one he mett he tidings did inquire.

XX.

But all in vaine ; his woman was too wise
 Ever to come into his clouch² againe,
 And hee too simple ever to surprise
 The iolly Paridell, for all his paine.
 One day, as he forpassed³ by the plaine
 With weary pace, he far away espide
 A couple, seeming well to be his twaine,
 Which hoved⁴ close under a forest side,
 As if they lay in wait, or els themselves did hide.

XXI.

Well weened hee that those the same mote bee ;
 And, as he better did their shape avize,⁵
 Him seemed more their maner did agree ;
 For th' one was armed all in warlike wize,
 Whom to be Paridell he did devize ;
 And th' other, al yclad in garments light
 Discolourd⁶ like to womanish disguise,

¹ *Endlong*, in a continued course.⁴ *Hoved*, hovered.² *Clouch*, clutch.⁵ *Avize*, discern.³ *Forpassed*, passed along.⁶ *Discolourd*, variously colored.XIX. 4. — *Takes in hond.*] Takes in hand, resolves.

He did resemble¹ to his Lady bright ;
And ever his faint hart much earned² at the sight :

XXII.

And ever faine he towards them would goe,
But yet durst not for dread approchen nie,
But stood aloofe, unweeting³ what to doe ;
Till that prickt forth with loves extremity,
That is the father of fowle gealosy,
He closely nearer crept the truth to weet⁴ :
But, as he nigher drew, he easily
Might scerne⁵ that it was not his sweetest Sweet,
Ne yet her Belamour,⁶ the partner of his sheet :

XXIII.

But it was scornfull Braggadochio,
That with his servant Trompart hoverd there,
Sith⁷ late he fled from his too earnest foe :
Whom such whenas Malbecco spyed clere,⁸
He turned backe, and would have fled arere⁹ ;
Till Trompart, ronning hastely, him did stay
And bad before his souveraine lord appere :
That was him loth, yet durst he not gainesay,
And comming him before low louted¹⁰ on the lay.¹¹

XXIV.

The Boaster at him sternely bent his browe,
As if he could have kild him with his looke,

¹ *Resemble*, liken, compare.

² *Earned*, yearned.

³ *Unweeting*, unknowing.

⁴ *Weet*, learn.

⁵ *Scerne*, discern.

⁶ *Belamour*, lover.

⁷ *Sith*, since.

⁸ *Clere*, distinctly.

⁹ *Arere*, backward.

¹⁰ *Louted*, bent.

¹¹ *Lay*, ground.

That to the ground him meekely made to bowe,
 And awfull terror deepe into him strooke,
 That every member of his body quooke.
 Said he, "Thou man of nought! what doest thou here
 Unfitly furnisht with thy bag and booke,
 Where I expected one with shield and spere
 To prove some deeds of armes upon an equall pere?"

XXV.

The wretched man at his imperious speach
 Was all abasht, and low prostrating said;
 "Good Sir, let not my rudenes be no breach
 Unto your patience, ne be ill ypaid¹;
 For I unwares this way by fortune straid,
 A silly pilgrim driven to distresse,
 That seeke a Lady" — There he suddein staid,
 And did the rest with grievous sighes suppress,
 While teares stood in his eies, few drops of bitterness.

XXVI.

"What Lady?" — "Man," said Trompart, "take good
 hart,
 And tell thy grieffe, if any hidden lye:
 Was never better time to shew thy smart
 Then² now that noble succor is thee by,
 That is the whole worlds commune remedy."
 That chearful word his weak heart much did cheare,
 And with vaine hope his spirits faint supply,

¹ *Ill ypaid*, ill apaid, dissatisfied.

² *Then*, than.

XXV. 3. — *Let not my rudenes, &c.*] The two negatives here strengthen the negation. "Let not my rudeness provoke your patience, nor be ill received or treated by you." Some editions have 'a breach' instead of 'no breach.'

That bold he sayd ; “ O most redoubted Pere,
Vouchsafe with mild regard a wretches cace to heare.”

XXVII.

Then sighing sore, “ It is not long,” saide hee,
“ Sith¹ I enioyd the gentlest Dame alive ;
Of whom a Knight, (no Knight at all perdee,²
But shame of all that doe for honor strive,)
By treacherous deceit did me deprive ;
Through open outrage he her bore away,
And with fowle force unto his will did drive ;
Which al good Knights, that armes do bear this day,
Are bownd for to revenge and punish if they may.

XXVIII.

“ And you, most noble Lord, that can and dare
Redresse the wrong of miserable wight,
Cannot employ your most victorious speare
In better quarrell then defence of right,
And for a Lady gainst a faithlesse Knight :
So shall your glory be advanched much,
And all faire Ladies magnify your might,
And eke myselfe, albee I simple such,
Your worthy paine shall wel reward with guerdon rich.”

XXIX.

With that out of his bouget³ forth he drew
Great store of treasure, therewith him to tempt ;
But he on it lookt scornefully askew,
As much disdeigning to be so misdempt,⁴
Or a war-monger⁵ to be basely nempt,⁶

¹ *Sith*, since.⁴ *Misdempt*, misconceived.² *Perdee*, in truth.⁵ *War-monger*, mercenary soldier.³ *Bouget*, budget.⁶ *Nempt*, named.

XXVIII. 8. — *Albee I simple such.*] Though I am so simple.

And sayd ; “ Thy offers base I greatly loth,
 And eke thy words uncourteous and unkempt ¹ :
 I tread in dust thee and thy money both ;
 That, were it not for shame ” — So turned from him wroth.

XXX.

But Trompart, that his Maistres humor knew
 In lofty looks to hide an humble minde,
 Was inly tickled with that golden vew,
 And in his eare him rownded ² close behinde :
 Yet stoupt he not, but lay still in the winde,
 Waiting advauntage on the pray to sease ;
 Till Trompart, lowly to the grownd inclinde,
 Besought him his great corage ³ to appease,
 And pardon simple man that rash did him displease.

XXXI.

Big looking like a doughty doucēpere,
 At last he thus ; “ Thou clod of vilest clay,
 I pardon yield, and with thy rudenes beare ;
 But weete ⁴ henceforth, that all that golden pray,
 And all that els the vaine world vaunten may,
 I loath as dounge, ne deeme my dew reward :
 Fame is my meed, and glory vertuous pay :
 But minds of mortall men are muchell mard ⁵
 And mov'd amisse with massy mucks unmeet regard.

¹ *Unkempt*, rude. ² *Rownded*, whispered. ³ *Corage*, indignation.

⁴ *Weete*, learn. ⁵ *Muchell mard*, much corrupted.

XXX. 5. — *Yet stoupt he not, &c.*] He (Braggadocchio) did not stoop to seize his prey, but remained quiet in the air — an image derived from falconry.

XXXI. 1. — *Doucēpere.*] This is from the French *les douze pairs*, the twelve peers of France, champions renowned in romantic fiction.

XXXI. 9. — *Massy mucks unmeet regard.*] Undue esteem for great wealth.

XXXII.

“And more ; I graunt to thy great misery
 Gracious respect ; thy wife shall backe be sent :
 And that vile Knight, whoever that he bee,
 Which hath thy Lady rest and knighthood shent,¹
 By Sanglamort my sword, whose deadly dent²
 The blood hath of so many thousands shedd,
 I sweare ere long shall dearely it repent ;
 Ne he twixt heven and earth shall hide his hedd,
 But soone he shall be fownd, and shortly doen be dedd.³”

XXXIII.

The foolish man thereat woxe wondrous blith,
 As if the word so spoken were halfe donne,
 And humbly thanked him a thousand sith⁴
 That had from death to life him newly wonne.
 Tho⁵ forth the Boaster marching brave begonne
 His stolen steed to thunder furiously,
 As if he heaven and hell would over-ronne,
 And all the world confound with cruelty ;
 That much Malbecco ioyed in his iollity.

XXXIV.

Thus long they three together traveled,
 Through many a wood and many an uncouth way,
 To seeke his wife that was far wandered :
 But those two sought nought but the present pray,

¹ *Shent*, disgraced. ² *Dent*, dint. ³ *Doen be dedd*, put to death.

⁴ *Sith*, times.

⁵ *Tho*, then.

XXXII. 5. — *By Sanglamort.*] *Sanglamort* means *blood and death* — a formidable name, in keeping with the boaster's character. He had no sword, it will be remembered.

XXXIII. 6. — *His stolen steed.*] *Braggadochio*, it will be remembered, had stolen Sir Guyon's steed. See book II. canto III.

To weete, the treasure which he did bewray,
 On which their eies and harts were wholly sett,
 With purpose how they might it best betray ;
 For, sith¹ the howre that first he did them lett
 The same behold, therwith their keene desires were whett.

XXXV.

It fortun'd, as they together far'd,
 They spide where Paridell came pricking fast
 Upon the plaine, the which himselve prepar'd
 To giust with that brave straunger Knight a cast,
 As on adventure by the way he past :
 Alone he rode without his paragone² ;
 For, having filcht her bells, her up he cast
 To the wide world, and lett her fly alone ;
 He nould³ be clogd : So had he served many one.

XXXVI.

The gentle Lady, loose at randon lefte,
 The greene-wood long did walke, and wander wide
 At wilde adventure, like a forlorne wefte⁴ ;
 Till on a day the Satyres her espide
 Straying alone withouten groome or guide :
 Her up they tooke, and with them home her ledd.
 With them as housewife ever to abide,
 To milk their gotes, and make them cheese and bredd ;
 And every one as comunune good her handeled :

XXXVII.

That shortly she Malbecco has forgott,
 And eke Sir Paridell all⁵ were he deare ;
 Who from her went to seeke another lott,
 And now by fortune was arrived here,

¹ *Sith*, since.² *Paragone*, companion.³ *Nould*, would not.⁴ *Wefte*, waif, or thing cast adrift.⁵ *All*, although.

Where those two guilers¹ with Malbecco were.
 Soone as the old man saw Sir Paridell,
 He fainted, and was almost dead with feare,
 Ne word he had to speake his grieffe to tell,
 But to him louted² low, and greeted goodly well ;

XXXVIII.

And, after, asked him for Hellenore :
 “ I take no keepe³ of her,” sayd Paridell,
 “ She wonneth⁴ in the forrest there before.”
 So forth he rode as his adventure fell ;
 The whiles the Boaster from his loftie sell⁵
 Faynd to alight, something amisse to mend ;
 But the fresh Swayne would not his leasure dwell,⁶
 But went his way ; whom when he passed kend,⁷
 He up remounted light, and after faind to wend.⁸

XXXIX.

“ Perdy⁹ nay,” said Malbecco, “ shall ye not ;
 But let him passe as lightly as he came :
 For litle good of him is to be got,
 And mickle¹⁰ perill to bee put to shame.
 But let us goe to seeke my dearest Dame,
 Whom he hath left in yonder forest wyld :
 For of her safety in great doubt I ame,

¹ *Guilers*, deceivers.⁶ *Dwell*, await.² *Louted*, bent.⁷ *Kend*, perceived, saw.³ *Keepe*, care, charge.⁸ *Faind to wend*, pretended to go.⁴ *Wonneth*, dwelleth.⁹ *Perdy*, indeed.⁵ *Sell*, saddle.¹⁰ *Mickle*, much.

XXXVIII. 4. — *So forth he rode.*] Paridell put his horse in motion to joust with Braggadochio, as was a custom with stranger knights who met ; he, however, pretending that something required adjusting, dismounted, and Paridell would not wait for him to remount.

Least salvage beastes her person have despoild:
Then all the world is lost, and we in vaine have toyld!"

XL.

They all agree, and forward them addrest:
" Ah! but," said crafty Trompart, " weete¹ ye well,
That yonder in that wastefull wilderness
Huge monsters haunt, and many dangers dwell;
Dragons, and minotaures, and feendes of hell,
And many wilde woodmen which robbe and rend
All travellers; therefore advise ye well,
Before ye enterprise that way to wend²:
One may his iourney bring too soone to evill end."

XLI.

Malbecco stopt in great astonishment,
And, with pale eyes fast fixed on the rest,
Their counsell crav'd in daunger imminent.
Said Trompart; " You, that are the most opprest
With burdein of great treasure, I thinke best
Here for to stay in safëtie behynd:
My Lord and I will search the wide forëst."
That counsell pleased not Malbeccoes mynd;
For he was much afraid himselfe alone to fynd.

XLII.

" Then is it best," said he, " that ye doe leave
Your treasure here in some security,
Either fast closed in some hollow greave,³
Or buried in the ground from ieopardy,
Till we returne againe in safëty:
As for us two, least doubt of us ye have,
Hence farre away we will blyndfolded ly,

¹ *Weete*, know. ² *Wend*, go. ³ *Greave*, groove, or hiding-place.

Ne privy bee unto your treasures grave."
It pleased; so he did: Then they march forward brave.

XLIII.

Now when amid the thickest woodes they were,
They heard a noyse of many bagpipes shrill,
And shrieking hububs¹ them approaching nere,
Which all the forest did with horreur fill:
That dreadfull sound the Bosters hart did thrill
With such amazment, that in hast he fledd,
Ne ever looked back for good or ill;
And after him eke fearefull Trompart spedd:
The old man could not fly, but fell to ground half dedd:

XLIV.

Yet afterwarde, close creeping as he might,
He in a bush did hyde his fearefull hedd.
The iolly Satyres full of fresh delight
Came dauncing forth, and with them nimbly ledd
Faire Helenore with girlonds all bespredd,²
Whom their May-lady they had newly made:
She, proude of that new honour which they redd,³
And of their lovely fellowship full glade,⁴
Daunst lively, and her face did with a lawrell shade.

XLV.

The silly⁵ man that in the thickett lay
Saw all this goodly sport, and grieved sore;
Yet durst he not against it doe or say,
But did his hart with bitter thoughts engore,⁶
To see th' unkindness of his Hellenore.
All day they daunced with great lustyhedd,

¹ *Hububs*, shouts, confused cries.⁴ *Glade*, glad.² *Bespredd*, adorned.⁵ *Silly*, simple.³ *Redd*, declared, bestowed.⁶ *Engore*, lacerate.

And with their horned feet the greene gras wore ;
 The whiles their gotes upon the brouzes¹ fedd,
 Till drouping Phœbus gan to hyde his golden hedd.

XLVI.

Tho² up they gan their mery pypes to trusse,³
 And all their goodly heardes did gather rownd ;
 But every Satyre first did give a busse⁴
 To Hellenore ; so busses did abound.
 Now gan the humid vapour shed the grownd
 With perly deaw, and th' Earthës gloomy shade
 Did dim the brightnesse of the welkin⁵ rownd,
 That every bird and beast awarned made
 To shrowd themselves, while sleep their sences did invade.

XLVII.

Which when Malbecco saw, out of the bush
 Upon his handes and feete he crept full light,
 And like a gote emongst the gotes did rush ;
 That, through the helpe of his faire hornes on hight,
 And misty dampe of misconceyving night,
 And eke through likenessse of his gotish beard,
 He did the better counterfeite aright :
 So home he marcht emongst the horned heard,
 That none of all the Satyres him espyde or heard.

XLVIII.

At night, when all they went to sleepe, he vewd,
 Whereas his lovely wife emongst them lay,

¹ *Brouzes*, twigs. ² *Tho*, then. ³ *Trusse*, pack up, or lay aside.

⁴ *Busse*, kiss.

⁵ *Walkin*, sky.

XLVII. 4.—*His faire hornes.*] Church would read “their faire hornes”—the horns of the goats—from a wish to rescue the poet from the imputation of indulging in so poor a conceit as the giving a pair of actual horns to Malbecco.

Embraced of a Satyre rough and rude,
 Who all the night did mind his ioyous play :
 Nine times he heard him come aloft ere day,
 That all his hart with gealosity did swell ;
 But yet that nights ensample did bewray
 That not for nought his wife them lovd so well,
 When one so oft a night did ring his matins bell.

XLIX.

So closely as he could he to them crept,
 When wearie of their sport to sleepe they fell,
 And to his wife, that now full soundly slept,
 He whispered in her eare, and did her tell,
 That it was he which by her side did dwell ;
 And therefore prayd her wake to heare him plaine.
 As one out of a dreame not waked well
 She turnd her, and returned backe againe :
 Yet her for to awake he did the more constraene.

L.

At last with irkesom trouble she abrayd¹ ;
 And then perceiving, that it was indeed
 Her old Malbecco, which did her upbrayd
 With loosenesse of her love and loathly deed,
 She was astonisht with exceeding dreed,
 And would have wakt the Satyre by her syde ;
 But he her prayd for mercy or for meed,
 To save his life, ne let him be descryde,
 But hearken to his lore,² and all his counsell hyde.

LI.

Tho³ gan he her perswade to leave that lewd
 And loathsom life, of God and man abhord,
 And home returne, where all should be renewd

¹ *Abrayd*, awoke.² *Lore*, advice.³ *Tho*, then.

With perfect peace and bandes of fresh accord,
 And she receivd againe to bed and bord,
 As if no trespas ever had beene donne :
 But she it all refused at one word,
 And by no meanes would to his will be wonne,
 But chose emongst the iolly Satyres still to wonne.¹

LII.

He wooed² her till day-spring he espyde ;
 But all in vaine : and then turnd³ to the heard,
 Who butted him with hornes on every syde,
 And trode downe in the durt, where his hore beard
 Was fowly dight,⁴ and he of death afeard.
 Early, before the heavens fairest light
 Out of the ruddy East was fully reard,
 The heardees out of their foldes were loosed quight,
 And he emongst the rest crept forth in sory plight.

LIII.

So soone as he the prison-dore did pas,
 He ran as fast as both his feet could beare,
 And never looked who behind him was,
 Ne scarsely who before : like as a beare,
 That creeping close amongst the hives to reare⁵
 An hony-combe, the wakefull dogs espy,
 And him assayling sore his carkas teare,
 That hardly he with life away does fly,
 Ne staves, till safe himselfe he see from ieopardy.

LIV.

Ne stayd he, till he came unto the place
 Where late his treasure he entombed had ;
 Where when he found it not, (for Trompart bace

¹ *Wonne*, dwell. ² *Wooed*, entreated. ³ *Turnd*, returned.

⁴ *Fowly dight*, foully soiled.

⁵ *Reare*, take.

Had it purloyned for his Maister bad,)
 With extreme fury he became quite mad,
 And ran away ; ran with himselfe away :
 That who so straungely had him seene bestadd,¹
 With upstart haire and staring eyes dismay,
 From Limbo lake him late escaped sure would say.

LV.

High over hilles and over dales he fledd,
 As if the wind him on his wings had borne ;
 Ne banck nor bush could stay him, when he spedd
 His nimble feet, as treading still on thorne :
 Griefe, and Despight, and Gealosity, and Scorne,
 Did all the way him follow hard behynd ;
 And he himselfe himselfe loath'd so forlorne,
 So shamefully forlorne of womankynd :
 That, as a snake, still lurked in his wounded mynd.

LVI.

Still fled he forward, looking backward still ;
 Ne stayd his flight nor fearefull agony
 Till that he came unto a rocky hill
 Over the sea suspended dreadfully,
 That living creature it would terrify.
 To looke adowne, or upward to the hight :
 From thence he threw himselfe dispiteously,
 All desperate of his fore-damned spright,
 That seemd no help for him was left in living sight.

LVII.

But, through long anguish and selfe-murd'ring thought,
 He was so wasted and forpined² quight,

¹ *Bestadd*, situated.² *Forpined*, pined away.LIV. 8. — *Dismay*.] Put for *dismayed* for the rhyme's sake.LV. 9. — *That*.] That thought.

That all his substance was consum'd to nought,
 And nothing left but like an aery spright;
 That on the rockes he fell so flit¹ and light,
 That he thereby receiv'd no hurt at all;
 But chanced on a craggy cliff to light;
 Whence he with crooked clawes so long did crall,
 That at the last he found a cave with entrance small:

LVIII.

Into the same he creepes, and thenceforth there
 Resolv'd to build his balefull mansion
 In dreary darkenes and continuall feare
 Of that rocks fall, which ever and anon
 Threates with huge ruine him to fall upon,
 That he dare never sleepe, but that one eye
 Still ope he keeps for that occasion;
 Ne ever rests he in tranquillity,
 The roing billowes beat his bowre² so boystrously.

LIX.

Ne ever is he wont on ought to feed
 But todes and frogs, his pasture³ poysonous,
 Which in his cold complexion doe breed
 A filthy blood, or humour rancorous,
 Matter of doubt and dread suspicious,
 That doth with curelesse care consume the hart,
 Corrupts the stomacke with gall vitious,
 Cross-cuts⁴ the liver with internall smart,
 And doth transfixe the soule with deathes eternall dart.

LX.

Yet can he never dye, but dying lives,
 And doth himselfe with sorrow new sustaine,

¹ *Flit*, unsubstantial.² *Bowre*, residence.³ *Pasture*, food.⁴ *Cross-cuts*, pierces, or cuts through.

That death and life attonce unto him gives,
And painefull pleasure turnes to pleasing paine.
There dwels he ever, miserable swaine,
Hatefull both to himselfe and every wight;
Where he, through privy griefe and horroure vaine,
Is woxen so deform'd that he has quight
Forgot he was a man, and Gelosy is hight.¹

¹ *Hight*, called.

CANTO XI.

Britomart chaceth Ollyphant;
 Findes Scudamour distrest:
 Assayes the House of Busyrane
 Where Loves spoyles are exprest.

I.

O HATEFULL hellish Snake! what Furie furst
 Brought thee from balefull house of Proserpine,
 Where in her bosome shee thee long had nurst,
 And fostred up with bitter milke of tine¹;
 Fowle Gealosity! that turnest love divine
 To ioylesse dread, and mak'st the loving hart
 With hatefull thoughts to languish and to pine,
 And feed itselfe with selfe-consuming smart,
 Of all the passions in the mind thou vilest art!

II.

O let him far be banished away,
 And in his stead let Love for ever dwell!
 Sweete Love, that doth his golden wings embay²
 In blessed nectar and pure Pleasures well,
 Untroubled of vile feare or bitter fell.³
 And ye, faire Ladies, that your kingdomes make
 In th' harts of men, them governe wisely well,
 And of faire Britomart ensample take,
 That was as trew in love as turtle to her make.⁴

¹ *Tine*, woe.² *Fell*, gall.³ *Embay*, bathe.⁴ *Make*, mate.

III.

Who with Sir Satyrane, as earst¹ ye red,
 Forth ryding from Malbeccoes hostlesse² hous,
 Far off aspyde a young man, the which fled
 From an huge Geaunt, that with hideous
 And hatefull outrage long him chaced thus ;
 It was that Ollyphant, the brother deare
 Of that Argantè vile and vitious,
 From whom the Squyre of Dames was reft whylere³ ;
 This all as bad as she, and worse, if worse ought were.

IV.

For as, the sister did in feminine
 And filthy lust exceede all womankinde ;
 So he surpassed his sex masculine,
 In beastly use,⁴ all that I ever finde :
 Whom when as Britomart beheld behinde
 The fearefull Boy so greedily poursew,
 She was emmoved in her noble minde
 T' employ her puissaunce to his reskew,
 And pricked fiercely forward where she him did vew.

V.

Ne was Sir Satyrane her far behinde,
 But with like fiercenesse did ensew⁵ the chace :
 Whom when the Gyaunt saw, he soone resinde⁶
 His former suit, and from them fled apace :
 They after both, and boldly bad him bace,

¹ *Earst*, before.⁴ *Use*, habits.² *Hostlesse*, inhospitable.⁵ *Ensew*, follow.³ *Whylere*, lately.⁶ *Resinde*, resigned, abandoned.III. 1.—*As earst ye red.*] See canto X. stanza I.III. 8.—*Was reft whylere.*] See canto VII. stanza XXXVII.V. 5.—*Bad him bace.*] Church says that this is an expression

And each did strive the other to outgoe;
 But he them both outran a wondrous space,
 For he was long, and swift as any roe,
 And now made better speed t' escape his feared foe.

VI.

It was not Satyrane, whom he did feare,
 But Britomart the flowre of chastity;
 For he the powre of chaste hands might not beare,
 But alwayes did their dread encounter fly:
 And now so fast his feet he did apply,
 That he has gotten to a Forrest neare,
 Where he is shrowded in security.
 The wood they enter, and search everie where;
 They searched diversely; so both divided were.

VII.

Fayre Britomart so long him followed,
 That she at last came to a fountaine sheare,¹
 By which there lay a Knight all wallowed²
 Upon the grassy ground, and by him neare
 His haberieon,³ his helmet, and his speare:
 A little off, his shield was rudely throwne,
 On which the Winged Boy in colours cleare
 Depeincted⁴ was, full easie to be knowne,
 And he thereby, wherever it in field was showne.

VIII.

His face upon the grownd did groveling ly,
 As if he had beene slombring in the shade;
 That the brave Mayd would not for courtesy

¹ *Sheare*, pure.³ *Haberieon*, coat of mail.² *Wallowed*, cast, thrown.⁴ *Depeincted*, painted.

derived from a game called *prison-base*, and that the meaning is, that they challenged each other to run after Ollyphant.

Out of his quiet slomber him abrade,¹
 Nor seeme too suddainly him to invade :
 Still as she stood, she heard with grievous throb
 Him grone, as if his hart were peeces made,²
 And with most painefull pangs to sigh and sob,
 That pittie did the Virgins hart of patience rob.

IX.

At last forth breaking into bitter plaintes
 He sayd ; “ O soverayne Lord, that sit'st on hye
 And raignt in blis emongst thy blessed saintes,
 How suffrest thou such shamefull cruelty
 So long unwreaked³ of thine enimy !
 Or hast thou, Lord, of good mens cause no heed ?
 Or doth thy iustice sleepe and silent ly ?
 What booteth then the good and righteous deed,
 If goodnesse find no grace, nor righteousnesse no meed !

X.

“ If good find grace, and righteousnes reward,
 Why then is Amoret in caytive⁴ band,
 Sith⁵ that more bounteous⁶ creature never far'd
 On foot upon the face of living land !
 Or if that heavenly iustice may withstand
 The wrongfull outrage of unrighteous men,
 Why then is Busirane with wicked hand
 Suffred, these seven monethes day, in secret den
 My Lady and my Love so cruelly to pen ?

XI.

“ My Lady and my Love is cruelly pend
 In dolefull darkenes from the vew of day,

¹ *Abrade*, rouse.² *Peeces made*, broken in pieces.³ *Unwreaked*, unavenged.⁴ *Caytive*, captive.⁵ *Sith*, since.⁶ *Bounteous*, good.

Whilest deadly torments doe her chaste brest rend,
 And the sharpe steele doth rive her hart in tway,
 All for¹ she Scudamore will not deny.²
 Yet thou, vile man, vile Scudamore, art sound,
 Ne canst her ayde, ne canst her foe dismay ;
 Unworthy wretch to tread upon the ground,
 For whom so faire a Lady feesles so sore a wound.”

XII.

There an huge heape of singulfes³ did oppresse
 His strugling soule, and swelling throbs empeach⁴
 His foltring toung with pangs of drerinesse,⁵
 Choking the remnant of his plaintife speach,
 As if his dayes were come to their last reach.
 Which when she heard, and saw the ghastly fit
 Threatning into his life to make a breach,
 Both with great ruth⁶ and terrour she was smit,
 Fearing least⁷ from her cage the wearie soule would flit.

XIII.

Tho,⁸ stouping downe, she him amoved light ;
 Who, therewith somewhat starting, up gan looke,
 And seeing him behind a stranger Knight,
 Whereas no living creature he mistooke,⁹
 With great indignaunce he that sight forsooke,¹⁰
 And, downe againe himselfe disdainefully
 Abiecting,¹¹ th' earth with his faire forehead strooke :
 Which the bold Virgin seeing, gan apply
 Fit medicine to his griefe, and spake thus courtesly ;

¹ For, because.² Denay, deny.³ Singulfes, sobs.⁴ Empeach, hinder.⁵ Drerinesse, sorrow.⁶ Ruth, pity.⁷ Least, lest.⁸ Tho, then.⁹ Mistooks, suspected.¹⁰ Forsooks, turned from.¹¹ Abiecting, casting.

XIV.

“ Ah! gentle Knight, whose deepe-conceived grieffe
 Well seemes t' excede the powre of patience,
 Yet, if that hevenly grace some good reliefe
 You send, submit you to High Providence;
 And ever, in your noble hart, prepense,¹
 That all the sorrow in the world is lesse
 Then² vertues might and values confidence:
 For who nill³ bide the burden of distresse,
 Must not here thinke to live; for life is wretchednesse.

XV.

“ Therefore, faire Sir, doe comfort to you take,
 And freely read⁴ what wicked felon so
 Hath outrag'd you, and thrald your gentle Make.⁵
 Perhaps this hand may help to ease your woe,
 And wreake⁶ your sorrow on your cruell foe;
 At least it faire endeavour will apply.”
 Those feeling words so neare the quicke did goe,
 That up his head he reared easily;
 And, leaning on his elbowe, these few words lett fly:

XVI.

“ What boots it plaine⁷ that cannot be redrest,
 And sow vaine sorrow in a fruitlesse eare;
 Sith⁸ powre of hand, nor skill of learned brest,
 Ne worldly price, cannot redeeme my Deare

¹ *Prepense*, consider.

⁵ *Make*, mate.

² *Then*, than.

⁶ *Wreake*, avenge.

³ *Nill*, will not.

⁷ *Plaine*, complain.

⁴ *Read*, explain.

⁸ *Sith*, since.

XIV. 7. — [*Values confidence*.] The confidence of valor. *Value* is put for *valor*.

XVI. 2. — [*And sow vaine sorrow, &c.*] And make sorrowful complaints to those who can render no assistance.

Out of her thraldome and continuall feare!
 For he, the tyrant, which her hath in ward
 By strong enchauntments and blacke magicke lettre,¹
 Hath in a dungeon deepe her close embard,²
 And many dreadfull feends hath pointed to her gard.

XVII.

“There he tormenteth her most terribly,
 And day and night afflicts with mortall paine,
 Because to yield him love she doth deny,
 Once to me yold,³ not to be yold³ againe:
 But yet by torture he would her constraîne
 Love to conceive in her disdainfull brest;
 Till so she doe, she must in doole⁴ remaine,
 Ne may by living meanes be thence relest:
 What boots it then to plaine⁵ that cannot be redrest!”

XVIII.

With this sad hersall⁶ of his heavy stresse⁷
 The warlike Damzell was empassiond⁸ sore,
 And sayd; “Sir Knight, your cause is nothing lesse
 Then⁹ is your sorrow certes,¹⁰ if not more;
 For nothing so much pittie doth implore
 As gentle Ladyes helplesse misery:
 But yet, if please ye listen to my lore,¹¹
 I will, with prooffe of last extremity,
 Deliver her fro thence, or with her for you dy.”

¹ *Lears*, lore.⁷ *Stresse*, distress.² *Embard*, confined.⁸ *Empassiond*, moved.³ *Yold*, yielded.⁹ *Then*, than.⁴ *Dools*, grief.¹⁰ *Certes*, certainly.⁵ *Plaine*, complain.¹¹ *Lore*, counsel.⁶ *Hersall*, rehearsal.

XVIII. 8. — *With prooffe of last extremity.*] At the extreme peril of my life.

XIX.

“ Ah ! gentlest Knight alive,” sayd Scudamore,
 “ What huge heroicke magnanimity
 Dwells in thy bounteous ¹ brest ? what couldst thou more,
 If shee were thine, and thou as now am I ?
 O spare thy happy daies, and them apply
 To better boot ; but let me die that ought ;
 More is more losse ; one is enough to dy ! ”
 “ Life is not lost,” said she, “ for which is bought
 Endlesse renown ; that, more then death, is to be sought.”

XX.

Thus she at length persuaded him to rise,
 And with her wend ² to see what new successe
 Mote him befall upon new enterprise :
 His armes, which he had vowed to disprofesse,³
 She gathered up and did about him dresse,⁴
 And his forwardred ⁵ steed unto him gott :
 So forth they both yfere ⁶ make their progrésse,
 And march, not past the mountenaunce of a shott,
 Till they arriv'd whereas their purpose they did plott.

XXI.

There they dismounting drew their weapons bold

¹ *Bounteous*, generous, kind.

⁴ *Dresse*, dispose.

² *Wend*, go.

⁵ *Forwardred*, strayed away.

³ *Disprofesse*, abandon.

⁶ *Yfere*, together.

XIX. 6. — *To better boot.*] To better advantage.

XIX. 9. — *That, more then death, is to be sought.*] The meaning appears to be, that “endlesse renown” is more to be sought than death to be avoided.

XX. 8. — *Not past the mountenaunce of a shott.*] Not farther than the flight of an arrow.

XX. 9. — *Their purpose they did plott.*] They proposed to execute their plan.

And stoutly came unto the Castle gate,
 Whereas no gate they found them to withhold,
 Nor ward to waite at morne and evening late;
 But in the porch, that did them sore amate,¹
 A flaming fire ymixt with smouldry² smoke
 And stinking sulphure, that with griesly hate
 And dreadfull horror did all entraunce choke,
 Enforced them their forward footing to revoke.

XXII.

Greatly thereat was Britomart dismayd,
 Ne in that stownd³ wist how herselfe to beare;
 For daunger vaine⁴ it were to have assayd
 That cruell element, which all things feare,
 Ne none can suffer to approachen neare:
 And, turning backe to Scudamour, thus sayd;
 "What monstrous enmity provoke we heare?
 Foolhardy as th' Earthes children, the which made
 Batteill against the gods, so we a god invade.

XXIII.

"Daunger without discretion to attempt,
 Inglorious, beast-like, is: therefore, Sir Knight,
 Aread⁵ what course of you is safest dempt,⁶
 And how we with our foe may come to fight."
 "This is," quoth he, "the dolorous despight,⁷
 Which earst⁸ to you I playnd⁹: for neither may

¹ *Amate*, alarm.⁶ *Dempt*, deemed.² *Smouldry*, suffocating.⁷ *Dolorous despight*, grievous vexation.³ *Stownd*, peril.⁸ *Earst*, before.⁴ *Vaine*, useless.⁹ *Playnd*, complained of.⁵ *Aread*, explain.

XXI. 9. — *Their forward footing to revokes.*] To desist from their intention of going forward.

This fire be quencht by any witt or might,
 Ne yet by any meanes remov'd away ;
 So mighty be th' enchantments which the same do stay.¹"

XXIV.

"What is there tells but cease these fruitlesse paines,
 And leave me to my former languishing !
 Faire Amorett must dwell in wicked chaines,
 And Scudamore here die with sorrowing !"
 "Perdy² not so," saide shee ; "for shameful thing
 Yt were t' abandon noble chevisaunce,³
 For shewe of perill, without venturing :
 Rather, let try extremities of chaunce
 Then⁴ enterprised praise for dread to disavaunce.⁵"

XXV.

Therewith, resolv'd to prove her utmost might,
 Her ample shield she threw before her face,
 And her swords point directing forward right
 Assayld the flame ; the which estesoones⁶ gave place,
 And did itselife divide with equall space,
 That through she passed ; as a thonder-bolt
 Perceth the yielding ayre, and doth displace
 The soring clouds into sad showres ymolt⁷ ;
 So to her yold⁸ the flames, and did their force revolt.⁹

XXVI.

Whom whenas Scudamour saw past the fire
 Safe and untoucht, he likewise gan assay
 With greedy will and envious desire,
 And bad the stubborne flames to yield him way :

¹ *Stay*, support.² *Perdy*, in truth.³ *Chevisaunce*, enterprise.⁴ *Then*, than.⁵ *Disavaunce*, give over.⁶ *Estesoones*, immediately.⁷ *Ymolt*, melted.⁸ *Yold*, yielded.⁹ *Revolt*, roll back.

But cruell Mulciber would not obay
 His threatfull pride, but did the more augment
 His mighty rage, and with imperious sway
 Him forst, maulgre ¹ his fercenes, to relent,²
 And backe retire all scorcht and pitifully brent.³

XXVII.

With huge impatience he inly swelt,⁴
 More for great sorrow that he could not pas
 Then ⁵ for the burning torment which he felt ;
 That with fell woodnes ⁶ he effierced ⁷ was,
 And wilfully him throwing on the gras
 Did beat and bounse his head and brest full sore :
 The whiles the Championesse now entred has
 The utmost ⁸ rowme, and past the foremost dore ;
 The utmost rowme abounding with all precious store :

XXVIII.

For, round about, the walls yclothed were
 With goodly arras of great maiesty,
 Woven with gold and silke so close and nere
 That the rich metall lurked privily,
 As faining to be hidd from envious eye ;
 Yet here, and there, and every where, unwares
 It shewd itselfe and shone unwillingly ;
 Like to' a discolourd ⁹ snake, whose hidden snares
 Through the greene gras his long bright burnisht back de-
 clares.

¹ *Maulgre*, in spite of.⁶ *Woodnes*, madness.² *Relent*, withdraw.⁷ *Effierced*, inflamed.³ *Brent*, burned.⁸ *Utmost*, outermost.⁴ *Swelt*, swelled.⁹ *Discolourd*, party-colored.⁵ *Then*, than.XXVI. 5. — *Cruell Mulciber*.] Vulcan ; that is, the fire.

XXIX.

And in those tapets¹ weren fashioned
 Many faire pourtraicts, and many a faire feate ;
 And all of love, and al of lusty-hed,
 As seemed by their semblaunt,² did entreat³ :
 And eke all Cupids warres they did repeate,
 And cruell battailes, which he whilome⁴ fought
 Gainst all the gods to make his empire great ;
 Besides the huge massâcres, which he wrought
 On mighty kings and kesars into thraldome brought.

XXX.

Therein was writt how often thondring Iove
 Had felt the point of his hart-percing dart,
 And, leaving heavens kingdome, here did rove
 In straunge disguize, to slake his scalding smart ;
 Now, like a ram, faire Helle to pervart,
 Now, like a bull, Europa to withdraw :
 Ah, how the fearefull Ladies tender hart
 Did lively seeme to tremble, when she saw
 The huge seas under her t' obay her servaunts law !

XXXI.

Soone after that, into a golden showre
 Himselfe he chaung'd, faire Danaë to vew ;
 And through the roofe of her strong brasen towre

¹ *Tapets*, tapestry.³ *Entreat*, treat of, or deal with.² *Semblaunt*, appearance.⁴ *Whilome*, formerly.

XXX. 1.— *Therein was writt, &c.*] In this and the subsequent stanzas, Spenser has versified some of the most popular love stories of classical mythology. It has not been deemed necessary to explain the narrative by annotations. The stories are among the common-places of classical literature, and satisfactory details may be found in such books as Tooke's *Pantheon* and Lempriere's *Classical Dictionary*.

Did raine into her lap an hony dew ;
 The whiles her foolish garde, that litle knew
 Of such decept, kept th' yron dore fast bard,
 And watcht that none should enter nor issew ;
 Vaine was the watch, and bootlesse all the ward,
 Whenas the god to golden hew himselfe transfard.¹

XXXII

Then was he turnd into a snowy swan,
 To win faire Leda to his lovely trade :
 O wondrous skill, and sweet wit of the man,
 That her in daffadillies sleeping made
 From scorching heat her daintie limbes to shade !
 Whiles the proud bird, ruffing² his fethers wyde
 And brushing his faire brest, did her invade,
 She slept ; yet twixt her eielids closely spyde
 How towards her he rusht, and smiled at his pryde.

XXXIII.

Then shewd it how the Thebane Semelee,
 Deceivd of gealous Iuno, did require
 To see him in his soverayne maiestee
 Armd with his thunderbolts and lightning fire,
 Whens dearely she with death bought her desire.
 But faire Alcmena better match did make,
 Ioying his love in likenes more entire :
 Three nights in one they say that for her sake
 He then did put, her pleasures lenger³ to partake.

XXXIV.

Twice was he seene in soaring eagles shape,
 And with wide winges to beat the buxome⁴ ayre :
 Once, when he with Asterie did scape ;

¹ *Transfard*, transformed.² *Lenger*, longer.³ *Ruffing*, ruffling.⁴ *Buxome*, yielding.

Againe, whenas the Trojane boy so fayne
 He snatcht from Ida hill, and with him bare :
 Wondrous delight it was there to behould
 How the rude shepheards after him did stare,
 Trembling through feare least down he fallen should,
 And often to him calling to take surer bould,

XXXV.

In Satyres shape Antiopa he snatcht ;
 And like a fire, when he Aegin' assayd :
 A shepeheard, when Mnemosyne he catcht ;
 And like a serpent to the Thracian mayd.
 Whyles thus on earth great love these pageants playd,
 The Winged Boy did thrust into his throne,
 And, scoffing, thus unto his mother sayd ;
 " Lo ! now the heavens obey to me alone,
 And take me for their love, whiles love to earth is gone."

XXXVI.

And thou, faire Phoebus, in thy colours bright
 Wast there enwoven, and the sad distresse
 In which that Boy thee plonged, for despight
 That thou bewray'dst his mothers wantonnesse,
 When she with Mars was meynt¹ in ioyfulnesse :
 Forthy² he thrild³ thee with a leaden dart
 To love fair Daphne, which thee loved lesse ;
 Lesse she thee lov'd than was thy iust desart,
 Yet was thy love her death, and her death was thy smart.

XXXVII.

So lovedst thou the lusty Hyacinct ;

¹ *Meynt*, mingled. ² *Forthy*, therefore. ³ *Thrild*, pierced.

XXXVI. 6.—*Leaden dart.*] The leaden darts of Cupid produced unhappy or unsuccessful passion.

So lovedst thou the faire Coronis deare :
 Yet both are of thy haplesse hand extinct ;
 Yet both in flowres doe live, and love thee beare,
 The one a pounce,¹ the other a sweete-breare :
 For griefe whereof, ye mote have lively seene
 The god himselve rending his golden heare,
 And breaking quite his garlond ever greene,
 With other signes of sorrow and impatient teene.²

XXXVIII.

Both for those two, and for his owne deare sonne,
 The sonne of Climene, he did repent ;
 Who, bold to guide the charet of the Sunne,
 Himselfe in thousand peeces fondly³ rent,
 And all the world with flashing fier brent⁴ ;
 So like, that all the walles did seeme to flame.
 Yet cruell Cupid, not herewith content,
 Forst him eftsoones⁵ to follow other game,
 And love a shepherds daughter for his dearest dame.

XXXIX.

He loved Isse for his dearest dame,
 And for her sake her cattell fedd awhile,
 And for her sake a cowheard vile became :
 The servant of Admetus, cowheard vile,
 Whiles that from heaven he suffered exile.
 Long were to tell each other lovely fitt ;
 Now, like a lyon hunting after spoile ;
 Now, like a hag ; now, like a faulcon flit :
 All which in that faire arras was most lively writ.

¹ *Pounce, pansy.* ² *Teene, sorrow.* ³ *Fondly, foolishly.*

⁴ *Brent, burned.* ⁵ *Eftsoones, immediately.*

XXXIX. 6. — *Each other lovely fitt.*] Each other occasion on which he felt the passion of love.

XL.

Next unto him was Neptune pictured,
 In his divine resemblance wondrous lyke :
 His face was rugged, and his hoarie hed
 Dropped with brackish deaw ; his threeforkt pyke
 He stearnly shooke, and therewith fierce did stryke
 The raging billowes, that on every syde
 They trembling stood, and made a long broad dyke,
 That his swift charet might have passage wyde,
 Which foure great hippodames ¹ did draw in teme-wise tyde.

XLI.

His seahorses did seeme to snort amayne,
 And from their nosethrilles blow the brynne streame,
 That made the sparckling waves to smoke agayne
 And flame with gold ; but the white fomy creame
 Did shine with silver, and shoot forth his beame :
 The god himselfe did pensive seeme and sad,
 And hong adowne his head as he did dreame ;
 For privy love his brest empierced had,
 Ne ought but deare Bisaltis ay could make him glad.

XLII.

He loved eke Iphimedia deare,
 And Aeolus faire daughter, Arnè hight,²
 For whom he turnd himselfe into a steare,
 And fedd on fodder to beguile her sight.
 Also, to win Deucalions daughter bright,
 He turnd himselfe into a dolphin fayre ;
 And, like a winged horse, he tooke his flight
 To snaky-locke Medusa to repayre,
 On whom he got faire Pegasus that flitteth ³ in the ayre.

¹ *Hippodames*, sea-horses. ² *Hight*, called. ³ *Flitteth*, flieth.

XL. 9. — *In teme-wise tyde.*] Yoked like a team of horses.

XLIII.

Next Saturne was, (but who would ever weene
 That sullein Saturne ever weend to love?
 Yet love is sullein, and Satúrnlike seene,
 As he did for Erigone it prove,)
 That to a centaure did himselfe transmove.¹
 So proof'd it eke that gracious god of wine,
 When, for to compasse Philliras hard love,
 He turnd himselfe into a fruitfull vine,
 And into her faire bosome made his grapes decline.

XLIV.

Long were to tell the amorous assayes,²
 And gentle pangues, with which he makd meeke
 The mightie Mars, to learne his wanton playes;
 How oft for Venus, and how often eek
 For many other nymphes, he sore did shreek³;
 With womanish teares, and with unwarlike smarts,
 Privily moystening his horrid⁴ cheeke:
 There was he painted full of burning dartes,
 And many wide woundes launched through his inner partes.

XLV.

Ne did he spare (so cruell was the Elfe)
 His owne deare mother, (ah! why should he so!)
 Ne did he spare sometime to pricke himselfe,
 That he might taste the sweet consuming woe,
 Which he had wrought to many others moe.⁵
 But, to declare the mournfull tragedyes
 And spoiles wherewith he all the ground did strow,
 More eath⁶ to number with how many eyes
 High heven beholdes sad lovers nightly theeveryes.

¹ *Transmove*, transform.⁴ *Horrid*, rough.² *Assayes*, experiences.⁵ *Moe*, more.³ *Shreek*, mourn.⁶ *Eath*, easy.

XLVI.

Kings, queenes, lords, ladies, knights, and damsels gent,¹
 Were heap'd together with the vulgar sort,
 And mingled with the raskall² rablement,
 Without respect of person or of port,³
 To shew Dan Cupids powre and great effort:
 And round about a border was entrayld⁴
 Of broken bowes and arrowes shivered short;
 And a long bloody river through them rayld,⁵
 So lively, and so like, that living sence it fayld.⁶

XLVII.

And at the upper end of that faire rowme
 There was an altar built of pretious stone
 Of passing valew and of great renowme,
 On which there stood an image all alone
 Of massy gold, which with his owne light shone;
 And winges it had with sondry colours dight,⁷
 More sondry colours then⁸ the proud pavone⁹
 Beares in his boasted fan, or Iris bright,
 When her discoloured¹⁰ bow she spreads through heven bright.

XLVIII.

Blyndfold he was; and in his cruell fist
 A mortall bow and arrowes keene did hold,

¹ *Gent*, accomplished.⁶ *Fayld*, deceived.² *Raskall*, low.⁷ *Dight*, furnished, adorned.³ *Port*, deportment.⁸ *Then*, than.⁴ *Entrayld*, wrought.⁹ *Pavone*, peacock.⁵ *Rayld*, rolled.¹⁰ *Discoloured*, many-colored.

XLVI. 5. — *Dan Cupids*.] *Dan* is a contraction of the Latin *dominus*, lord, master.

XLVII. 9. — *Heven bright*.] Upton and Church conjecture that Spenser wrote 'heven's hight,' as 'bright' is the last word of the previous line.

With which he shot at randon when him list,¹
 Some headed with sad lead, some with pure gold ;
 (Ah ! man, beware how thou those dartes behold !)
 A wounded dragon under him did ly,
 Whose hideous tayle his lefte foot did enfold,
 And with a shaft was shot through either eye,
 That no man forth might draw, ne no man remedye.

XLIX.

And underneath his feet was written thus,
Unto the Victor of the gods this bee :
 And all the people in that ample hous
 Did to that image bowe their humble knee,
 And oft committed fowle idolatree.
 That wondrous sight faire Britomart amazd,
 Ne seeing could her wonder satisfie,
 But ever more and more upon it gazd,
 The whiles the passing brightnes her fraile senses dazd.²

L.

Tho,³ as she backward cast her busie eye
 To search each secrete of that goodly sted,⁴
 Over the dore thus written she did spye,
Bee bold : She oft and oft it over-red,⁵
 Yet could not find what sence it figured :
 But whatso were therein or writ or ment,
 She was no whit thereby discouraged
 From prosecuting of her first intent,
 But forward with bold steps into the next roome went.

LI.

Much fayrer then ⁶ the former was that roome,

¹ *Him list*, he pleased.² *Dazd*, dazzled.³ *Tho*, then.⁴ *Sted*, place.⁵ *Over-red*, read over.⁶ *Then*, than.

And richlier, by many partes,¹ arrayd ;
 For not with Arras made in painefull loome,
 But with pure gcld it all was overlayd,
 Wrought with wilde antickes² which their follies playd
 In the rich metall, as³ they living were :
 A thousand monstrous formes therein were made,
 Such as false Love doth oft upon him weare ;
 For Love in thousand monstrous formes doth oft appeare.

LII.

And, all about, the glistring walles were hong
 With warlike spoiles and with victorious prayes
 Of mightie conquerours and captaines strong,
 Which were whilóme⁴ captived in their dayes
 To cruell Love, and wrought their owne decayes⁵ :
 Their swerds and speres were broke, and hauberques⁶
 rent,
 And their proud girlonds of tryumphant bayes
 Troden in dust with fury insolent,
 To shew the Victors might and merciless intent.

LIII.

The warlike Mayd, beholding earnestly
 The goodly ordinaunce of this rich place,
 Did greatly wonder ; ne could satisfy
 Her greedy eyes with gazing a long space :
 But more she mervaild that no footing trace
 Nor wight appeard, but wastefull⁷ emptiness
 And solemne silence over all that place :
 Straunge thing it seem'd, that none was to possesse
 So rich purveyaunce,⁸ ne them keepe with carefulnesse.

¹ *Partes*, degrees.² *Antickes*, fantastic figures.³ *As*, as if.⁴ *Whilóme*, formerly.⁵ *Decayes*, ruin.⁶ *Hauberques*, coats of mail.⁷ *Wastefull*, uninhabited.⁸ *Purveyaunce*, furniture.

LIV.

And, as she lookt about, she did behold
 How over that same dore was likewise writ,
Be bolde, Be bolde, and every where, *Be bold* ;
 That much she muz'd, yet could not construe it
 By any ridling skill or commune wit.
 At last she spyde at that rowmes upper end
 Another yron dore, on which was writ,
Be not too bold ; whereto though she did bend
 Her earnest minde, yet wist¹ not what it might intend.

LV.

Thus she there wayted untill eventyde,
 Yet living creature none she saw appeare.
 And now sad shadowes gan the world to hyde
 From mortall vew, and wrap in darkenes dreare ;
 Yet nould she d'off² her weary armes, for feare
 Of secret daunger, ne let sleepe oppresse
 Her heavy eyes with natures burdein deare,
 But drew herselfe aside in sicknesse,³
 And her welpointed wepons did about her dresse.⁴

¹ *Wist*, knew. ² *Nould she d'off*, would not take off.

³ *Sicknesse*, safety. ⁴ *Dresse*, arrange, dispose.

CANTO XII.

The Maske of Cupid, and th' enchaun-
ted Chamber are displayd ;
Whence Britomart redeemes faire A-
moret through charmes decayd.

I.

THO,¹ whenas chearelesse Night ycovered had
Fayre heaven with an universall clowd,
That every wight dismayd with darkenes sad
In silence and in sleepe themselves did shrowd,
She heard a shrilling trompet sound alowd,
Signe of nigh battaill, or got victory :
Nought therewith daunted was her courage prowd,
But rather stird to cruell enmity,
Expecting ever when some foe she might descry.

II.

With that, an hideous storme of winde arose,
With dreadfull thunder and lightning atwixt,
And an earthquake, as if it streight would lose²
The worlds foundations from his centre fixt :

¹ *Tho*, then.² *Lose*, loosen.

Arg. 1. — *The Maske of Cupid.*] The *masque* was a kind of dramatic entertainment, very popular in the poet's age. It was originally (like the one described in this canto) a sort of masquerade of figures fantastically dressed, attended with music and dancing, and sometimes with elaborate machinery. At a subsequent period, a poetical dialogue was added; and of this species of masques Ben Jonson has left many beautiful specimens.

A direfull stench of smoke and sulphure mixt
 Ensewd, whose noyaunce¹ fild the fearefull sted²
 From the fourth howre of night untill the sixt;
 Yet the bold Britonesse was nought ydred,³
 Though much emmov'd, but stedfast still persévered.

III.

All suddainly a stormy whirlwind blew
 Throughout the house, that clapped every dore,
 With which that yron wicket open flew,
 As it with mighty levers had bene tore;
 And forth yssewd,⁴ as on the readie flore
 Of some théatre, a grave personage
 That in his hand a braunch of laurell bore,
 With comely haveour⁵ and count'nance sage,
 Yclad in costly garments fit for tragicke stage.

IV.

Proceeding to the midst he stil did stand,
 As if in minde he somewhat had to say;
 And to the vulgare beckning with his hand,
 In signe of silence, as to heare a play,
 By lively actions he gan bewray⁶

¹ *Noyaunce*, annoyance.⁴ *Yssewd*, issued.² *Sted*, place.⁵ *Haveour*, demeanor.³ *Ydred*, terrified.⁶ *Bewray*, reveal.

III. 6. — *A grave personage, &c.*] Warton states that the introduction to this procession of masquers was borrowed from an allegorical spectacle common in Spenser's age, called the *dumb show*, which was wont to be exhibited before every act of a tragedy. This consisted of dumb actors, who, by their dress and action, prepared the spectators for the matter and substance of each ensuing act respectively. We have a specimen of this dumb show, introductory to the play in "Hamlet."

IV. 5. — *he gan bewray*

Some argument, &c.] He began by his gestures to give some explanation of the matters about to be represented.

Some argument of matter passioned ;
 Which doen, he backe retyred soft away,
 And, passing by, his name discovered,
 Ease, on his robe in golden letters cyphered.

V.

The noble Mayd still standing all this vewd,
 And merveild at his straunge intendiment¹ :
 With that a ioyous fellowship² issewd
 Of minstrales making goodly meriment,
 With wanton bardes, and rymers impudent ;
 All which together song full chearefully
 A lay of loves delight with sweet concent³ :
 After whom marcht a iolly company,
 In manner of a maske, enranged orderly.

VI.

The whiles a most delitious harmony
 In full straunge notes was sweetly heard to sound,
 That the rare sweetnesse of the melody
 The feeble sences wholly did confound,
 And the frayle soule in deepe delight nigh drown'd :
 And, when it ceast, shrill trumpets lowd did bray,
 That their report did far away rebound ;
 And, when they ceast, it gan againe to play,
 The whiles the Maskers marched forth in trim aray.

VII.

The first was Fansy, like a lovely boy
 Of rare aspect and beautie without peare,
 Matchable either to that ympe⁴ of Troy,
 Whom Love did love and chose his cup to beare ;

¹ *Intendiment*, conduct.³ *Concent*, harmony.² *Fellowship*, company.⁴ *Ympe*, youth.

Or that same daintie lad, which was so deare
 To great Alcides, that, whenas he dyde,
 He wailed womanlike with many a teare,
 And every wood and every valley wyde
 He filld with Hylas name ; the nymphes eke Hylas cryde.

VIII.

His garment neither was of silke nor say,¹
 But paynted plumes in goodly order dight,²
 Like as the sunburnt Indians do aray
 Their tawney bodies in their proudest plight :
 As those same plumes, so seemd he vaine and light,
 That by his gate might easily appeare ;
 For still he far'd as dauncing in delight,
 And in his hand a windy fan did beare,
 That in the ydle ayre he mov'd, still here and there.

IX.

And him beside marcht amorous Desyre,
 Who seemd of ryper yeares then ³ th' other swayne,
 Yet was that other swayne this elders syre,
 And gave him being, commune to them twayne :
 His garment was disguysed very vayne,⁴
 And his embrodered bonet sat awry :
 Twixt both his hands few sparks he close did strayne,
 Which still he blew and kindled busily,
 That soone they life conceiv'd, and forth in flames did fly.

X.

Next after him went Doubt, who was yclad
 In a discolour'd ⁵ cote of straunge disguyse,
 That at his backe a brode capuccio ⁶ had,

¹ *Say*, thin stuff. ² *Dight*, arrayed. ³ *Then*, than.

⁴ *Vayne*, fantastically. ⁵ *Discolour'd*, many-colored.

⁶ *Capuccio*, capuchin, or hood of a cloak.

And sleeves dependaunt Albanese-wyse ;
 He lookt askew with his mistrustfull eyes,
 And nycely¹ trode, as² thornes lay in his way,
 Or that the flore to shrink he did avyse³ ;
 And on a broken reed he still did stay
 His feeble steps, which shrunk when hard thereon he lay.

XI.

With him went Daunger, cloth'd in ragged weed⁴
 Made of beares skin, that him more dreadfull made ;
 Yet his owne face was dreadfull, ne did need
 Straunge⁵ horrour to deforme his griesly shade⁶ :
 A net in th' one hand, and a rusty blade
 In th' other was ; this Mischiefe, that Mishap ;
 With th' one his foes he threatned to invade,
 With th' other he his friends ment to enwrap :
 For whom he could not kill he practizd to entrap.

XII.

Next him was Feare, all arm'd from top to toe,
 Yet thought himselfe not safe enough thereby,
 But feard each shadow moving to or froe ;
 And, his owne armes when glittering he did spy
 Or clashing heard, he fast away did fly,
 As ashes pale of hew, and winged heeld ;
 And evermore on Daunger fixt his eye,
 Gainst whom he alwayes bent a brasen shield,
 Which his right hand unarmed fearefully did wield.

¹ *Nycely*, carefully.⁴ *Weed*, dress.² *As*, as if.⁵ *Straunge*, foreign, or borrowed.³ *Ayise*, perceive.⁶ *Griesly shade*, frightful appearance.

X. 4. — *Dependaunt Albanese-wyse.*] Hanging after the fashion of the inhabitants of Albania.

XII. 6. — *Winged heeld.*] With winged heels.

XII. 9. — *Which his right hand, &c.*] "This circumstance is suita-

XIII.

With him went Hope in rancke, a handsome mayd,
 Of chearefull looke and lovely to behold ;
 In silken samite¹ she was light arayd,
 And her fayre lockes were woven up in gold :
 She always smyld, and in her hand did hold
 An holy-water-sprinckle, dipt in deowe,
 With which she sprinckled favours manifold
 On whom she list, and did great liking sheowe,
 Great liking unto many, but true love to feowe.

XIV.

And after them Dissemblaunce and Suspect
 Marcht in one rancke, yet an unequall paire ;
 For She was gentle and of milde aspect,
 Courteous to all and seeming debonaire,²
 Goodly adorned and exceeding faire ;
 Yet was that all but paynted and purloynd,
 And her bright browes were deckt with borrowed haire ;
 Her deeds were forged, and her words false coynd,
 And alwaies in her hand two clewes of silke she twynd :

XV.

But He was fowle, ill favoured, and grim,
 Under his eiebrowes looking still askaunce ;
 And ever, as Dissemblaunce laught on him,
 He lowrd on Her with daungerous eye-glauce,
 Shewing his nature in his countenance ;
 His rolling eies did never rest in place,

¹ *Samite*, a kind of silk stuff.² *Debonaire*, gracious.

ble to the nature of Fear, who is here justly represented as being more solicitous to defend himself than to hurt others; he therefore bears his shield on his right arm." — Снурск.

XIII. 1. — *In rancke*.] Together, or in the same line.

But walkte¹ each where for feare of hid mischaunce,
 Holding a lattis still before his face,
 Through which he stil did peep as forward he did pace.

XVI.

Next him went Griefe and Fury matcht yfere²;
 Griefe all in sable sorrowfully clad,
 Downe hanging his dull head with heavy chere,
 Yet inly being more then³ seeming sad:
 A paire of pincers in his hand he had,
 With which he pinched people to the hart,
 That from thenceforth a wretched life they ladd,
 In wilfull languor and consuming smart,
 Dying each day with inward wounds of dolours⁴ dart.

XVII.

But Fury was full ill appareiled
 In rags, that naked nigh she did appeare,
 With ghastly looks and dreadfull drierihed⁵;
 And from her backe her garments she did teare,
 And from her head ofte rente her snarled heare:
 In her right hand a firebrand shee did tosse
 About her head, still roaming here and there;
 As a dismayed deare in chace embost,⁶
 Forgetfull of his safety, hath his right way lost.

XVIII.

After them went Displeasure and Pleasaunce,
 He looking lompish⁷ and full sullein sad,

¹ *Wa'kte*, roved, rolled.⁵ *Drierihed*, grief.² *Yfere*, together.⁶ *Embost*, hard pressed.³ *Then*, than.⁷ *Lompish*, heavy.⁴ *Dolours*, grief's.

XV. 8. — *Holding a lattis, &c.]* "Suspect is drawn with a *lattice*: the allusion is to the Italian name *gelosia*; such blinds or lattices as they may see through, yet not be seen." — Upton.

And hanging downe his heavy countenance;
 She chearfull, fresh, and full of ioyauunce glad,
 As if no sorrow she ne felt ne drad;
 That evill matched paire they seemd to bee:
 An angry waspe th' one in a viall had,
 Th' other in hers an hony lady-bee.

Thus marched these six couples forth in faire degree.

XIX.

After all these there marcht a most faire Dame,
 Led of two grysie¹ Villeins, th' one Despight,
 The other cleped² Cruelty by name:
 She dolefull Lady, like a dreary spright
 Cald by strong charmes out of eternall night,
 Had Deathes own ymage figurd in her face,
 Full of sad signes, fearfull to living sight;
 Yet in that horror shewd a seemely³ grace,
 And with her feeble feete did move a comely pace.

XX.

Her brest all naked, as nett⁴ yvory
 Without adorne of gold or silver bright
 Wherewith the craftesman wonts it beautify,
 Of her dew honour was despoyled quight;
 And a wide wound therein (O ruefull sight!)
 Entrenched deep with knyfe accursed keene,
 Yet freshly bleeding forth her fainting spright,
 (The worke of cruell hand) was to be seene,
 That dyde in sanguine red her skin all snowy cleene:

¹ *Grysie*, squalid.

² *Cleped*, called.

³ *Seemely*, pleasing.

⁴ *Nett*, pure.

XVIII. 8.—*An hony lady-bee.*] This is difficult of explanation, unless we suppose that Spenser imagined that the working-bees were females.

XXI.

At that wide orifice her trembling hart
 Was drawne forth, and in silver basin layd,
 Quite through transfixed with a deadly dart,
 And in her blood yet steeming fresh embayd.¹
 And those two Villeins (which her steps upstayd,
 When her weake feete could scarcely her sustaine,
 And fading vitall powres gan to fade,)
 Her forward still with torture did constraîne,
 And evermore encreased her consuming paine.

XXII.

Next after her, the Winged God himselfe
 Came riding on a lion ravenous,
 Taught to obey the menage² of that Elfe
 That man and beast with powre imperious
 Subdeweth to his kingdome tyrannous:
 His blindfold eies he bad awhile unbinde,
 That his proud spoile of that same dolorous
 Faire Dame he might behold in perfect kinde;
 Which seene, he much reioyced in his cruell minde.

XXIII.

Of which ful prowde, himselfe uprearing hye
 He looked round about with sterne disdayne,
 And did survay his goodly company;
 And, marshalling the evill-ordered trayne,

¹ *Embayed*, bathed.² *Menage*, management.

XXI. 7.—*And fading, &c.*] As “fade” occurs in the same line it has been conjectured that Spenser wrote “failing” instead of “fading.”

XXII. 7.— *of that same dolorous Faire Dame.*] i. e. Amoret, who was a prisoner in the castle.

XXII. 8.— *In perfect kinde.*] With perfect distinctness.

With that the darts which his right hand did straine
 Full dreadfully he shooke, that all did quake,
 And clapt on hye his coulour'd winges twaine,
 That all his many¹ it affraide did make :
 Tho,² blinding him againe, his way he forth did take.

XXIV.

Behinde him was Reproch, Repentaunce, Shame ;
 Reproch the first, Shame next, Repent behinde :
 Repentaunce feeble, sorrowfull, and lame ;
 Reproch despightful, carelesse, and unkinde ;
 Shame most ill-favour'd, bestiall, and blinde :
 Shame lowrd, Repentaunce sighd, Reproch did scould ;
 Reproch sharpe stings, Repentaunce whips entwinde,
 Shame burning brond-yrons in her hand did hold :
 All three to each unlikc, yet all made in one mould.

XXV.

And after them a rude confused rout
 Of persons flockt, whose names is hard to read³ :
 Emongst them was sterne Strife ; and Anger stout ;
 Unquiet Care ; and fond⁴ Unthriftyhead ;
 Lewd Losse of Time ; and Sorrow seeming dead ;
 Inconstant Change ; and false Disloyalty ;
 Consuming Riotise ; and guilty Dread
 Of heavenly Vengeance ; faint Infirmity ;
 Vile Poverty ; and, lastly, Death with infamy.

XXVI.

There were full many moe⁵ like Maladies,
 Whose names and natures I note⁶ readen well ;
 So many moe,⁵ as there be phantasies
 In wavering wemens witt, that none can tell,

¹ *Many*, company.² *Tho*, then.³ *Read*, tell.⁴ *Fond*, foolish.⁵ *Moe*, more.⁶ *Note*, cannot.

Or paines in love, or punishments in hell :
 All which disguised marcht in masking-wise
 About the Chamber by the Damozell ;
 And then returned, having marched thrise,
 Into the inner rowme from whence they first did rise.¹

XXVII.

So soone as they were in, the dore straightway
 Fast locked, driven with that stormy blast
 Which first it opened, and bore all away.
 Then the brave Maid, which al this while was plast
 In secret shade, and saw both first and last,
 Issewed forth and went unto the dore
 To enter in, but fownd it locked fast :
 It vaine she thought with rigorous uprore
 For to efforce, when charmes had closed it afore.

XXVIII.

Where force might not availe, their sleights and art
 She cast² to use, both fitt for hard emprize :
 Forthy³ from that same rowme not to depart
 Till morrow next shee did herselfe avize,⁴
 When that same Maske againe should forth arize.
 The morrowe next appeard with ioyous cheare,
 Calling men to their daily exercize :
 Then she, as morrow fresh, herselfe did reare
 Out of her secret stand that day for to outweare.⁵

XXIX.

All that day she outwore⁶ in wandering
 And gazing on that Chambers ornament,

¹ Rise, proceed.⁴ *Herselfe avize*, determine.² Cast, purposed.⁵ *Outweare*, pass.³ Forthy, therefore.⁶ *Outwore*, passed.

 XXVII. 8. — *Rigorous uprore.*] Vigorous effort.

Till that againe the second Evening
 Her covered with her sable vestiment,
 Wherewith the worlds faire beautie she hath blent¹ :
 Then, when the second watch was almost past,
 That brasen dore flew open, and in went
 Bold Britomart, as she had late forecast,²
 Nether of ydle shows nor of false charmes aghast.

XXX.

So soone as she was entred, rownd about
 She cast her eies to see what was become
 Of all those persons which she saw without.
 But lo! they streight were vanisht all and some;
 Ne living wight she saw in all that roome,
 Save that same woefull Lady; both whose hands
 Were bounden fast, that did her ill become,
 And her small waste girt rownd with yron bands
 Unto a brasen pillour, by the which she stands.

XXXI.

And, her before, the vile Enchaunter sate,
 Figuring straunge charácters of his art;
 With living blood he those charácters wrate,³
 Dreadfully dropping from her dying hart,
 Seeming transfixed with a cruell dart;
 And all perforce to make her him to love.
 Ah! who can love the worker of her smart!
 A thousand charmes he formerly did prove;
 Yet thousand charmes could not her stedfast hart remove.

¹ *Blent*, obscured.² *Forecast*, previously determined.³ *Wrate*, wrote.

XXIX. 6. — *Second watch.*] The second watch began at nine, and ended at twelve.

XXIX. 7. — *Brasen dore.*] In the third stanza this door is 'iron.'

XXX. 4. — *All and some.*] One and all.

XXXII.

Soon as that Virgin Knight he saw in place,
 His wicked bookes in hast he overthrew,
 Not caring his long labours to deface ;
 And, fiercely running to that Lady trew,
 A murdrous knife out of his pocket drew,
 The which he thought, for villenous despight,
 In her tormented bodie to embrew :
 But the stout Damzell to him leaping light
 His cursed hand withheld, and maistered his might.

XXXIII.

From her, to whom his fury first he ment,¹
 The wicked weapon rashly² he did wrest,³
 And, turning to herselfe his fell intent,
 Unwares it strooke into her snowie chest,
 That litle drops empurpled her faire brest.
 Exceeding wroth therewith the Virgin grew,
 Albe⁴ the wound were nothing deepe imprest,
 And fiercely forth her mortall blade she drew,
 To give him the reward for such vile outrage dew.

XXXIV.

So mightily she smote him, that to ground
 He fell halfe dead ; next stroke him should have slaine,
 Had not the Lady, which by him stood bound,
 Dernly⁵ unto her called to abstaine
 From doing him to dy ; for else her paine
 Should be remédillesse ; sith⁶ none but hee

¹ *Ment*, directed.⁴ *Albe*, although.² *Rashly*, quickly.⁵ *Dernly*, earnestly.³ *Wrest*, turn aside.⁶ *Sith*, since.

XXXII. 3. — *Not caring, &c.*] Not caring whether he defaced his long labors or not.

XXXIII. 3. — *To herselfe.*] To Britomart.

Which wrought it could the same recure againe.
 Therewith she stayd her hand, loth stayd to bee ;
 For life she him envýde, and long'd revenge to see :

XXXV.

And to him said ; " Thou wicked man, whose meed
 For so huge mischiefe and vile villany
 Is death, or if that ought doe death exceed ;
 Be sure that nought may save thee from to dy
 But if¹ that thou this Dame do presently
 Restore unto her health and former state ;
 This doe, and live ; els dye undoubtedly."
 He, glad of life, that lookt for death but late,
 Did yield himselfe right willing to prolong his date :

XXXVI.

And rising up gan streight to over-looke²
 Those cursed leaves, his charmes back to reverse :
 Full dreadfull things out of that balefull booke
 He red, and measur'd many a sad verse,
 That horroure gan the Virgins hart to perse,
 And her faire locks up stared stiffe on end,
 Hearing him those same bloody lynes reherse ;
 And, all the while he red, she did extend
 Her sword high over him, if ought he did offend.

XXXVII.

Anon she gan perceive the house to quake,
 And all the dores to rattle round about ;
 Yet all that did not her dismaied make,
 Nor slack her threatfull hand for daungers dout,³
 But still with stedfast eye and courage stout
 Abode, to weet⁴ what end would come of all :

¹ *But if*, unless.³ *Dout*, fear.² *Over-looks*, look over.⁴ *Weet*, learn.

At last that mightie chaine, which round about
Her tender waste was wound, adowne gan fall,
And that great brasen pillour broke in peeces small.

XXXVIII.

The cruell steele, which thrid¹ her dying hart,
Fell softly forth, as of his owne accord;
And the wyde wound, which lately did dispart²
Her bleeding brest and riven bowels gor'd,
Was closed up, as it had not beene sor'd³;
And every part to safëty full sownd,
As she were never hurt, was soone restord:
Tho,⁴ when she felt herselfe to be unbownd
And perfect hole, prostrate she fell unto the grownd;

XXXIX.

Before faire Britomart she fell prostrate,
Saying; "Ah! noble Knight, what worthy meede
Can wretched Lady, quitt from wofull state,
Yield you in lieu of this your gracious deed?
Your vertue selfe her owne reward shall breed,
Even immortal prayse and glory wyde,
Which I your vassall, by your prowesse freed,
Shall through the world make to be notifyde,⁵
And goodly well advaunce that goodly well was tryde."

XL.

But Britomart, uprearing her from grownd,
Said; "Gentle Dame, reward enough I weene,

¹ *Thrid*, pierced.⁴ *Tho*, then.² *Dispart*, divide.⁵ *Notifyde*, proclaimed.³ *Sor'd*, made sore, hurt.

XXXIX. 9. — *And goodly well advaunce, &c.*] And properly celebrate the qualities that have been so well tried.

For many labours more than I have found,
 This, that in safetie now I have you seene,
 And meane¹ of your deliverance have beene:
 Henceforth, faire Lady, comfort to you take,
 And put away remembrance of late teene²;
 Insted thereof, know that your loving Make³
 Hath no lesse grieve endured for your gentle sake.”

XLI.

She much was cheard to hear him mentiond,
 Whom of all living wightes she loved best.
 Then laid the noble Championesse strong hond
 Upon th' Enchaunter which had her distrest
 So sore, and with foule outrages opprest:
 With that great chaine, wherewith not long ygoe
 He bound that pitteous Lady prisoner now relest,
 Himselfe she bound, more worthy to be so,
 And captive with her led to wretchednesse and wo.

XLII.

Returning back, those goodly rowmes, which erst⁴
 She saw so rich and royally arayd,
 Now vanisht utterly and cleane subverst
 She found, and all their glory quite decayd;
 That sight of such a change her much dismayd.
 Thence forth descending to that perlous⁵ porch,
 Those dreadfull flames she also found delayd⁶

¹ *Meane*, means, or instrument.⁴ *Erst*, before.² *Teene*, sorrow.⁵ *Perlous*, perilous.³ *Make*, companion, or lover.⁶ *Delayd*, removed.

XLI. 7. — *Lady prisoner.*] “Prisoner” is supposed by some of Spenser’s editors to have crept in by accident or mistake of the printer, as the line, as it now reads, has twelve syllables.

And quenched quite like a consumed torch,
That erst¹ all enterrs wont so cruelly to scorch.

XLIII.

More easie issew now then² entrance late
She found; for now that fained-dreadfull³ flame,
Which chokt the porch of that enchanted gate
And passage bard to all that thither came,
Was vanisht quite, as it were not the same,
And gave her leave at pleasure forth to passe.
Th' Enchaunter selfe, which all that fraud did
frame

To have efforst the love of that faire Lasse,
Seeing his worke now wasted, deepe engrieved was.

XLIV.

But when the Victoresse arrived there
Where late she left the pensife Scudamore
With her own trusty Squire, both full of feare,
Neither of them she found where she them lore⁴:
Thereat her noble hart was stonisht sore;
But most faire Amoret, whose gentle spright
Now gan to feede on hope, which she before
Conceived had, to see her own deare Knight,
Being thereof beguyld, was fild with new affright.

XLV.

But he, sad man, when he had long in drede
Awaited there for Britomarts returne,
Yet saw her not, nor signe of her good speed,
His expectation to despaire did turne,
Misdeeming⁵ sure that her those flames did burne;
And therefore gan advize with her old Squire,

¹ *Erst*, before. ² *Then*, than. ³ *Fained-dreadfull*, apparently dreadful.

⁴ *Lore*, left.

⁵ *Misdeeming*, judging wrongly.

Who her deare nourslings losse no lesse did mourne,
 Thence to depart for further aide t' enquire:
 Where let them wend¹ at will, whilst here I doe respire.

¹ *Wend, go.*

When Spenser printed his first three books of the *Faerie Queene*, the two lovers, Sir Scudamore and Amoret, have a happy meeting; but afterwards, when he printed the fourth, fifth, and sixth books, he reprinted likewise the three first books; and, among other alterations of the lesser kind, he left out the five last stanzas, and made three new stanzas, viz. *Mors casis issew now, &c.* By these alterations this third book not only connects better with the fourth, but the reader is kept in that suspense which is necessary in a well-told story. The stanzas which are mentioned above, as omitted in the second edition, and printed in the first, are the following:—

XLIII.

At last she came unto the place, where late
 She left Sir Scudamour in great distresse,
 Twixt dolour and despight half desperate,
 Of his loues succour, of his owne redresse,
 And of the hardie¹ Britomarts successe:
 There on the cold earth him now thrown she found,
 In wilful anguish, and dead heavinesse,
 And to him cald; whose voices knowen sound
 Soone as he heard, himself he reared light from ground.

XLIV.

There did he see, that most on Earth him ioyd,
 His dearest loue, the comfort of his dayes,
 Whose too long absence him had sore annoyd,
 And wearied his life with dull delays:
 Straight he upstarted from the loathed layes,²
 And to her ran with hasty eagernesse,
 Like as a deare, that greedily embayes³

¹ *Hardie*, bold. ² *Layes*, lea, ground. ³ *Embayes*, bathes.

In the cool soile, after long thirstinesse,
Which he in chace endureth hath, now nigh breathlesse.

XLV.

Lightly he clipt¹ her twixt his armēs twaine,
And streightly² did embrace her body bright,
Her body, late the prison of sad paine,
Now the sweet lodge of loue and dear delight:
But the faire lady, overcommen quight
Of huge affection, did in pleasure melt,
And in sweet ravishment pourd out her spright.
No word they spake, nor earthly thing they felt,
But like two senceless stocks in long embracements dwelt.

XLVI.

Had ye them seene, ye would have surely thought
That they had been that faire hermaphrodite,
Which that rich Roman of white marble wrought,
And in his costly bath caused to be site.³
So seemd those two, as growne together quite;
That Britomart, halfe enuying their blesse,
Was much empassioued in her gentle sprite,
And to her selfe oft wisht like happinesse:
In vaine she wisht, that fate n'ould⁴ let her yet possess.

XLVII.

Thus doe those louers with sweet counteruayle,⁵
Each other of loues bitter fruit despoile.
But now my teme begins to faint and fayle,
All woxen weary of their iournall⁶ toyle;
Therefore I will their sweatie yokes assoyle⁷
At this same furrowes end, till a new day:
And ye, fair swayns, after your long turmoyle,
Now cease your worke, and at your pleasure play;
Now cease your work; to-morrow is an holy day.

¹ *Clipt*, embraced.⁵ *Counteruayle*, countervail, interchange.² *Streightly*, closely.⁶ *Journall*, daily.³ *Site*, placed.⁷ *Assoyle*, loosen, release.⁴ *Nould*, would not.

XLVI. 4. — *Costly bath.*] This statue was found in the baths of Diocletian.

THE FOURTH BOOKE
OF
THE FAERIE QUEENE

CONTAYNING

THE LEGEND OF CAMEL AND TRIAMOND, OR OF
FRIENDSHIP.

I.

THE rugged forehead, that with grave foresight
Welds¹ kingdomes causes and affaires of state,
My looser rimes, I wote,² doth sharply wite³
For praising love as I have done of late,
And magnifying lovers deare debate ;
By which fraile youth is oft to follie led,
Through false allurement of that pleasing baite,
That better were in vertues disciplined,⁴
Then⁵ with vaine poemes weeds to have their fancies fed.

II.

Such ones ill iudge of love, that cannot love,
Ne in their frozen hearts feele kindly flame :

¹ *Welds*, welds.

² *Wote*, know.

³ *Wite*, blame.

⁴ *Disciplod*, disciplined.

⁵ *Then*, than.

I. 1. — *The rugged forehead.*] The lord treasurer Burleigh is supposed to be "the rugged forehead" here mentioned.

I. 9. — *Weeds.*] Here used for something noxious or useless.

Forthy¹ they ought not thing unknowne reprove,
 Ne naturall affection faultlesse blame
 For fault of few that have abusd the same :
 For it of honor and all vertue is
 The roote, and brings forth glorious flowres of fame,
 That crowne true lovers with immortall blis,
 The meed of them that love, and do not live amisse.

III.

Which whoso list looke backe to former ages,
 And call to count the things that then were donne,
 Shall find that all the workes of those wise sages,
 And brave exploits which great heroës wonne,
 In love were either ended or begunne :
 Witnesse the Father of Philosophie,
 Which to his Critias, shaded oft from sunne,
 Of love full manie lessons did apply,
 The which these Stoicke censours cannot well deny.

IV.

To such therefore I do not sing at all ;
 But to that sacred Saint my soveraigne Queene,
 In whose chast brest all bountie² naturall
 And treasures of true love enlocked³ beene,
 Bove all her sexe that ever yet was seene ;
 To her I sing of love, that loveth best,
 And best is lov'd of all alive I weene ;
 To her this song most fitly is adress, [blest.
 The Queene of love, and Prince of peace from heaven

V.

Which that she may the better deigne to heare,

¹ *Forthy*, therefore.

² *Bountie*, generosity.

³ *Enlocked*, enclosed, contained.

Do thou, dred Infant, Venus dearling dove,
From her high spirit chase imperious feare,
And use of awfull maiestie remove:
Insted thereof with drops of melting love,
Deawd with ambrosiall kisses, by thee gotten
From thy sweete-smyling Mother from above,
Sprinckle her heart, and haughtie courage soften,
That she may hearke to love, and reade this lesson often.

V. 3. — *Imperious feare.*] "Feare" here means that which inspires fear in others.

V. 5. — *With drops of melting love, &c.*] This language has an odd sound when we recollect that Queen Elizabeth, when this portion of the poem was published, was over sixty years old.

CANTO I.

Fayre Britomart saves Amoret :
 Duessa discord breeds
 Twixt Scudamour and Blandamour :
 Their fight and warlike deedes.

I.

Or lovers sad calamities of old
 Full many piteous stories doe remaine,
 But none more piteous ever was ytold
 Then ¹ that of Amorets hart-binding chaine,
 And this of Florimels unworthie paine :
 The deare compassion of whose bitter fit ²
 My softned heart so sorely doth constraine,
 That I with teares full oft doe pittie it,
 And oftentimes doe wish it never had bene writ.

II.

For, from the time that Scudamour her bought ³
 In perilous fight, she never ioyed day ;
 A perilous fight ! when he with force her brought
 From twentie Knights that did him all assay ⁴ ;
 Yet fairely well he did them all dismay, ⁵
 And with great glorie both the Shield of Love
 And eke the Ladie selfe he brought away ;

¹ Then, than. ² Fit, affliction. ³ Bought, won.

⁴ Assay, assail. ⁵ Dismay, subdue.

II. 3. — *A perilous fight.*] Of the manner in which Scudamore won Amoret, we are informed hereafter, in the tenth canto of this book.

Whom having wedded, as did him behove,
A new unknowen mischiefe did from him remove.

III.

For that same vile Enchauntour Busyran,
The very selfe same day that she was wedded,
Amidst the bridale feast, whilest every man
Surcharg'd¹ with wine were heedlesse and ill-hedded,²
All bent to mirth before the Bride was bedded,
Brought in that Mask of Love which late was shoven;
And there the Ladie ill of friends bestedded,³
By way of sport, as oft in Maskes is known,
Conveyed quite away to living wight unknowen.

IV.

Seven moneths he so her kept in bitter smart,
Because his sinfull lust she would not serve,
Untill such time as noble Britomart
Released her, that else was like to sterve⁴
Through cruell knife that her deare heart did kerve⁵:
And now she is with her upon the way
Marching in lovely wise, that could deserve
No spot of blame, though spite did oft assay
To blot her with dishonor of so faire a pray.

V.

Yet should it be a pleasant tale, to tell
The diverse usage, and demeanure daint,⁶

¹ *Surcharg'd*, overburdened.

⁴ *Sterve*, starve, die.

² *Ill-hedded*, disturbed in head.

⁵ *Kerve*, carve, pierce.

³ *Bstedded*, attended.

⁶ *Demeanure daint*, delicate conduct.

III. 6. — *Which late was shoven.*] In the last canto of the third book.

IV. 9. — *To blot her, &c.*] 'To impute to her a dishonorable connection with her fair charge.' Britomart, it will be remembered, was supposed to be a man.

That each to other made, as oft befell :
 For Amoret right fearefull was and faint
 Lest she with blame her honor should attain,
 That everie word did tremble as she spake,
 And everie looke was coy and wondrous quaint,¹
 And everie limbe that touched her did quake ;
 Yet could she not but curteous countenance to her make.

VI.

For well she wist,² as true it was indeed,
 That her live's lord and patrone of her health
 Right well deserved, as his duefull meed,
 Her love, her service, and her utmost wealth :
 All is his iustly that all freely deal'th.³
 Nathlesse her honor dearer then ⁴ her life
 She sought to save, as thing reserv'd from stealth ;
 Die had she lever⁵ with Enchanters knife
 Then ⁴ to be false in love, profest a virgine wife.

VII.

Thereto⁶ her feare was made so much the greater
 Through fine abusion ⁷ of that Briton Mayd ;
 Who, for to hide her fained sex the better
 And maske her wounded mind, both did and sayd
 Full many things so doubtfull to be wayd,⁸

¹ *Quaint*, nice, coy.⁵ *Lever*, rather.² *Wist*, knew.⁶ *Thereto*, besides.³ *Deal'th*, bestoweth.⁷ *Fine abusion*, cunning fraud.⁴ *Then*, than.⁸ *Wayd*, weighed, understood.

V. 9. — *Curteous countenance to her make.*] Behave to her in a courteous manner.

VI. 2. — *Live's lord.*] Rescuer from death.

VI. 2. — *Patrone of her health.*] Person to whom her welfare and happiness were owing.

VII. 4. — *Wounded mind.*] Wounded; that is, with love for Arthegall.

That well she wist¹ not what by them to gesse:
 For otherwhiles to her she purpos² made
 Of love, and otherwhiles of lustfulnesse,
 That much she feard his mind would grow to some excesse.

VIII.

His will she feard; for him she surely thought
 To be a man, such as indeed he seemed;
 And much the more, by that he lately wrought,
 When her from deadly thraldome he redeemed,
 For which no service she too much esteemed:
 Yet dread of shame and doubt³ of fowle dishonor
 Made her not yeeld so much as due shee deemed.
 Yet Britomart attended duly on her,
 As well became a Knight, and did to her all honor.

IX.

It so befell one evening that they came
 Unto a Castell, lodged there to bee,
 Where many a Knight, and many a lovely Dame,
 Was then assembled deeds of armes to see:
 Amongst all which was none more faire then⁴ shee,
 That many of them mov'd to eye her sore.
 The custome of that place was such, that hee,
 Which had no Love nor Lemman there in store,
 Should either winne him one, or lye without the dore.

X.

Amongst the rest there was a iolly Knight,
 Who, being asked for his love, avow'd
 That fairest Amoret was his by right,
 And offred that to iustifie alowd.
 The warlike Virgine, seeing his so proud
 And boastfull chalenge, wexed inlie wroth,

¹ *Wist*, knew.³ *Doubt*, fear.² *Purpos*, conversation.⁴ *Then*, than.

But for the present did her anger shrowd ;
 And sayd, her Love to lose she was full loth,
 But either he should neither of them have, or both.

XI.

So forth they went, and both together giusted¹ ;
 But that same younker² soone was overthrowne,
 And made repent that he had rashly lusted
 For thing unlawfull that was not his owne :
 Yet since he seemed valiant, though unknowne,
 She, that no lesse was courteous then³ stout,⁴
 Cast how to salve, that both the custome showne⁵
 Were kept, and yet that Knight not locked out ;
 That seem'd full hard t' accord two things so far in dout.

XII.

The seneschall was cal'd to deeme⁶ the right ;
 Whom she requir'd, that first fayre Amoret
 Might be to her allow'd, as to a Knight
 That did her win and free from chalenge set :
 Which straight to her was yeelded without let⁷ :
 Then, since that strange Knights Love from him was
 quitted,⁸
 She claim'd that to herselfe, as Ladies det⁹
 He as a Knight might iustly be admitted ;
 So none should be out shut, sith¹⁰ all of Loves were fitted.¹¹

¹ *Giusted*, jousted, ran a course
 with spears.

² *Younker*, youth.

³ *Then*, than.

⁴ *Stout*, brave.

⁵ *Showne*, proclaimed.

⁶ *Deeme*, judge.

⁷ *Let*, hinderance.

⁸ *Quitted*, taken.

⁹ *Det*, debt.

¹⁰ *Sith*, since.

¹¹ *Fitted of*, supplied with.

XI. 7. — *Cast how to salve.*] Cast in her mind how to contrive.

XI. 9. — *So far in dout.*] So difficult.

XII. 1. — *Seneschall.*] The household steward, or master of the ceremonies.

XIII.

With that, her glistring helmet she unlaced ;
 Which doft,¹ her golden lockes, that were upbound
 Still in a knot, unto her heeles downe traced,
 And like a silken veile in compasse round
 About her backe and all her bodie wound :
 Like as the shining skie in summers night,
 What time the dayes with scorching heat abound,
 Is creasted² all with lines of fire light,
 That it prodigious seemes in common peoples sight.

XIV.

Such when those Knights and Ladies all about
 Beheld her, all were with amazement smit,
 And every one gan grow in secret dout
 Of this and that, according to each wit :
 Some thought that some enchantment faygned it ;
 Some, that Bellona in that warlike wise
 To them appear'd, with shield and armour fit ;
 Some, that it was a maske of strange disguise :
 So diversely each one did sundrie doubts devise.

XV.

But that young Knight, which through her gentle deed
 Was to that goodly fellowship restor'd,
 Ten thousand thanks did yeeld her for her meed,
 And, doubly overcommen, her ador'd :
 So did they all their former strife accord³ ;
 And eke fayre Amoret, now freed from feare,
 More franke affection did to her afford ;

¹ *Doft*, taken off. ² *Creasted*, crested, tufted. ³ *Accord*, compose.

XIII. 8.—*With lines of fire light.*] This is a description of the Aurora Borealis.

XV. 4.—*Doubly overcommen.*] Overcome by her valor and her generosity.

And to her bed, which she was wont forbear,
Now freely drew, and found right safe assurance there :

XVI.

Where all that night they of their loves did treat,¹
And hard adventures, twixt themselves alone,
That each the other gan with passion great
And grieffull² pittie privately bemone.
The morrow next, so soone as Titan shone,
They both uprose and to their waies them dight³ :
Long wandred they, yet never met with none
That to their willes could them direct aright,
Or to them tydings tell that mote their harts delight.

XVII.

Lo thus they rode, till at the last they spide
Two armed Knights that toward them did pace,
And ech of them had ryding by his side
A Ladie, seeming in so farre a space ;
But Ladies none they were, albee⁴ in face
And outward shew faire semblance they did beare ;
For under maske of beautie and good-grace
Vile treason and fowle falshood hidden were,
That motè to none but to the warie wise appeare.

XVIII.

The onè of them the false Duessa hight,⁵

¹ *Treat*, discourse.

⁴ *Albee*, although.

² *Grieffull*, grief-full.

⁵ *Hight*, called.

³ *Dight*, prepared.

XVI. 6. — *Their waies them dight.*] Prepared themselves for their journey.

XVII. 4. — *Seeming in so farre a space.*] Appearing to be at so great a distance.

XVIII. 1. — *Duessa.*] Duessa appears from the eighth canto of the first book.

That now had chang'd her former wonted hew ;
 For she could d'on¹ so manie shapes in sight,
 As ever could cameleon colours new ;
 So could she forge all colours, save the trew :
 The other no whit better was then² shee,
 But that, such as she was, she plaine did shew ;
 Yet otherwise much worse, if worse might bee,
 And dayly more offensive unto each degree :

XIX.

Her name was Atè, mother of debate³
 And all dissention which doth dayly grow
 Amongst fraile men, that many a publike state
 And many a private oft doth overthrow.
 Her false Duessa, who full well did know
 To be most fit to trouble noble Knights
 Which hunt for honor, raised from below
 Out of the dwellings of the damned sprights,
 Where she in darknes wastes her cursed daies and nights.

XX.

Hard by the gates of hell her dwelling is ;
 There, whereas all the plagues and harmes abound
 Which punish wicked men that walke amisse :
 It is a darksome delve⁴ farre under ground,
 With thornes and barren brakes enviroind round,
 That none the same may easily out win⁵ ;
 Yet many waies to enter may be found,
 But none to issue forth when one is in :
 For discord harder is to end then² to begin.

¹ *D'on*, do on, put on. ² *Then*, than. ³ *Debate*, strife.

⁴ *Delve*, cave. ⁵ *Out win*, get out.

XVIII. 9. — *Unto each degree.*] To every condition ; to persons of all sorts.

XXI.

And all within, the riven walls were hung
 With ragged monuments of times forepast,¹
 All which the sad effects of discord sung :
 There were rent robes and broken scepters plast² ;
 Altars defyld, and holy things defast ;
 Disshivered speares and shields ytorne in twaine ;
 Great cities ransackt, and strong castles rast³ ;
 Nations captived, and huge armies slaine :
 Of all which ruines there some relicks did remaine.

XXII.

There was the signe⁴ of antique Babylon ;
 Of fatall Thebes ; of Rome that raigned long ;
 Of sacred Salem ; and sad Ilion,
 For memorie of which on high there hong
 The Golden Apple, cause of all their wrong,
 For which the three faire goddesses did strive :
 There also was the name of Nimrod strong ;
 Of Alexander, and his princes five
 Which shar'd to them the spoiles that he had got alive :

XXIII.

And there the relicks of the drunken fray,
 The which amongst the Lapithees befell ;
 And of the bloodie feast, which sent away
 So many Centaures drunken soules to hell,

¹ *Forepast*, gone by.² *Rast*, razed.³ *Plast*, placed.⁴ *Signe*, picture, representation.

XXII. 8. — *His princes five.*] These five princes, according to Upton, were Cassander, Lysimachus, Ptolemy, Seleucus, and Antigonus.

XXIII. 3. — *Of the bloodie feast.*] A quarrel between the Centaurs and Lapithæ arose at the wedding of one of the latter ; Pirithous and many of the Centaurs were slain. Hercules was one of the Lapithæ.

That under great Alcides furie fell :
 And of the dreadfull discord, which did drive
 The noble Argonauts to outrage fell,
 That each of life sought others to deprive,
 All mindlesse of the Golden Fleece, which made them strive.

XXIV.

And eke of private persons many moe,¹
 That were too long a worke to count them all ;
 Some, of sworne friends that did their faith forgoe ;
 Some, of borne brethren prov'd unnaturall ;
 Some, of deare lovers foes perpetuall :
 Witnesse their broken bandes there to be seene,
 Their girlonds rent, their bowres² despoyled all ;
 The monuments whereof there byding beene,³
 As plaine as at the first when they were fresh and greene.

XXV.

Such was her House within ; but all without,
 The barren ground was full of wicked weedes,
 Which she herselfe had sowen all about,
 Now growen great, at first of little seedes,
 The seedes of evill wordes and factious deedes ;
 Which, when to ripenesse due they growen arre,
 Bring forth an infinite increase that breedes
 Tumultuous trouble, and contentious iarre,⁴
 The which most often end in bloudshed and in warre.

XXVI.

And those same cursed seedes doe also serve
 To her for bread, and yeeld her living food :
 For life it is to her, when others sterve⁵

¹ *Moe*, more.² *Bowres*, chambers, dwellings.³ *Byding beene*, are remaining.⁴ *Jarre*, jar.⁵ *Sterve*, starve, die.

Through mischievous debate¹ and deadly feod,²
 That she may sucke their life and drinke their blood,
 With which she from her childhood had bene fed:
 For she at first was borne of hellish brood,
 And by infernall Furies nourished;
 That by her monstrous shape might easily be red.³

XXVII.

Her face most fowle and filthy was to see,
 With squinted eyes contrarie wayes intended,⁴
 And loathly⁵ mouth, unmeete a mouth to bee,
 That nought but gall and venim comprehended,⁶
 And wicked wordes that God and man offended:
 Her lying tongue was in two parts divided,
 And both the parts did speake, and both contended;
 And as her tongue so was her hart discided,⁴
 That never thought one thing, but doubly stil was guided.

XXVIII.

Als⁸ as she double spake, so heard she double,
 With matchlesse⁹ eares deformed and distort,
 Fild with false rumors and seditious trouble,
 Bred in assemblies of the vulgar sort,
 That still are led with every light report
 And as her eares, so eke her feet were odde,
 And much unlike; th' one long, the other short,
 And both misplast¹⁰; that, when th' one forward yode,¹¹
 The other backe retired and contrarie trode.

XXIX.

Likewise unequal were her handēs twaine;

¹ *Debate*, strife.

² *Feod*, feud.

³ *Red*, perceived.

⁴ *Intended*, directed.

⁵ *Loathly*, loathsome.

⁶ *Comprehended*, contained.

⁷ *Discided*, cleft in two.

⁸ *Als*, also.

⁹ *Matchlesse*, not matched.

¹⁰ *Misplast*, misplaced.

¹¹ *Yode*, went.

That one did reach, the other pusht away ;
 That one did make, the other mard againe,
 And sought to bring all things unto decay ;
 Whereby great riches gathered manie a day,
 She in shert space did often bring to nought,
 And theiz possessours often did dismay¹ :
 For all her studie was and all her thought
 How she might overthrow the things that Concord wrought.

XXX.

So much her malice did her might surpas,
 That even th' Almighty selfe she did maligne,
 Because to man so mercifull he was,
 And unto all his creatures so benigne,
 Sith² she herselfe was of his grace indigne³ :
 For all this worlds faire workmanship she tride
 Unto his last confusion to bring,
 And that great golden chaine quite to divide,
 With which it blessed Concord hath together tide.

XXXI.

Such was that Hag, which with Duessa roade ;
 And, serving her in her malicious use⁴
 To hurt good Knights, was, as it were, her baude
 To sell her borrowed beautie to abuse :
 For though, like⁵ withered tree that wanteth iuyce,
 She old and crooked were, yet now of late
 As fresh and fragrant as the floure-deluce⁵
 She was become, by change of her estate,
 And made full goodly ioyance to her new-found mate :

XXXII.

Her mate, he was a iollie⁷ youthfull Knight

¹ *Dismay*, equip. ² *Sith*, since. ³ *Indigne*, unworthy.
⁴ *Use*; habit, custom. ⁵ *Floure-deluce*, the iris, (*fleur de lis*, Fr.)
⁶ *Mate*, companion. ⁷ *Iollie*, handsome.

That bore great sway in armes and chivalrie,
 And was indeed a man of mickle¹ might;
 His name was Blandamour, that did descrie²
 His fickle mind full of inconstancie:
 And now himselfe he fitted had right well
 With two companions of like qualitie,
 Faithlesse Duessa, and false Paridell,
 That whether were more false, full hard it is to tell.

XXXIII.

Now when this gallant with his goodly crew
 From farre espide the famous Britomart,
 Like Knight adventurous in outward vew,
 With his faire paragon,³ his conquests part,
 Approching nigh; eftsoones⁴ his wanton hart
 Was tickled with delight, and iesting sayd;
 "Lo! there, Sir Paridel, for your desart,
 Good lucke presents you with yond⁵ lovely Mayd,
 For pitie that ye want a fellow for your ayd."

XXXIV.

By that the lovely paire drew nigh to hond:
 Whom whenas Paridel more plaine beheld,
 Albee⁶ in heart he like affection fond,⁷

¹ *Mickle*, much.² *Descrie*, discover.³ *Paragon*, companion.⁴ *Eftsoones*, immediately.⁵ *Yond*, yonder.⁶ *Albee*, although.⁷ *Fond*, found, felt.

XXXII. 4.—*Blandamour*.] This name means a *flattering lover*. Upton conjectures that he represents the Earl of Northumberland, who was associated with the Earl of Westmoreland (who, according to the same authority, is the prototype of Paridell) in a rebellion against Queen Elizabeth.

XXXIII. 8.—*Good lucke, &c.*] 'Good luck presents you with yonder lovely maid, in pity upon you, because you want a companion to aid you.'

Yet mindfull how he late by one was feld¹
 That did those armes and that same scutchion² weld,³
 He had small lust⁴ to buy his Love so deare,
 But answered; "Sir, him wise I never held,
 That, having once escaped perill neare,
 Would afterwards afresh the sleeping evill reare.⁵

XXXV.

"This Knight too late his manhood and his might
 I did assay, that me right dearly cost;
 Ne list I for revenge provoke new fight,
 Ne for light Ladies Love, that soone is lost."
 The hot-spurre youth so scorning to be crost,
 "Take then to you this Dame of mine," quoth hee,
 "And I, without your perill or your cost,
 Will challenge⁶ yond same other for my fee."⁷
 So forth he fiercely prickt, that one him scarce could see.

XXXVI.

The warlike Britonesse her soone adrest,
 And with such uncouth⁸ welcome did receive
 Her fayned paramour, her forced guest,
 That, being forst his saddle soone to leave,

¹ *Feld*, thrown down.² *Scutchion*, device on the shield.³ *Weld*, wield, bear.⁴ *Lust*, desire.⁵ *Rears*, rouse.⁶ *Challenge*, claim.⁷ *Fee*, property.⁸ *Uncouth*, ugly.XXXIV. 5. — *Same scutchion.*] See book III. canto I. stanza IV.XXXV. 5. — *The hot-spurre youth.*] Blandamour. This epithet is one of the reasons which leads Upton to think that the Earl of Northumberland is meant by Blandamour, Hotspur being the name given to young Percy in the reign of Henry IV., as every reader of Shakspeare knows.XXXVI. 3. — *Her fayned paramour, &c.*] 'Her (that is Amoret's) feigned lover, or who would feign be her lover, and who would force himself upon her as her guest or companion.'

Himselfe he did of his new Love deceave¹ ;
 And made himselfe th' ensample of his follie.
 Which done, she passed forth, not taking leave,
 And left him now as sad as whilome² iollie,
 Well warn'd to beware with whom he dar'd to dallie.³

XXXVII.

Which when his other companie beheld,
 They to his succour ran with readie ayd ;
 And, finding him unable once to weld,
 They reared him on horse-backe and upstayd,
 Till on his way they had him forth convayd :
 And all the way, with wondrous grieffe of mynd
 And shame, he shewd himselfe to be dismayd⁴
 More for the Love which he had left behynd,
 Then⁵ that which he had to Sir Paridell resynd.

XXXVIII.

Nathlesse he forth did march, well as he might,
 And made good semblance⁶ to his companie,
 Dissembling his disease and evill plight ;
 Till that ere long they chaunced to espie
 Two other Knights, that towards them did ply⁷
 With speedie course, as bent to charge them new :
 Whom whenas Blandamour approching nie
 Perceiv'd to be such as they seemd in vew,
 He was full wo,⁸ and gan his former grieffe renew.

XXXIX.

For th' one of them he perfectly descride

¹ *Deceave*, cause to fail.

⁵ *Then*, than.

² *Whilome*, formerly.

⁶ *Semblance*, seeming, appearance.

³ *Dallie*, dally, trifle.

⁷ *Ply*, move, come.

⁴ *Dismayd*, grieved.

⁸ *Wo*, sad.

XXXVII. 3.—*Once to weld.*] Immediately to wield, or support himself.

To be Sir Scudamour, (by that he bore
 The god of Love with wings displayed wide,)
 Whom mortally he hated evermore,
 Both for his worth, that all men did adore,
 And eke because his Love he wonne by right :
 Which when he thought, it grieved him full sore,
 That, through the bruises of his former fight,
 He now unable was to wreake his own despight.

XL.

Forthy¹ he thus to Paridell bespake ;
 " Faire Sir, of friendship let me now you pray,
 That as I late adventured for your sake,
 The hurts whereof me now from battell stay,
 Ye will me now with like good turne repay,
 And iustifie my cause on yonder Knight."
 " Ah ! Sir," said Paridell, " do not dismay²
 Yourselfe for this ; myselfe will for you fight,
 As ye have done for me : The left hand rubs the right."

XLI.

With that he put his spurres unto his steed,
 With speare in rest, and toward him did fare,
 Like shaft out of a bow preventing³ speed.
 But Scudamour was shortly well aware
 Of his approach, and gan himselfe prepare

¹ *Forthy*, therefore.² *Dismay*, disquiet.³ *Preventing*, coming before, surpassing.

XXXIX. 3.— *The god of Love.*] See book III. canto XI. stanza VII. The name of *Scudamore* comes from the Italian *Scudo d'Amore*, (shield of love.) Todd states that there was a family of that name which had the armorial bearings described in the text, and from which they derived their name.

XL. 9.— *The left hand rubs the right.*] A proverbial expression equivalent to "One good turn deserves another."

Him to receive with entertainment meets.
 So furiously they met, that either bare
 The other downe under their horses feete,
 That what of them became themselves did scarsly weete.¹

XLII.

As when two billowes in the Irish sowndes,
 Forcibly driven with contrarie tydes,
 Do meete together, each abacke rebowndes
 With roaring rage; and dashing on all sides,
 That filleth all the sea with fome, divydes
 The doubtfull current into divers wayes:
 So fell those two in spight of both their prydes;
 But Scudamour himselfe did soone uprayse,
 And, mounting light, his foe for lying long upbrayes²:

XLIII.

Who, rolled on an heape, lay still in swound
 All carelesse of his taunt and bitter rayle³;
 Till that the rest him seeing lie on ground
 Ran hastily, to weete¹ what did him ayle:
 Where finding that the breath gan him to fayle,
 With busie care they strove him to awake,
 And doft⁴ his helmet, and undid his mayle:
 So much they did, that at the last they brake
 His slomber, yet so mazed⁵ that he nothing spake.

XLIV.

Which whenas Blandamour beheld, he sayd;
 "False faitour⁶ Scudamour, that hast by slight⁷
 And foule advantage this good Knight dismayd,⁸

¹ *Weete*, know.² *Upbrayes*, upbraids.³ *Rayle*, railing.⁴ *Doft*, took off.⁵ *Mazed*, amazed, confounded.⁶ *Faitour*, villain.⁷ *Slight*, sleight.⁸ *Dismayd*, subdued.

A Knight much better than thyselfe behight,¹
 Well falles it thee that I am not in plight
 This day, to wreake the dammage by thee donne!
 Such is thy wont, that still when any Knight
 Is weakned, then thou doest him overronne²:
 So hast thou to thyselfe false honour often wonne.”

XLV.

He little answer'd, but in manly hart
 His mightie indignation did forbear; ;
 Which was not yet so secret, but some part
 Thereof did in his frowning face appeare:
 Like as a gloomie cloud, the which doth beare
 An hideous storme, is by the northerne blast
 Quite overblowne, yet doth not passe so cleare
 But that it all the skie doth overcast
 With darknes dred, and threatens all the world to wast.³

XLVI.

“ Ah! gentle Knight,” then false Duessa sayd,
 “ Why do ye strive for Ladies love so sore,
 Whose chiefe desire is love and friendly aid
 Mongst gentle Knights to nourish evermore!
 Ne be ye wroth, Sir Scudamour, therefore,
 That she your Love list love another Knight,
 Ne do yourselfe dislike a whit the more;
 For love is free, and led with selfe-delight,
 Ne will enforced be with maisterdome⁴ or might.”

¹ *Behight*, called, esteemed.² *Wast*, waste, desolate.³ *Overronne*, trample upon, subdue.⁴ *Maisterdome*, superiority.XLIV. 5.— *Well falles it thee.*] It is well for you.XLVI. 1.— *Ah! gentle Knight, &c.*] This is addressed to Blandamour.

XLVII.

So false Duessa : but vile Atè thus ;
 “ Both foolish Knights, I can but laugh at both,
 That strive and storme with stirre outrageous
 For her, that each of you alike doth loth,
 And loves another, with whom now she go'th
 In lovely wise, and sleepes, and sports, and playes ;
 Whilst both you here with many a cursed oth
 Swear she is yours, and stirre up bloudie frayes,
 To win a willow bough, whilst other weares the bayes.¹

XLVIII.

“ Vile Hag,” sayd Scudamour, “ why dost thou lye,
 And falsly seekst a virtuous wight to shame ? ”
 “ Fond² Knight,” sayd she, “ the thing that with this eye
 I saw, why should I doubt to tell the same ? ”
 “ Then tell,” quoth Blandamour, “ and feare no blame ;
 Tell what thou saw'st, maulgre³ whoso it heares.”
 “ I saw,” quoth she, “ a straunger Knight, whose name
 I wote⁴ not well, but in his shield he beares
 (That well I wote⁴) the heads of many broken speares ;

XLIX.

“ I saw him have your Amoret at will ;
 I saw him kisse ; I saw him her embrace ;
 I saw him sleepe with her all night his fill ;
 All, manie nights ; and manie by in place
 That present were to testifie the case.”
 Which whenas Scudamour did heare, his heart
 Was thrild⁵ with inward grieffe : As when in chace
 The Parthian strikes a stag with shivering⁶ dart,
 The beast astonisht stands in middest of his smart ;

¹ Bayes, laurels.⁴ Wote, know.² Fond, foolish.⁵ Thrild, pierced.³ Maulgre, in spite of, I care not.⁶ Shivering, quivering.

L.

So stood Sir Scudamour when this he heard,
 Ne word he had to speake for great dismay,
 But lookt on Glaucè grim, who woxe afeard¹
 Of outrage for the words which she heard say,
 Albee² untrue she wist³ them by assay.⁴
 But Blandamour, whenas he did espie
 His change of cheere that anguish did bewray,
 He woxe full blithe, as⁵ he had got⁶ thereby,
 And gan thereat to triumph without victorie.

LI.

“Lo! recreant,” sayd he, “the fruitlesse end
 Of thy vaine boast, and spoile of love misgotten,
 Whereby the name of knight-hood thou dost shend,⁷
 And all true lovers with dishonor blotten :
 All things not rooted well will soone be rotten.”
 “Fy, fy, false Knight,” then false Duessa cryde,
 “Unworthy life, that love with guile hast gotten ;
 Be thou, wherever thou do go or ryde,
 Loathed of Ladies all, and of all Knights defyde !”

LII.

But Scudamour, for passing great despight,
 Staid not to answer ; scarcely did refraine
 But that in all those Knights and Ladies sight
 He for revenge had guiltlesse Glaucè slaine :
 But, being past, he thus began amaine⁸ ;
 “False traitour Squire, false Squire of falsest Knight,
 Why doth mine hand from thine avenge abstaine,
 Whose lord hath done my love this foule despight !
 Why do I not it wreake on thee now in my might !

¹ *Woxe afeard*, grew afraid.² *Albee*, although.³ *Wist*, knew.⁴ *Assay*, experience, knowledge.⁵ *As*, as if.⁶ *Got*, gained.⁷ *Shend*, disgrace.⁸ *Amains*, violently.

LIII.

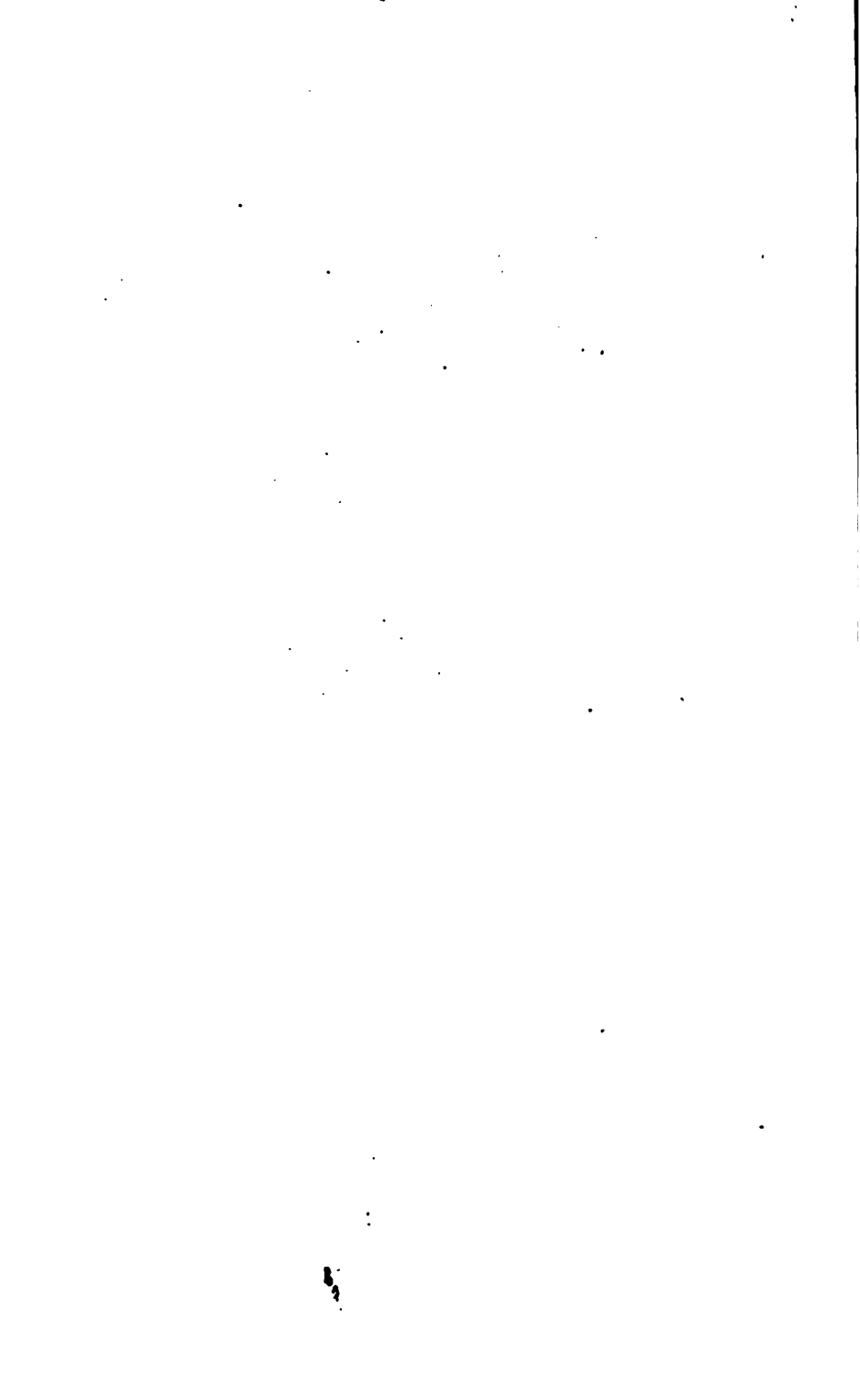
"Discourteous, disloyall¹ Britomart,
 Untrue to God, and unto man uniuist!
 What vengeance due can equall thy desart,
 That hast with shamefull spot of sinfull lust
 Defil'd the pledge committed to thy trust!
 Let ugly shame and endlesse infamy
 Colour thy name with foule reproaches rust.
 Yet thou, false Squire, his fault shall deare aby,²
 And with thy punishment his penance shalt supply."³

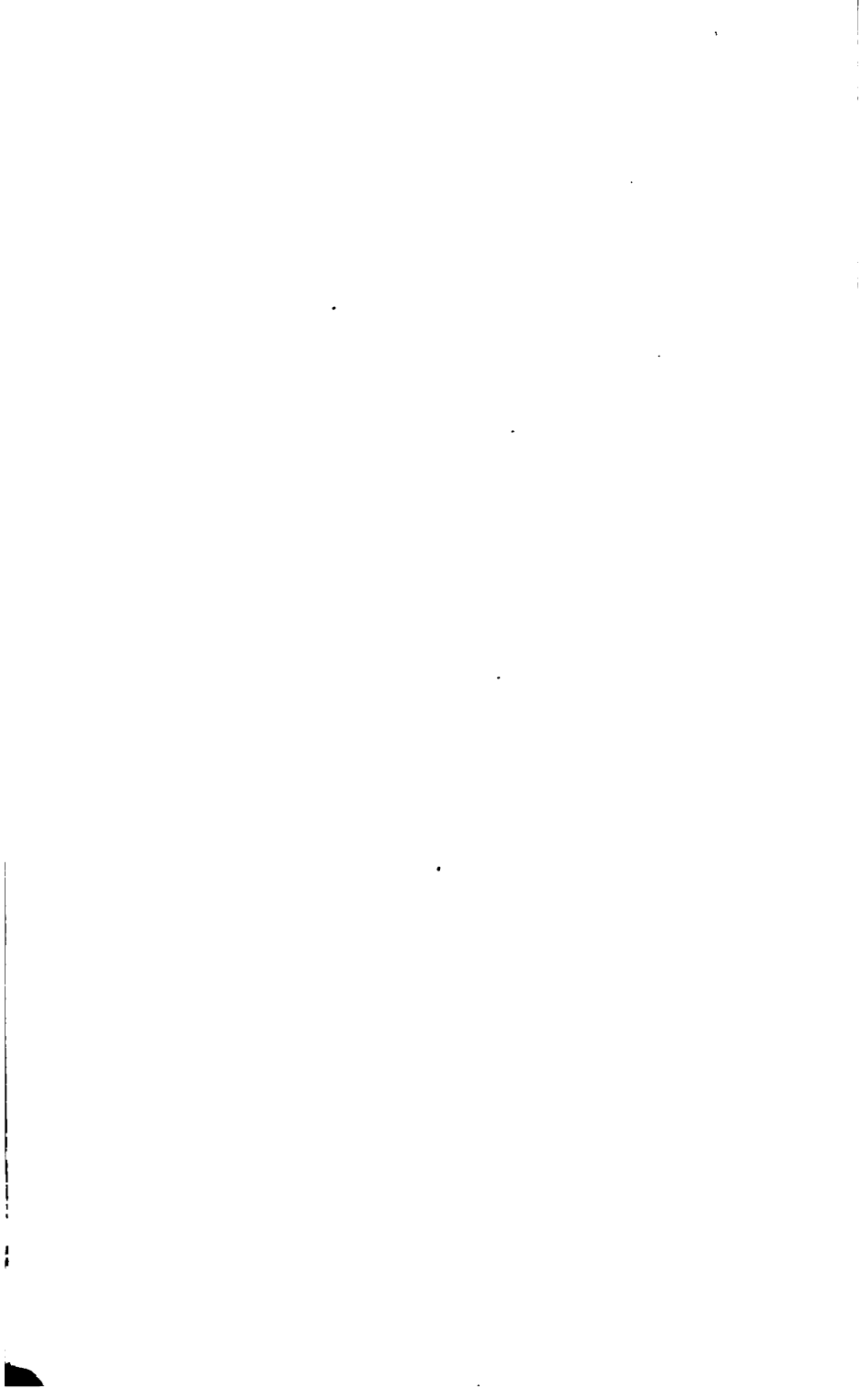
LIV.

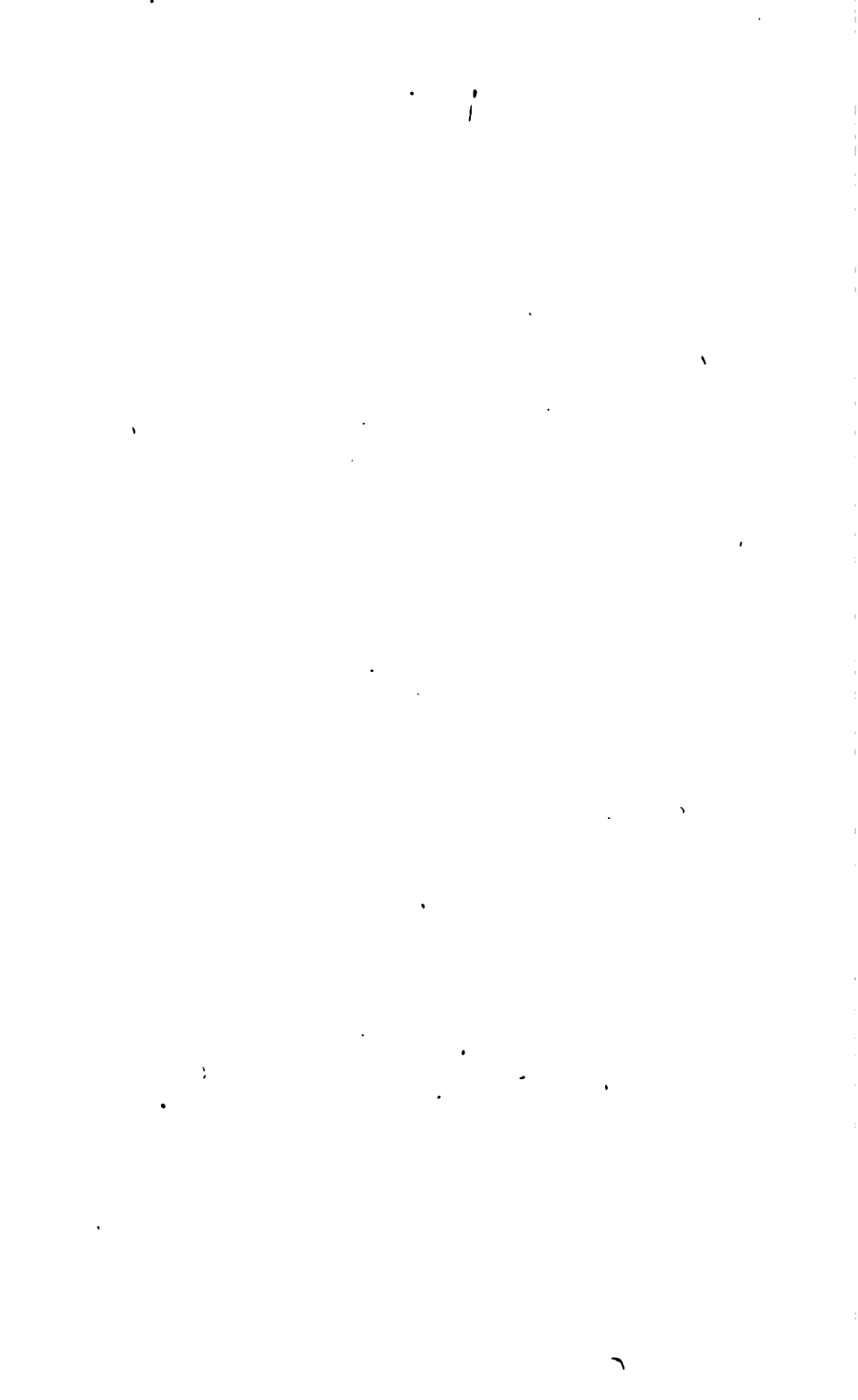
The aged dame him seeing so enraged
 Was dead with feare; nathlesse as neede required
 His flaming furie sought to have assuaged
 With sober words, that sufferance³ desired
 Till time the tryall of her truth expyred⁴;
 And evermore sought Britomart to cleare:
 But he the more with furious rage was fyred,
 And thrise his hand to kill her did upreare,
 And thrise he drew it backe: so did at last forbear.

¹ *Disloyall*, unfaithful.³ *Sufferance*, patience, endurance.² *Aby*, abide.⁴ *Expyred*, discovered.

LIV. 1. — *The aged dame, &c.*] "Tis very agreeable to poetical decorum, as well as a just punishment for Scudamore's jealous disposition, that Glauce leaves him thus in ignorance and doubt, till proper time and circumstances discover, of themselves, the fidelity of Amoret." — Upton.







THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY
REFERENCE DEPARTMENT

This book is under no circumstances to be
taken from the Building

(R)

o be



